



VOL. II

LONDON G. BELL AND SONS, LTD. 1913

CONTENTS

VOL II

PART	П

ADMINISTRATION OF THE DUCHESS MARGARET 1559 1567 —Continued

CHAPTER V	L	П
-----------	---	---

PRODENT THILIP	•	
	CHAPTER 1A	
BLOOD SHED AN	D SPARED	26

DRITTENT DELLE

. CHAPTER X
THE PROLOGUE FINISHED 66

PART III. ALVA 1567-1573

LVA 1567-157; CHAPTER L

PAGE

CHAPTER III

Montigny arrived in Madrid. Those ill-fated gentlemen had been received with apparent cordiality, and admitted to frequent, but unmeaning, interviews with his Majesty. The current upon which they were embarked was deep and treacherous, but it was smooth and very slow. They assured the King that his letters, ordering the rigorous execution of the inquisition and edicts, had engendered all the evils under which the provinces were labouring. They told him that Spaniards and tools of Spaniards had attempted to govern the country, to the exclusion of native citizens and nobles, but that it would soon be found that Netherlanders were not to be trodden upon like the abject inhabitants of Milan, Naples, and Sicily.¹ Such words as these struck with an unaccustomed sound upon the royal ear, but the envoys, who were both Catholic and loyal, had no idea, in thus expressing their opinions, according to their sense of duty, and in obedience to the King's desire, upon the causes of the discontent, that they were committing an act of high treason.

When the news of the public preaching reached Spain, here were almost daily consultations at the grove of Segovia. The eminent personages who composed the royal council were the Duke of Alva, the Count de Feria, Don Antonio de Toledo, Don Juan Manrique de Lara, Ruy Gomez, Quixada, Councillor Tisnacq, recently appointed President of the State Council, and Councillor Hopper.² Six Spaniards and two Netherlanders, one of whom, too, a man of dull intellect and thoroughly subservient character, to deal with the local affairs of the Netherlands in a time of intense excitement! The instructions of the envoys had been to represent the necessity of according three great points—abolition of the inquisition, moderation of the edicts, according to the draft prepared in Brussels, and an ample pardon for past transactions. There was much debate upon all these propositions.3 Philip said little, but he listened attentively to the long discourses in council, and he took an incredible quantity of notes. It was the general opinion that this last demand on the part of the Netherlanders was the fourth link in the chain of treason. The first had been the cabal by which Granvelle had been expelled; the second,

¹ Hopper, Rec. et Mem., 78-80. ² *Ibid.*, 88. ³ *Ibid.*, 81, sqq. 88, sqq.

the mission of Egmont, the main object of which had been to procure a modification of the state council, in order to bring that body under the control of a few haughty and rebellious nobles, the third bad been the presentation of the insolent and seditious Request, and now, to crown the whole, came a proposition embodying the three points—abolition of the inquisition, resocution of the edicts, and a pardon to criminals, for whom death was the only sufficient punishment?

With regard to these three points, it was, after much wrangling, decided to grant them under certain restrictions To abolish the inquisition would be to remove the only instrument by which the Church had been accustomed to regulate the consciences and the doctrines of its subjects It would be equivalent to a concession of religious freedom, at least to individuals within their own domiciles, than which no concession could be more pernicious? Neverthe less, it might be advisable to permit the temporary cessation of the papal inquisition, now that the episcopal inquisition had been so much enlarged and strengthened in the Nether lands, on the condition that this branch of the institution should be maintained in energetic condition 3 With regard to the Moderation, it was thought better to defer that matter till the proposed visit of his Majest; to the provinces If, however, the Regent should think it absolutely necessary to make a change, she must cause a new draft to be made, as that which had been sent was not found admissible Touching the pardon general, it would be necessary to make many conditions and restrictions before it could be granted Provided these were sufficiently minute to exclude all persons whom it might be found desirable to chastise, the amnesty was possible. Otherwise it was quite out of the question

Meantime, Margaret of Parma had been urging her brother to come to a decision, painting the distracted condition of the country in the liveliest colours, and insisting, although perfectly aware of Philip's private sentiments, upon a favourable decision as to the three points demanded by the envoys Especially she urged her incapacity to resist any rebellion,

and demanded succour of men and money in case the "Moderation" were not accepted by his Majesty.

It was the last day of July before the King wrote at all, to communicate his decisions upon the crisis which had occurred in the first week of April. The disorder for which he had finally prepared a prescription had, before his letter arrived, already passed through its subsequent stages of the field-preaching and the image-breaking. Of course these fresh symptoms would require much consultation, pondering, and note-taking before they could be dealt with. In the meantime they would be considered as not yet having happened. This was the masterly procrastination of the sovereign, when his provinces were in a blaze.

He wrote accordingly to say that the pardon, under certain conditions, might be granted, and that the papal inquisition might cease—the bishops now being present in such numbers, "to take care of their flocks," and the episcopal inquisition being therefore established upon so secure a basis.¹ He added, that if a moderation of the edicts were still desired, a new project might be sent to Madrid, as the one brought by Berghen and Montigny was not satisfactory.² In arranging this wonderful scheme for composing the tumults, which had grown out of a determined rebellion to the inquisition in any form, he followed not only the advice,

but adopted the exact language, of his councillors.

Certainly, here was not much encouragement for patriotic hearts in the Netherlands. A pardon, so restricted that none were likely to be forgiven save those who had done no wrong; an episcopal inquisition stimulated to renewed exertions, on the ground that the papal functionaries were to be discharged; and a promise that, although the proposed moderation of the edicts seemed too mild for the monarch's acceptance, yet at some future period another project would be matured for settling the matter to universal satisfaction—such were the propositions of the Crown. Nevertheless, Philip thought he had gone too far, even in administering this meagre amount of mercy, and that he had been too frank in employing so slender a deception, as in the scheme thus sketched. He therefore summoned a

^{&#}x27; Correspondance de Marg. d'Autriche, 100-103, sqq.

notury, before whom, in presence of the Duke of Alva, the Licentiate Menchaca and Dr Velasco, he declared that, although he had just authorized Margaret of Parma, by force of circumstances, to grant pardon to all those who had been compromised in the late disturbances of the Nether lands, yet as he had not done this spontaneously nor freely, he did not consider himself bound by the authorization, but that, on the contrary, he reserved his right to punish all the guilty, and particularly those who had been the authors and encouragers of the sedition.

So much for the pardon promised in his official correspondence

With regard to the concessions, which he supposed him self to have made in the matter of the inquisition and the edicts, he saved his conscience by another process Revok ing with his right hand all which his left had been doing, he had no sooner despatched his letters to the Duchess Regent than he sent off another to his envoy at Rome. In this despatch he instructed Requesens to inform the Pope as to the recent royal decisions upon the three points, and to state that there had not been time to consult his Holiness before hand Nevertheless, continued Philip "the prudent," it is as perhaps better thus, since the abolition could have no force, unless the Pope, by whom the institution had been established consented to its suspension This matter, hower en, was to be kept a profound secret 3 So much for the inquisi tion matter. The papal institution, notwithstanding the official letters, was to exist, unless the Pope chose to destroy it, and his Holiness, as we have seen, had sent the Arch bishop of Sorrento, a few weeks before, to Brussels, for the purpose of concerting secret measures for strengthening the "Holy Office" in the provinces

With regard to the proposed moderation of the edicts, Philip informed Pius the Fifth, through Requesens, that the project sent by the Dochess not having been approved, orders had been transmitted for a new draft, in which all the atticles providing for the stater punishment of heretics are to be retained, while alterations, to be agreed upon by the state and privy councils, and the knights of the Fleece,

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 443 ² Ibid , 1 445 446

fore, that he was determined never to allow the states-general to be convened. He forbade her to consent to the step under any circumstances, but ordered her to keep his prohibition a profound secret. He wished, he said, the people to think that it was only for the moment that the convocation was forbidden, and that the Duchess was expecting to receive the necessary permission at another time. It was his desire, he distinctly stated, that the people should not despair of obtaining the assembly, but he was resolved never to consent to the step, for he knew very well what was meant by a meeting of the states-general. Certainly after so ingenuous but secret a declaration from the disciple of Macchiavelli, Margaret might well consider the arguments to be used afterwards by herself and others, in favour of the ardently-desired measure, as quite superfluous.

Such then was the policy secretly resolved upon by Philip, even before he heard of the startling events which were afterwards to break upon him. He would maintain the inquisition and the edicts: he would exterminate the heretics, even if he lost all his realms and his own life in the cause; he would never hear of the national representatives coming together. What then were likely to be his emotions when he should be told of twenty thousand armed heretics assembling at one spot, and fifteen thousand at another, in almost every town in every province, to practise their blasphemous rites; when he should be told of the whirlwind which had swept all the ecclesiastical accumulations of ages out of existence; when he should read Margaret's despairing letters, in which she acknowledged that she had at last committed an act unworthy of God, of her King, and of herself,2 in permitting liberty of worship to the renegades from the ancient church!

The account given by the Duchess was in truth very dismal. She said that grief consumed her soul and crimson suffused her cheeks while she related the recent transactions. She took God to witness that she had resisted long, that she had passed many sleepless nights, that she had been wasted with fever and grief.³ After this penitential preface she con-

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 439.

² Strada, v. 222, 223.

³ *Ibid.* Compare Correspondance de Marg. d'Autriche, 187-200. Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 452-454.

fessed that, being a prisoner and almost besieged in her palace, sick in body and soul, she had promised pardon and security to the confederates, with liberty of holding assemblies to heretics in places where the practice had already obtained. These concessions had been made valid until the King, by and with the consent of the stries general, should definitely arrange the matter. She stated, however, that she had given her consent to these two demands, not in the royal name, but 'n her own. The king was not bound by her promise, and she expressed the hope that he would have no regard to any such obligation. She further implored her brother to come forth as soon as possible to avenge the muiters inflicted upon the ancient church, adding, that if de prived of that consolation, she should incontinently deput this life. That hope alone would prevent her death.

This was certainly strong language She was also very explicit in her representations of the influence which had been used by certain personages to prevent the evenuse of any authority upon her own part "Wherefore," said Margaret, "I eat my heart, and shall never have peace till the armal of

your Majesty "2"

There was no doubt who those personages were who, as it was pretended, had thus held the Duchess in bondage, and compelled her to grant these infamous concessions. In her secret Italian letters, she furnished the King with a tissue of most extravagrint and improbable falsehoods, supplied to her mainly by Noricames and Mansfeld, as to the course pur sued at this momentous crisis by Orange, Egmont, Horn, and Hoogstraaten. They had all she said doubt do a life of an against religion.

the priests and monks in th

not given to the demands of the heretics. Egmont had de clared openly for the beggars, and was keying troops in Ger many. Orange had the firm intention of making himself master of the whole country, and of dividing it among the

Marg d Autriche, ubi sr-

dance de Mire d'Aser to

²⁰²

Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 452 454.

other seigniors and himself.\(^1\) The Prince had said that if she took refuge in Mons, as she had proposed, they would instantly convoke the states-general, and take all necessary measures. Egmont had held the same language, saying that he would march at the head of forty thousand men to besiege her in that city.\(^2\) All these seigniors, however, had avowed their determination to prevent her flight, to assemble the estates, and to drag her by force before the assembly, in order to compel her consent to every measure which might be deemed expedient.\(^3\) Under all these circumstances, she had been obliged to defer her retreat, and to make the concessions which had overwhelmed her with disgrace.

With such infamous calumnies, utterly disproved by every fact in the case, and unsupported by a tittle of evidence, save the hearsay reports of a man like Noircarmes, did this "woman, nourished at Rome, in whom no one could put confidence," dig the graves of men who were doing their best to serve her.

Philip's rage at first hearing of the image-breaking has been indicated. He was ill of an intermittent fever at the wood of Segovia when the news arrived, and it may well be supposed that his wrath at these proceedings was not likely to assuage his malady. Nevertheless, after the first burst of indignation, he found relief in his usual deception. While slowly maturing the most tremendous vengeance which anointed monarch ever deliberately wreaked upon his people, he wrote to say, that it was "his intention to treat his vassals and subjects in the provinces like a good and element prince, not to ruin them nor to put them into servitude, but to exercise all humanity, sweetness, and grace, avoiding all harshness." Such were the avowed intentions of the sovereign towards his people at the moment when the terrible Alva, who was to be the exponent of all this "humanity, sweetness, and grace," was already beginning the preparations for his famous invasion of the Netherlands.

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 452-454.
² Ibid.
³ Ibid.

Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., ii. 401. Expression of Egmont's.

Hopper, Rec. et Mem., 104.
Correspondance de Marg. d'Autriche, 206, 207.—Letter of Nov. 27, 1566.

The essence of the compact agreed to upon the 23rd August between the confederates and the Regent, was that the preaching of the reformed religion should be tolerated in places where it had previously to that date been estab lished Upon this basis Egmont, Horn, Orange, Hoog straaten, and others, were directed once more to attempt the pacification of the different provinces

Egmont departed for his government of Flanders, and from that moment vanished all his pretensions which at best had been slender enough to the character of a national chieftain During the whole of the year his course had been changeful He had felt the influence of Orange, he had generous in stincts, he had much vanity, he had the pride of high rank, which did not easily brook the domination of strangers, in a land which he considered himself and his compeers entitled by their birth to rule At this juncture, however, particularly when in the company of Noircarmes Berlaymont and Vig lius he expressed, notwithstanding their calumnious mis statements, the deepest detestation of the heretics 1 He was a fervent Catholic, and he regarded the image breaking as an unpardonable crime 'We must take up arms said he. "sooner or later, to bring these Reformers to reason, or they will end by laying down the law for us "On the other hand, his anger would be often appeased by the grave but gracious remonstrances of Orange During a part of the summer, the Reformers had been so strong in Flanders that upon a

says a Catholic contemporary, "but they would have scorned to march under the banner of a brewer, having dared to raise their eyes for a chief to the most illustrious warrior of his age? No doubt, had Egmont ever listened to these aspirations, he might have taken the field against the govern ment with an invincible force, seized the capital imprisoned the Regent, and mastered the whole country, which was entirely defenceless, before Philip would have had time to write more than ten despatches upon the subject.

These hopes of the Reformers, if hopes they could be

called, were now destined to be most bitterly disappointed. Egmont entered Flanders, not as a chief of rebels—not as a wise pacificator—but as an unscrupulous partisan of government, disposed to take summary vengeance on all suspected persons who should fall in his way. He ordered numerous executions of image-breakers and of other heretics. The whole province was in a state of alarm: for, although he had not been furnished by the Regent with a strong body of troops, yet the name of the conqueror at Saint Quentin and Gravelines was worth many regiments. His severity was excessive. His sanguinary exertions were ably seconded also by his secretary Bakkerzeel, a man who exercised the greatest influence over his chief, and who was now fiercely atoning for having signed the compromise by persecuting those whom that league had been formed to protect. "Amid all the perplexities of the Duchess Regent," says a Walloon historian, "this virtuous princess was consoled by the exploits of Bakkerzeel, a gentleman in Count Egmont's service. On one occasion he hanged twenty heretics, including a minister, at a single heat."

Such achievements as these by the hands or the orders of the distinguished general who had been most absurdly held up as a possible protector of the civil and religious liberties of the country, created profound sensation. Flanders and Artois were filled with the wives and children of suspected thousands who had fled the country to escape the wrath of Egmont.³ The cries and piteous lamentations of these unfortunate creatures were heard on every side. Count Louis was earnestly implored to intercede for the persecuted Reformers. "You who have been so nobly gifted by Heaven, you who have good will and singular bounty written upon your face," said Utenhove to Louis, "have the power to save these poor victims from the throats of the ravenous wolves." The Count responded to the appeal, and strove to soften the severity of Egmont, without, however, producing any very signal effect. Flanders was soon pacified, nor was that important province permitted to enjoy

¹ Pontus Payen MS. Compare Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., ii. 282-297.

² Renom de France MS., i. 33.

³ Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., ii. 296, 297.

the benefits of the agreement which had been extorted from the Duchess The preachings were forbidden, and the ministers and congregations arrested and chastised, even in places where the custom had been established previously to the 23rd August 1 Certainly such vigorous exertions upon the part both of master and man did not savour of treason to Philip, and hardly seemed to indicate the final doom of Egmont and Bakkerzeel

The course of Orange at Antwerp was consistent with his whole career He honestly came to arrange a pacification, but he knew that this end could be gained only by loyally maintaining the Accord which had been signed between the maintaining the Accord which had been signed between the confederates and the Regent. He came back to the city on the 26th August, and found order partially re established. The burghers having at last become thoroughly alarmed, and the fury of the image breakers entirely appeased, it had been comparatively easy to restore tranquillity. The tranquillity, however, arther restored itself, and when the calm had succeeded to the tempest, the placed heads of the burgo masters once more emerged from the waves.

musuers once more emerged from the waves

Three image breakers, who had been taken in the act,
were hanged by order of the magistrates upon the 28th of
August ³ The presence of Orange gave them courage to
achieve these executions, which he could not prevent, at
the fifth article of the Accord enjoined the chastisement of
the noters. The deed was not his, however, and he hastened in order to obviate the necessity of further violence, to pre pare articles of agreement, upon the basis of Margarets concessions Public preaching, according to the Reformed concessions rounce preacting, according to the variety of the religion, had already taken place within the city. Upon the 22nd, possession had been taken of at least three churches. The senate had deputed pensionary Wesenbeck to expostulate with the ministers, for the magistrates were at that moment not able to command Taffin, the Walloon preacher, had been tractable, and had agreed to postpone

^{1 /} a D not Arch see etc 11 206 207

his exercises. He furthermore had accompanied the pensionary to the Cathedral, in order to persuade Herman Modet that it would be better for him likewise to defer his intended ministrations.1 They had found that eloquent enthusiast already in the great church, burning with impatience to ascend upon the ruins, and quite unable to resist the temptation of setting a Flemish psalm and preaching a Flemish sermon within the walls which had for so many centuries been vocal only to the Roman tongue and the Roman ritual. All that he would concede to the entreaties of his colleague and of the magistrate, was that his sermon should be short. In this, however, he had overrated his powers of retention, for the sermon not only became a long one, but he had preached another upon the afternoon of the same day. The city of Antwerp, therefore, was clearly within the seventh clause of the treaty of the 24th August, for preaching had taken place in the Cathedral, previously to the signing of that Accord.2

Upon the 2nd September, therefore, after many pro-tracted interviews with the heads of the Reformed religion, the Prince drew up sixteen articles of agreement between them, the magistrates and the government, which were duly

signed and crchanged.3

These articles assigned three churches to the different sects of reformers, stipulated that no attempts should be made by Catholics or Protestants to disturb the religious worship of each other, and provided that neither by mutual taunts in their sermons, nor by singing street ballads, together with improper allusions and overt acts of hostility, should the good-fellowship which ought to reign between brethren and fellow-citizens, even although entertaining dif-ferent opinions as to religious rites and doctrines, be for the future interrupted.4

This was the basis upon which the very brief religious peace, broken almost as soon as established, was concluded by William of Orange, not only at Antwerp, but at Utrecht, Amsterdam, and other principal cities within his government.

Wesenbeck.

¹ Bor, ii. 85. Hoofd, iii. 102. Wesenbeck.
² Bor, ii. 85, 86. Hoofd, iii. 102. Wesenbeck.
³ Bor, ii. 98, 99, gives the articles.
⁴ Ar ⁴ Articles in Bor, ii. 98, 99. ³ Bor, ii. 101, 102. 6 Ibid., ii. 101.

The Prince, however, notwithstanding his unwearied evertions, had slender hopes of a peaceful result. He felt that the last step taken by the Reformation had been off a precipice He liked not such rapid progress. He knew that the King would never forgive the image breaking. He felt that he would never recognize the Accord of the 24th August Sir Thomas Gresham, who, as the representative of the Protestant Queen of England in the great commercial metropolis of Europe, was fully conversant with the turn things were taking, was already advising some other place

with the Prince, who insited him to dine upon the 4th Sep tember, and caused pensionary Wesenbeck, who was also present, to read aloud the agreement which was that day to be proclaimed at the town house Orange expressed him self, however, very doubtfully as to the future prospects of the provinces, and as to the probable temper of the King
"In all his talke," says Gresham, "the Prince saide unto
me, 'I know this will nothing contente the King

While Egmont had been thus busied in Flanders, and Orange at Antwerp, Count Horn had been doing his best in the important city of Tournay2 The Admiral was not especially gifted with intellect, nor with the power of manag ing men, but he went there with an honest purpose of seeing the Accord executed, intending if it should prove practicable, rather to favour the Government than the Reformers At the same time, for the purpose of giving satisfaction to the members of "the religion," and of manifesting his sincere desire for a pacification, he accepted lodgings which had been prepared for him at the house of a Calvinist merchant in the city, rather than take up his quarters with fierce old Governor Moulbais in the citadel This gave much offence to the Catholics, and inspired the Reformers with the hope of having their preaching inside the town. To this privilege they were entitled, for the practice had already been estab-

Burgon, is 161, 162

Groen v Prinst , Archives etc., ii 362, note Pasquier de la Barre MS , 3600

mission was given the Reformers to build meeting-houses.¹ To this arrangement the Duchess formally gave her consent.²

Nicholas Taffin, councillor, in the name of the Reformers, made "a brave and elegant harangue" before the magistrates, representing that as, on the most moderate computation, three-quarters of the population were dissenters, as the Regent had ordered the construction of the new temples, and as the Catholics retained possession of all the churches in the city, it was no more than fair that the community should bear the expense of the new buildings. It was indignantly replied, however, that Catholics could not be expected to pay for the maintenance of heresy, particularly when they had just been so much exasperated by the image-breaking. Councillor Taffin took nothing, therefore, by his "brave and elegant harangue," saving a small vote of forty livres.

The building was, however, immediately commenced. Many nobles and rich citizens contributed to the work; some making donations in money; others giving quantities of oaks, poplars, elms, and other timber trees, to be used in the construction. The foundation of the first temple outside the Porte de Cocquerel was immediately laid. Vast heaps of broken images and other ornaments of the desecrated turches were most unwisely used for this purpose, and the Catholics were exceedingly enraged at beholding those male and female saints, who had for centuries been placed in such reverend and elevated positions," fallen so low as to be the foundation-stones of temples whose builders denounced all those holy things as idols.

As the autumn began to wane, the people were clamorous for permission to have their preaching inside the city. The new buildings could not be finished before the winter; but in the meantime the camp-meetings were becoming, in the stormy seasons fast approaching, a very inconvenient mode of worship. On the other hand, the Duchess was furious at the proposition, and commanded Horn on no account to consent that the interior of Tournay should be profaned by these heretical rites.⁴ It was in vain that the Admiral repre-

¹ De la Barre MS., 44.

² Foppens, Supplément, ii. 407.

³ De la Barre MS., 46, sqq.

Letter of Duchess of Parma. Foppens, Supplément, ii. 4c6.

sented the justice of the claim, as these exercises had taken sented the justice of the claim, as these evercises had taken place in several of the city churches previously to the Accord of the 24th of August 1 That agreement had been made by the Duchess only to be broken She had already received money and the permission to make levies, and was fast assuming a tone very different from the abject demeanour assuming a tone very different from the abject demeanour which had characterized her in August Count Horn had been used even as Egmont, Orange, and Hoogstraaten had been employed, in order that their personal influence with the Reformers might be turned to account The tools and the work accomplished by them were to be thrown tway at the most convenient opportunity

the most convenient opportunity

The Admiral was placed in a most intolerable position. An honest, common place, sullen kind of man, he had come to a city full of heretics to enforce concessions just made by the government to heresy. He soon found bimself watched, paltered with, suspected by the administration at Brussels Governor Moulbais in the citadel, who was nominally under his authority, refused obedience to his orders was evidently receiving secret instructions from the Regent and was determined to expound the city into submession to the proposed to mined to cannonade the city into submission at a very early day. Horn required him to pledge himself that no fresh troops should enter the castle. Moulbus swore he would make no such promise to a hving soul. The Admiral stormed with his usual violence, expressed his regret that his brother Montigny had so bad a lieutenant in the citadel, but could make no impression upon the determined veteran, who knew, better than Horn the game which was preparing 'Small of the garrison had been heard to boast "that they would soon carve and eat the townsmen's flesh on their dressers," and all the good effect from the Admiral's proclamation on arming, had completely vanished

Horn complained bitterly of the situation in which he was placed He knew himself the mark of incessant and calum mous misrepresentation both at Brussels and Midrid He had been doing his best, at a momentous crisis, to serve the government without violating its engagements, but he declared

¹ Foppens, Supplement 11. 393 ² De la Barre MS, 5000

[&]quot; Ils mengherment leur chair sur leur

himself to be neither theologian nor jurist, and incapable, while suspected and unassisted, of performing a task which the most learned doctors of the council would find impracticable. He would rather, he bitterly exclaimed, endure a siege in any fortress by the Turks, than be placed in such a position. He was doing all that he was capable of doing, yet whatever he did was wrong. There was a great difference, he said, between being in a place and talking about it at a distance.1

In the middle of October he was recalled by the Duchess, whose letters had been uniformly so ambiguous that he confessed he was quite unable to divine their meaning.2 Before he left the city, he committed his most unpardonable crime. Urged by the leaders of the reformed congregations to permit their exercises in the Clothiers' Hall until their temples should be finished, the Count accorded his consent provisionally, and subject to revocation by the Regent, to whom the arrangement was immediately to be communicated.

Horn departed, and the Reformers took instant possession of the hall. It was found in a very dirty and disorderly condition, encumbered with benches, scaffoldings, stakes, gibbets, and all the machinery used for public executions upon the market-place. A vast body of men went to work with a will; scrubbing, cleaning, whitewashing, and removing all the foul lumber of the hall; singing in chorus, as they did so, the hymns of Clement Marot. By dinner-time the place was ready.³ The pulpit and benches for the congregation had taken the place of the gibbet timber. It is difficult to comprehend that such work as this was a deadly crime. Nevertheless, Horn, who was himself a sincere Catholic, had committed the most mortal of all his offences against Philip and against God, by having countenanced so flagitious a transaction.

The Admiral went to Brussels. Secretary de la Torre,⁴ a

Letter to Duchess of Parma. Foppens, Supplément, ii. 412, 413.
 Letter of Horn to Philip II., in Foppens, Supplément, ii. 499-506.

³ De la Barre MS., 50vo.

⁴ La Torre arrived in Tournay upon the 28th October, 1566, according to the narrative of De la Barre. That manuscript (now in the Brussels Archives, and the only copy known to exist) was afterwards laid before the Blood Council. Secretary La Torre has noticed in several places on the margin, "the author lies" (l'autheur ment). The

very second rate personage, was despatched to Tournay to convey the orders of the Regent Governor Moulbars, now in charge of affairs both civil and military, was to prepare all things for the garrison, which was soon to be despatched under Noircarmes The Duchess had now arms in her under Noticarmes. The Duchess had now arms in her hands, and her language was bold. La Torre advised the Reformers to be wise "while the rod was yet green and growing, lest it should be gathered for their backs, for it was unbecoming in subjects to make bargains with their king." There was hardly any decent pretext used in violating the Accord of the 24th August, so soon as the government was strong enough to break it It was always said that the preachings suppressed, had not been established previously to that arrangement, but the preachings had in reality ob tained almost everywhere, and were now universally abolished. The ridiculous quibble was also used that, in the preachings, other religious exercises were not included, whereas it was other rengrous exercises were not included, whereas it was notorious that they had never been separated It is, however, a gratuitous task to unravel the deceptions of tyranny when it hardly deigns to disguise itself. The dissimulations which have resisted the influence of centuries are more worthy of serious investigation, and of these the epoch offers us a sufficient supply

At the close of the year, the city of Tournay was com

At the close of the year, the city of Tournay was completely subjugated and the reformed religion suppressed Upon the 2nd day of January, 1567, the Seignior de Noir carmes arrived before the gates at the head of eleven companies, with orders from Duchess Margaret to strengthen the garrison and disarm the citizens ² He gave the magistrates exactly one hour and a half to decide whether they would submit without a murmur ³ He expressed an intention of maintaining the Accord of 24th August,—a ridiculous affectation under the circumstances, as the event proved The notable

within the

carmes, wi

passages thus discredited by this very common place tool of tyranny have only reference to himself Pusquier de la Barre MS, fo 5710, 50

Renom de France MS, L c. 23
Pasquier de la Barre MS

Jibid, 7710, 78

Ibid, 7810

timents and secret representations as to the career of the distinguished personages thus encouraged and commended. Her pictures were painted in daily darkening colours. She told her brother that Orange, Egmont, and Horn were about to place themselves at the head of the confederates, who were to take up arms and had been levying troops; that the Lutheran religion was to be forcibly established; that the whole power of the government was to be placed in the triumvirate thus created by those seigniors, and that Philip was in reality to be excluded entirely from those provinces which were his ancient patrimony. All this information she had obtained from Mansfeld, at whom the nobles were constantly sneering as at a faithful valet who would never receive his wages.

She also informed the King that the scheme for dividing the country was already arranged: that Augustus of Saxony was to have Friesland and Overyssel; Count Brederode, Holland: the Dukes of Cleves and Lorraine, Gueldres; the King of France, Flanders, Artois, and Hainault, of which territories Egmont was to be perpetual stadholder; the Prince of Orange, Brabant; and so on indefinitely.³ A general massacre of all the Catholics had been arranged by Orange,

orn, and Egmont, to commence as soon as the King should ut his foot on shipboard to come to the country. This remarkable fact Margaret reported to Philip, upon the

respectable authority of Noircarmes.5

She apologized for having employed the service of these nobles on the ground of necessity. Their proceedings in Flanders, at Antwerp, Tournay, Mechlin, had been highly reprehensible, and she had been obliged to disavow them in the most important particulars. As for Egmont, she had most unwillingly entrusted forces to his hands for the purpose of putting down the Flemish sectaries. She had been afraid to show a want of confidence in his character, but at the same time she believed that all soldiers under Egmont's orders would be so many enemies to the King.⁶ Notwithstanding his protestations of fidelity to the ancient religion and to his Majesty, she feared that he was busied with some

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 455, 456, 460, 461.
² *Ibid*.
³ *Ibid*., i. 473-476.
⁴ *Ibid*., i. 484.
⁵ *Ibid*., i. 459.

great plot against God and the King When we remember the ruthless manner in which the unfortunate Count had actually

proofs the Ki

have written down all these monstrous assertions

The Duchess gave, moreover, repeated warnings to her brother, that the nobles were in the habit of obtaining posses son of all-the correspondence between Madnd and Brussels, and that they spent a vast deal of money in order to read her own and Philip's most private letters? She warned him, therefore, to be upon his guard for she believed that almost all their despatches were read? Such being the case, and the tenor of those documents being what we have seen it to be, her complaints as to the incredulty' of those seigmors to her affectionate protestations, seem quite wonderful

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II 1 459

² Ibid, 1 475
3 Ibid, 1 393
4 Ibid, 1 Correspondence de Guillaume le Tacit, 11 passini,

CHAPTER IX.

BLOOD SHED AND SPARED.

Position of Orange-The interview at Dendermonde-The supposititious letters of Alava-Views of Egmont-Isolation of Orange-Conduct of Egmont and of Horn—Confederacy of the nobles dissolved—Weak behaviour of prominent personages—Watchfulness of Orange— Convocation of States-General demanded—Pamphlet of Orange—City of Valenciennes refuses a garrison-Influence of La Grange and De Bray-City declared in a state of siege-Invested by Noircarmes-Movements to relieve the place-Calvinists defeated at Lannoy and at Watrelots-Elation of the Government-The siege pressed more closely -Cruelties practised upon the country people-Courage of the inhabitants-Remonstrance to the Knights of the Fleece-Conduct of Brederode—Orange at Amsterdam—New oath demanded by Government -Orange refuses-He offers his resignation of all offices-Meeting at Breda-New "Request" of Brederode-He creates disturbances and levies troops in Antwerp-Conduct of Hoogstraaten-Plans of Brederode -Supposed connivance of Orange-Alarm at Brussels-Tholouse at Ostrawell-Brederode in Holland-De Beauvoir defeats Tholouse-Excitement at Antwerp-Determined conduct of Orange-Three days' tumult at Antwerp suppressed by the wisdom and courage of Orange.

IT is necessary to allude to certain important events contemporaneous with those recorded in the last chapter, that the reader may thoroughly understand the position of the leading personages in this great drama at the close of the year 1566.

The Prince of Orange had, as we have seen, been exerting all his energies faithfully to accomplish the pacification of the commercial metropolis, upon the basis assented to beforehand by the Duchess. He had established a temporary religious peace, by which alone at that crisis the gathering tempest could be averted; but he had permitted the law to take its course upon certain rioters, who had been regularly condemned by courts of justice. He had worked day and night—notwithstanding immense obstacles, calumnious misstatements, and conflicting opinions, to restore order out of chaos; he had freely imperilled his own life—dashing into a

tumultuous mob on one occasion, wounding several with the halberd which he snatched from one of his guard, and dispersing almost with his single arm a dangerous and threatening insurrection—and he had remained in Antwerp, at the pressing solicitations of the magistract, who represented that the lives of not a single ecclesiastic would be safe as soon as his back was turned, and that all the merchants would forthwith depart from the city 2 It was nevertheless necessary that he should make a personal visit to his government of Holland, where similar disorders had been prevailing, and where men of all ranks and parties were clamouring for their stadholder

Notwithstanding all his exertions, however, he was thoroughly aware of the position in which he stood towards the government The sugared phrases of Margaret, the deliberate commendation of the "benign and debonair" Philip, pro-duced no effect upon this statesman, who was accustomed to look through and through men's actions to the core of their hearts In the hearts of Philip and Margaret he already saw treachery and revenge indelibly imprinted. He had been especially indignant at the insult which the Duchess Regent had put upon him, by sending Duke Eric of Brunswick with an armed force into Holland in order to protect Gouda. Woerden, and other places within the Prince's own govern ment? He was thoroughly conversant with the general tone in which the other seigniors and hinself were described to their sovereign. He was already convinced that the country was to be conquered by foreign mercenanes, and that his own life, with those of many other nobles, was to be sacrificed 4 The moment had arrived in which he was justified in look ing about him for menns of defence, both for himself and his country, if the King should be so instance as to carry out the purposes which the Prince suspected. The time was fast approaching in which a statesman placed upon such an elayation before the orld as that he had vation before the obliged to choose tool of tyranny, a

To a man so prone to read the future, the moment for his choice seemed already arrived. Moreover, he thought it doubtful, and events were most signally to justify his doubts, whether he could be accepted as the instrument of despotism, even were he inclined to prostitute himself to such service. At this point, therefore, undoubtedly began the treasonable thoughts of William the Silent, if it be treason to attempt the protection of ancient and chartered liberties against a foreign oppressor. He despatched a private envoy to Egmont,1 representing the grave suspicions manifested by the Duchess in sending Duke Eric into Holland, and proposing that means should be taken into consideration for obviating the dangers with which the country was menaced. Catholies as well as Protestants, he intimated, were to be crushed in one universal conquest as soon as Philip had completed the formidable preparations which he was making for invading the provinces. For himself, he said, he would not remain in the land to witness the utter desolation of the people, nor to fall an unresisting victim to the vengeance which he foresaw. If, however, he might rely upon the co-operation of Egmont and Horn, he was willing, with the advice of the states-general, to risk preparations against the armed invasion of Spaniards by which the country was to be reduced to slavery. It was incumbent, however, upon men placed as they were, "not to let the grass grow under their feet;" and the moment for action was fast approaching."

This was the scheme which Orange was willing to attempt. To make use of his own influence and that of his friends, to interpose between a sovereign insane with bigotry, and a people in a state of religious frenzy, to resist brutal violence if need should be by force, and to compel the sovereign to respect the charters which he had sworn to maintain, and which were far more ancient than his sovereignty; so much of treason did William of Orange already contemplate, for in no other way could he be loyal to his country and his own

honour.

Nothing came of this secret embassy, for Egmont's heart and fate were already fixed. Before Orange departed, however, for the north, where his presence in the Dutch pro-

¹ Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., ii. 323-326.

vinces was now imperatively required, a memorable interview took place at Dendermonde between Orange, Horn, Egmont, Hoogstraaten, and Count Louis The nature of this con ference was probably similar to that of the secret mission from Orange to Egmont just recorded It was not a long consultation The gentlemen met at eleven o'clock, and conversed until dinner was ready, which was between twelve and one in the afternoon They discussed the contents of a letter recently received by Horn from his brother Montigny at Segovia, giving a lively picture of Philip's fury at the recent events in the Netherlands, and expressing the Baron's own astonishment and indignation that it had been impos sible for the seigniors to prevent such outrages as the public preaching, the image breaking, and the Accord They had also some conversation concerning the dissatisfaction mani fested by the Duchess at the proceedings of Count Horn at Tournay, and they read a very remarkable letter which had been furnished them, as having been written by the Spanish envoy in Paris, Don Francis of Alava, to Margaret of Parma I his letter was forged At least the Regent, in her Italian correspondence, asserted it to be fictitious, and in those secret letters to Philip she usually told the truth The astuteness of William of Orange had in this instance been deceived The striking fidelity, however, with which the present and future policy of the government was sketched, the accuracy with which many unborn events were foreshadowed, together with the minute touches which gave an air of genuineness to the fictitious despatch, might well deceive even so sagacious an observer as the Prince

The letters' alluded to the deep and long settled hostility of Philip to Orange, Horn, and Egmont, as to a fact entirely within the writer's knowledge, and that of his correspondent, but urged upon the Duchess the assumption of an extraor durary degree of apparent cordiality in her intercourse with

¹ Foppens, Supplement, 1 (Proces d'Egmont) 73 76, and 166 170 (Proces de Homes) troen 1 Prinst, v 360, sep terrespondince de Guillaume le Tacit, vi Introduction of Gachard, 74, sep Compare Bor, vog Unacid vi Stada of Gachard, 14, sep Compare Bor, vog Unacid vi Stada of Bentrogho, in 42, sep

them. It was the King's intention to use them and to destroy them, said the writer, and it was the Regent's duty to second the design. "The tumults and troubles have not been without their secret concurrence," said the supposititious Alava, "and your Highness may rest assured that they will he the first upon whom his Majesty will seize, not to confer benefits, but to chastise them as they deserve. Your Highness, however, should show no symptom of displeasure, but should constantly maintain in their minds the idea that his Majesty considers them as the most faithful of his servants. While they are persuaded of this, they can be more easily used, but when the time comes, they will be treated in another manner. Your Highness may rest assured that his Majesty is not less inclined than your Highness that they should receive the punishment which they merit." The Duchess was furthermore recommended "to deal with the three seigniors according to the example of the Spanish governments in its intercourse with the envoys, Berghen and Montigny, who are met with a smiling face, but who are closely watched, and who will never be permitted to leave Spain alive."2 The remainder of the letter alludes to supposed engagements between France and Spain for the extirpation of heresy, from which allusion to the generally accepted but mistaken notion as to the Bayonne Conference, a decided proof seems to be furnished that the letter was not genuine. Great complaints, however, are made as to the conduct of the Queen Regent, who is described as "a certain lady well known to her Highness, and as a person without faith, friendship, or truth; the most consummate hypocrite in the world." After giving instances of the duplicity manifested by Catherine de Medici, the writer continues: "She sends her little black dwarf to me upon frequent errands, in order that by means of this spy she may worm out my secrets. I am, however, upon my guard, and flatter myself that I learn more from him than she from me. She shall never be able to boast of having deceived a Spaniard."3

An extract or two from this very celebrated document seemed indispensable, because of the great importance attached to it, both at the Dendermonde Conference, and at the trails of Egmont and Horn The contemporary writers of Holland had no doubt of its gentumeness, and, what is more remarkable, Strada, the histonographer of the Farnese family, after quoting Margaret's demal of the authenticity of the letter, coolly observes "Whether this were only an invention of the conspirators, or actually a despatch from Alaxa, I shall not decide It is certain, however, that the Duchess declared it to be false" is

There was doubtless some conversation at Dendermonde on the propriety or possibility of forcible resistance to a Spanish army, with which it seemed probable that Philip was about to invade the provinces, and take the lives of the lead ing nobles Count Louis was in favour of making provision in Germany for the accomplishment of this purpose. It is also highly probable that the Prince may have encouraged the proposition In the sense of his former communication to Egmont, he may have reasoned on the necessity of making levies to sustain the decisions of the states general against violence There is, however, no proof of any such fact Egmont, at any rate, opposed the scheme, on the ground that "it was wrong to entertain any such ill opinion of so good a king as Philip, that he had never done anything un just towards his subjects, and that if anyone was in fear, he had better leave the country "2 Egmont, moreover, doubted the authenticity of the letters from Alava, but agreed to carry them to Brussels, and to lay them before the Regent lady, when she saw them, warmly assured the Count that they were inventions 3

The Conference broke up after it had lasted an hour and a half. The nobles then went to dinner, at which other persons appear to have been present, and the celebrated Den dermonde meeting was brought to a close. After the repast was finished, each of the five nobles mounted his horse, and departed on his separate way.

From this time forth the position of these leading seigniors

¹ Strada, v 231 ² Proces d'Egmont (Foppens, 1 75)
³ Letter of Egmont in Groen v Prinst , Archives, il 400, 401

⁴ Proces d'Egmont, 73.76 Procès de Hornes, 166 170 (Foppens, Supplement) Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, n. Introduction of M Gachard, Ivav sog Compare Bor, n. 103; Hoofd, n. 114, Strada, v. 23, sog; Bentinoglio, m. 42, sog Correspondance de Philippe II, 1, 474 476.

became more sharply defined. Orange was left in almost complete isolation. Without the assistance of Egmont, any effective resistance to the impending invasion from Spain seemed out of the question. The Count, however, had taken his irrevocable and fatal resolution. After various oscillations during the stormy period which had elapsed, his mind, notwithstanding all the disturbing causes by which it had hitherto been partially influenced, now pointed steadily to the point of loyalty. The guidance of that pole star was to lead him to utter shipwreck. The unfortunate noble, entrenched against all fear of Philip by the brazen wall of an easy conscience, saw no fault in his past at which he should grow pale with apprehension. Moreover, he was sanguine by nature, a Catholic in religion, a royalist from habit and conviction. Henceforth he was determined that his services to the crown should more than counterbalance any idle speeches or insolent demonstrations of which he might have been previously guilty.

Horn pursued a different course, but one which separated him also from the Prince, while it led to the same fate which Egmont was blindly pursuing. The Admiral had committed no act of treason. On the contrary, he had been doing his best, under most difficult circumstances, to avert rebellion and save the interests of a most ungrateful sovereign. He was now disposed to wrap himself in his virtue, to retreat from a court life, for which he had never felt a vocation, and to resign all connection with a government by which he felt himself very badly treated. Moody, wrathful, disappointed, ruined, and calumniated, he would no longer keep terms with King or Duchess. He had griefs of long standing against the whole of the royal family. He had never forgiven the Emperor for refusing him, when young, the appointment of chamberlain. He had served Philip long and faithfully, but he had never received a stiver of salary or "merced," notwithstanding all his work as state councillor, as admiral, as superintendent in Spain; while his younger brother had long been in the receipt of nine or ten thousand

² Renom de France MS., i. c. 31

^{1 &}quot;Aiant par trop cognu n'estre ma vocation estre en court," etc., etc.—Letter of Horn to his secretary, Alonzo de la Loo. Foppens, ii. 470, 471.

floring yearly He had spent four hundred thousand floring in the King's service, his estates were mortgaged to their full value, he had been obliged to sell his family plate 1 He had done his best in Fournay to serve the Duchess, and he had averted the "Sicilian vespers," which had been imminent at his arrival. He had saved the Catholics from a general massacre, yet he heard nevertheless from Mon tigny, that all his actions were distorted in Spain, and his motives blankened 1 His heart no longer inclined him to continue in Philip's service, even were he furnished with the means of doing so He had instructed his secretary, Alonzo de la Loo, whom he had despatched many months previously to Madrid, that he was no longer to press his master's claims for a "merced," but to signify that he abandoned all demands and resigned all posts He could turn hermit for the rest of his days, as well as the Emperor Charles ' If he had little. he could live upon little It was in this sense that he spoke to Margaret of Parma, to Assonleville, to all around him It was precisely in this strain and temper that he wrote to Philip, indignantly defending his course at Tournay, pro testing against the tortuous conduct of the Duchess, and bluntly declaring that he would treat no longer with ladies upon matters which concerned a man's honour

Thus, smarting under a sense of gross injustice, the Ad miral expressed himself in terms which Philip was not likely to forgive He had undertaken the pacification of Tournay, because it was Montigny's government, and he had promised his services whenever they should be requisite. Horn was a loyal and affectionate brother, and it is pathetic to find him congratulating Montigny on being, after all better off in Spain than in the Netherlands Neither loyalty nor the sincere Catholicism for which Montigny at this period com mended Horn in his private letters, could save the two brothers from the doom which was now fast approaching

¹ Renom de France MS, 1 c 31 ⁴ Ibid Foppens, Supplement, 11 506 509 2 Hid 3 Thid

Foppens, Supplement, 11 501 505
"Pour fasche que estes la, estes plus à votre aise que ici '-Letter to Montiguy Fortens, 11 496

^{7 &}quot;Par recu ung grand contentement de l'assurance que me donnez que nuls ne basteront de vous faire changer d opinion, en chose qui touche le fait de la religion ancienne, qui est certes conforme à ce que

berg was serving the cause of religious freedom by defacing the churches within his ancestral domains, pulling down statues, dining in chapels, and giving the holy wafer to his parrot 1 Nothing could be more stupid than these acts of irreverence, by which Catholics were offended and honest patriots disgusted Nothing could be more opposed to the sentiments of Orange, whose first principle was abstinence by all denominations of Christians from mutual insults the same time, it is somewhat revolting to observe the indig nation with which such offences were regarded by men of the most abandoned character Thus, Armenteros, whose name was synonymous with government swindling, who had been rolling up money year after year, by peculations, auc tioneering of high posts in church and state, bribes, and all kinds of picking and stealing, could not contain his horror as he referred to wafers eaten by parrots, or "toasted on forks"2 by renegade priests, and poured out his emotions on the subject into the faithful bosom of Antonio Perez, the man with whose debauchenes, political villanies, and deliberate murders all Europe was to ring

No doubt there were many individuals in the confederacy for whom it was reserved to render honourable service in the national cause. The names of Louis Nassau, Marnix of St Aldegonde, Bernard de Merode, were to be written in golden letters in their country's rolls, but at this moment they were impatient, inconsiderate, out of the control of Orange Louis was anxious for the King to come from Spain with his army, and for "the bear dance to begin" Brederode, noisy, brawling, and absurd as ever, was bringing ridicule upon the national cause by his buffoonery, and endangering the whole people by his madequate yet rebelhous exertions.

What course was the Prince of Orange to adopt? He could find no one to comprehend his views He felt certain it the close of the year that the purpose of the government was fixed. He made no secret of his determination ne

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 472, 480, 481
² "Asar en un asador"—Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 480, 481
Tomas Armenteros to Antonio Perez

Archives et Correspondance, ii 309

tion of the people. He had repeatedly resigned all his offices. He was now determined that the resignation once for all should be accepted. If he used dissimulation, it was because Philip's deception permitted no man to be frank. If the sovereign constantly disavowed all hostile purposes against his people, and manifested extreme affection for the men whom he had already doomed to the scaffold, how could the Prince openly denounce him? It was his duty to save his country and his friends from impending ruin. preserved, therefore, an attitude of watchfulness. the depth of his cabinet, was under a constant inspection by the sleepless Prince. The sovereign assured his sister that her apprehensions about their correspondence was groundless. He always locked up his papers, and took the key with him.4 Nevertheless, the key was taken out of his pocket and the papers read. Orange was accustomed to observe, that men of leisure might occupy themselves with philosophical pursuits and with the secrets of nature, but that it was his business to study the hearts of kings.2 He knew the man and the woman with whom he had to deal. We have seen enough of the policy secretly pursued by Philip and Margaret to appreciate the accuracy with which the Prince, groping as it were in the dark, had judged the whole situation. Had his friends taken his warnings, they might have lived to render services against tyranny. Had he imitated their example of false loyalty, there would have been one additional victim, more illustrious than all the rest, and a whole country hopelessly enslaved.

It is by keeping these considerations in view that we can explain his connection with such a man as Brederode. The enterprises of that noble, of Tholouse, and others, and the resistance of Valenciennes, could hardly have been prevented even by the opposition of the Prince. But why should he take the field against men who, however rashly or ineffectually, were endeavouring to oppose tyranny, when he knew himself already proscribed and doomed by the tyrant? Such loyalty he left to Egmont. Till late in the autumn, he nad still believed in the possibility of convoking the statesgeneral, and of making preparations in Germany to enforce their decrees.

· Foppens, Supplément, ii. 512.

² Strada, v 234

The confederates and sectaries had boasted that they could easily raise an army of sixty thousand men within the pro easily fase an army of sixy thousand florins monthly would be furnished by the rich merchants of Antwerp, and that it was a six of the six of t rolle other Protestant ance against the conr adherents of the reformed religion 3 Without placing much confidence iff such exaggerated statements, the Prince might well be justified in believing himself strong enough, if backed by the confederacy, by Egmont, and by his own boundless influence, both at Antwerp and in his own government, to sustain the constituted authorities of the nation even against a Spanish army, and to interpose with legitimate and irresistible strength between the insane tyrant and the country which he was preparing to crush It was the opinion of the best informed Catholics that, if Egmont should declare for the confederacy, he could take the field with sixty thousand men. and make himself master of the whole country at a blow In conjunction with Orange, the moral and physical

force would have been invincible It was therefore not Orange alone, but the Catholics and Protestants alike, the whole population of the country, and the Duchess Regent herself, who desired the convocation of the estates Notwithstanding Philip's deliberate but secret determination never to assemble that body, although the hope was ever to be held out that they should be convened, Margaret had been most importunate that her brother should permit the measure "There was less danger," should permit the measure

^{1 &}quot;Mesines osent aucuns des confederez et sectaires menasser d'oser d'armes et force contre moi - Se vanians que I on fera venir en armes contre moy cinquante ou soixante mil hommes de ces pays sans les estranguers"-Unpublished letter of Margaret of Parma, heretofore cite! Brussels Archives MS

^{2 &}quot;Disans avoir les bourses des marchans d'Anvers qui en ce cas leur furniront par meis plus de xu mil florins," etc., etc -Ibid

² "Que en fait de la religion les dits Alemans les favoriseront oires qu'itz soient en la soulde de V Mrt et consequemment oseront plus tot barbouiller quelque chose "-Ibid. 4 "Vous l'eussiez veu marcher en campaigne avec une armée de

^{60 000} hommes et avoir reduict en sa puissance la ville de Bruxelles - par un exploit soudain se fust aisement empare de l' principa du Pays Bas," etc , etc -Pontus Paren MS

means of laving the circumjacent meadows under water, was considered in those days almost impregnable.1 The city was summoned, almost at the same time as Tournay, to accept a garrison. This demand of government was met by a peremtory refusal. Noircarmes, towards the middle of December, ordered the magistrates to send a deputation to confer with him at Condé. Pensionary Outreman accordingly repaired to that neighbouring city, accompanied by some of his colleagues.2 This committee was not unfavourable to the demands of government. The magistracies of the cities, generally, were far from rebellious; but in the case of Valenciennes the real power at that moment was with the Calvinist consistory and the ministers. The deputies, after their return from Condé, summoned the leading members of the reformed religion, together with the preachers. It was urged that it was their duty forthwith to use their influence in favour of the demand made by the government upon the city.3

"May I grow mute as a fish!" answered de la Grange, stoutly, "may the tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth, before I persuade my people to accept a garrison of cruel mercenaries, by whom their rights of conscience are to be

trampled upon!"4

Councillor Outreman reasoned with the fiery minister, that if he and his colleague were afraid of their own lives, ample provision should be made with government for their departure under safe conduct. La Grange replied that he had no fears for himself, that the Lord would protect those who preached and those who believed in His holy word, but that He would not forgive them should they now bend their necks to His enemies.⁵

It was soon very obvious that no arrangement could be made. The magistrates could exert no authority, the preachers were all-powerful, and the citizens, said a Catholic inhabitant of Valenciennes, "allowed themselves to be led by their ministers like oxen." Upon the 17th December, 1566, a proclamation was accordingly issued by the Duchess Regent, declaring the city in a state of siege, and all its inhabitants

¹ Guicciardini, ubi sup.

³ Ibid. 5 Ibid. Ibid.

² Valenciennes MS.

⁴ Ibid. Pontus Payen MS.

⁶ Valenciennes MS.

rebels ¹ The crimes for which this penalty was denounced were elaborately set forth in the edict. Preaching according to the reformed religion had been permitted in two or three churches, the sacrament according to the Calvinistic manner had been publicly administered, together with a renunciation by the communicants of their adhesion to the Catholic Church, and now a rebellious refusal to receive the garrison sent to them by the Duchess had been added to the list of their initiation. For offences like these the Regent deemed it her duty to forbid all inhabitants of any city, village, or province of the Netherlands holding communication with Valenciennes, buying or selling with its inhabitants, or fur nishing them with provisions, on pain of being considered accomplices in their rebellion, and as such of being executed with the halter ²

The city was now invested by Noircarmes with all the troops which could be spared. The confederates gave promises of assistance to the beleaguered citizens, Orange privately encouraged them to hold out in their legitimate refusal. Brederode and others busied themselves with hostile demonstrations which were destined to remain barren, but in the meantime the inhabitants had nothing to rely upon save their own stout hearts and arms.

At first, the siege was sustained with a light heart. Fre quent sallies were made, smart skirmishes were ventured in which the Huguenots, on the testimony of a most bitter Catholic contemporary, conducted themselves with the bravery of veteran troops, and as if they had done nothing all their lives but fight, 'forays were made upon the monasteries of the neighbourhood for the purpose of procuring supplies, and the broken statues of the dismanted churches were used to build a bridge across an arm of the river, which was called in dension the Bridge of Idols' Noircarmes and the six officers under him, who were thought to be conducting their

¹ The proclamation is given in Bor, in 134 136

Proclamation in Bor, ubi sup
 Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, preface exlix, cl, notes

^{4 &}quot;Sortoient journellement aux escarmouches combattans avec hardiesse et dexterite comme si foutle leur vie n'eusent faict aultre chose que porter les armes "—Pontus Pajen MS

^{*} Ibid

operations with languor, were christened the Seven Sleepers.¹ Gigantic spectacles, three feet in circumference, were planted derisively upon the ramparts, in order that the artillery, which it was said that the papists of Arras were sending, might be seen, as soon as it should arrive.² Councillor Outreman, who had left the city before the siege, came into it again, on commission from Noirearmes. He was received with contempt, his proposals on behalf of the government were answered with outcries of fury; he was pelted with stones, and was very glad to make his escape alive.³ The pulpits thundered with the valiant deeds of Joshua, Judas Maccabeus, and other Bible heroes.⁴ The miracles wrought in their hehalf served to encourage the enthusiasm of the people, while the movements making at various points in the neighbourhood encouraged a hope of a general rising throughout the country.

Those hopes were destined to disappointment. There were large assemblages made, to be sure, at two points. Nearly three thousand sectaries had been collected at Lannoy under Pierre Cornaille, who, having been a locksmith, and afterwards a Calvinist preacher, was now disposed to try his ortune as a general. His band was, however, disorderly, custics armed with pitchforks, young students and old soldiers out of employment, furnished with rusty matchlocks, pikes, and halberds, composed his force. A company similar in character, and already amounting to some twelve hundred in number, was collecting at Watrelots. It was hoped that an imposing array would soon be assembled, and that the two bands, making a junction, would then march to the relief of Valenciennes. It was boasted that in a very short time, thirty thousand men would be in the field. There was even a fear of some such result felt by the Catholics.

^{1 &}quot;Les gueux les appelloient les sept dormans."-Valenciennes MS.

² "Ils avoient fichez sur leurs ramparts de fort longues picques et au bout d'icelles attaché de fort grandes lunettes aintes trois pieds en diametre, et quand on leur demandoit à quoy elles servaient, respondaient joyeusement que c'estoit pour descouvrir de plus long l'artillerie que les papistes d'Arras debvoient envoier," etc., etc.—Pontus Payen MS.

³ Valenciennes MS.

Valenciennes MS. Pontus Payen MS.
 Ibid.

Pontus Payen MS.
 Ibid.

It was then that Noircarmes and his "seven sleepers" showed that they were awake Early in January, 1567, that fierce soldier, among whose vices slothfulness was certainly never reckoned before or afterwards fell upon the lock smith's army at Lannoy, while the Seigneur de Rassinghem attacked the force at Watrelots on the same day 1 Noir carmes destroyed half his enemies at the very first charge The ill assorted rabble fell asunder at once The preacher fought well, but his undisciplined force fled at the first sight of the enemy Those who carned arquebusses threw them down without a single discharge, that they might run the faster At least a thousand were soon stretched dead upon the field, others were hunted into the river Twenty six hundred, according to the Catholic accounts, were extermi nated in an hour 2

Rassinghem on his part, with five or six hundred regulars, attacked Teriel's force, numbering at least twice as many Half of these were soon cut to pieces and put to flight hundred, however, who had seen some service, took refuge in the cemetery of Watrelots Here, from behind the stone wall of the inclosure, they sustained the attack of the Catholics with some spirit. The repose of the dead in the quiet country churchyard was disturbed by the uproar of a most sanguinary conflict. The temporary fort was soon carried, and the Huguenots retreated into the church. A rattling arquebusade was poured in upon them as they struggled in the narrow doorway. At least four hundred corpses were soon strewn among the ancient graves. The rest were hunted into the church, and from the church into the belfry A fire was then made in the steeple, and kept up till all were roasted or suffocated s. Not a man escaped

This was the issue of the first stricken field in the Nether lands, for the cause of religious liberty. It must be confessed that it was not very encouraging to the lovers of freedom. The partisans of government were elated, in proportion to the apprehension which had been felt for the result of the

Pontus Payen MS Valenciennes VS Compare Horfd, F ==

⁻ rounus rayen and valencemes MS C Strada, vi 256 257 Vit Vight 49 ² Groen v Frinst Archives etc., ii., 7, 8 sup Hoold ube sup, Pontus Payen MS 1 ontus Payen MS

rising in the Walloon country. "These good hypocrites," wrote a correspondent of Orange, "are lifting up their heads like so many dromedaries. They are becoming unmanageable with pride." The Duke of Aerschot and Count Meghem gave great banquets in Brussels, where all the good chevaliers drank deep in honour of the victory, and to the health of his Majesty and Madame. "I saw Berlaymont just go by the window," wrote Schwartz to the Prince. "He was coming from Aerschot's dinner with a face as red as the Cardinal's new hat."

On the other hand, the citizens of Valenciennes were depressed in equal measure with the exultation of their antagonists. There was no more talk of seven sleepers now, no more lunettes stuck upon lances, to spy the coming forces of the enemy. It was felt that the government was wide awake, and that the city would soon see the impending horrors without telescopes. The siege was pressed more closely. Noircarmes took up a commanding position at Saint Armand, by which he was enabled to cut off all communication between the city and the surrounding country. All the villages in the neighbourhood were pillaged; all the fields laid waste. All the infamies which an insolent soldiery can inflict upon helpless peasantry were daily enacted. Men and women who attempted any communication with the city, were murdered in cold blood by hundreds.3 The villagers were plundered of their miserable possessions, children were stripped naked in the midst of winter for the sake of the rags which covered them; matrons and virgins were sold at public auction by the tap of drum; sick and wounded wretches were burned over slow fires, to afford amusement to the soldiers.5 In brief, the whole unmitigated curse which military power inflamed by religious bigotry can embody, had descended upon the heads of these unfortunate provincials who had dared to worship God in Christian churches without a Roman ritual.

^{1 &}quot;Haulcent pour l'heure la teste comme trommetaires, et ne sont quacy plus traictables d'orgueil."—Archives et Correspondance, iii. 13.

³ Remonstrance addressed by the inhabitants of Valenciennes to the Knights of the Fleece.—§ 9, apud Bor, iii. 136-141.

⁴ Ibid.

Meantime the city maintained a stout heart still The whole population were arranged under different banners The rich and poor alike took arms to defend the walls which sheltered them 1 The town paupers were enrolled in three companies, which bore the significant title of the "Tous nuds" or the "Stark nakeds," 2 and many was the fierce conflict delivered outside the gites by men, who, in the words of a Catbolic then in the city, might rather be taken for "experienced veterans than for burghers and artisans 3 At the same time, to the honour of Valenciennes, it must be stated, upon the same incontestable authority, that not a Catholic in the city was injured or insulted. The priests who had remuned there were not allowed to say mass, but they never met with an opprohingus word or look from the people 4

The inhabitants of the city called upon the confederates for assistance They also issued an address to the Knights of the Fleece, a paper which narrated the story of their wrongs in pathetic and startling language. They appealed to those puissant and illustrious chevaliers to prevent the perpetration of the great wrong which was now impending over so many innocent heads "Wait not, they said, ' till the thunderbolt has fallen, till the deluge has overwhelmed us, till the fires already blazing have laid the land in coals and ashes, till no other course be possible, but to abandon the country in its desolation to foreign barbarity. Let the cause of the oppressed come to your ears So shall your conscience become a shield of iron so shall the happiness of a whole country witness before the angels, of your truth to his Majesty, in the cause of his true grandeur and glory ' 6

These stirring appeals to an order of which Philip was chief, Viglius chancellor, Egmont, Mansfeld, Aerschot, Ber laymont, and others, chevaliers, were not likely to produce

Nalenciennes MS

^{3 &}quot;Qu'on eut pris tous pour de vieux routiers et soldats exteri mentes et non pas pour des bourgeois et artisans de prime abord -Ibid

^{4 &}quot;Si ne recuerent ils toutes fois aucunes ii jures ny fascherie excepte qu'on leur defend t de dire la messe, laquelle le bon Prelat de S Jenn disoit secrettement en sa chambre pour sa consolation -Ibid Remonstrance etc ubi si *

Ante, page 44

that the barbarous mariners had a clear right to their preaching, for the custom had already been established previously to the August treaty, at a place called the "Lastadge" among the wharves. "In the name of God, then," wrote Margaret, "let them continue to preach in the Lastadge." This being all the barbarians wanted, an Accord, with the full consent of the Regent, was drawn up at Amsterdam and the other northern cities. The Catholics kept churches and cathedrals, but in the winter season, the greater part of the population obtained permission to worship Got upon dry land, in warehouses and dock-yards.

Within a very few weeks, however, the whole arrangement was coolly cancelled by the Duchess, her permission revoked, and peremptory prohibition of all preaching within or without the walls proclaimed. The government was growing stronger. Had not Noircarmes and Rassinghem cut to pieces three or four thousand of these sectaries marching to battle under parsons, locksmiths, and similar chieftains? Were not all lovers of good government "erecting their heads like dromedaries?"

It may easily be comprehended that the Prince could not with complacency permit himself to be thus perpetually stultified by a weak, false, and imperious woman. She had repeatedly called upon him when she was appalled at the tempest and sinking in the ocean; and she had as constantly disavowed his deeds and reviled his character when she felt herself in safety again. He had tranquillized the old Batavian provinces, where the old Batavian spirit still lingered, by his personal influence and his unwearied exertions. Men of all ranks and religions were grateful for his labours. The Reformers had not gained much, but they were satisfied. The Catholics retained their churches, their property, their consideration. The states of Holland had voted him fifty thousand florins, as an acknowledgment of his efforts in restoring peace. He had refused the present. He was in debt, pressed for money, but he did not choose, as he informed Philip, "that men should think his actions

^{1 &}quot;Au nom de Dieu qu'ils ayent leurs presche au dict Lastaige."—Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 296.

² Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 351-353. ³ Bor, iii. 147. Hoofd, iv. 129.

1567]

governed by motives of avarice or particular interest, instead of the true affection which he bore to his Majesty's service and the good of the country "1 Nevertheless, his back was hardly turned before all his work was undone by the Regent

A new and important step on the part of the government had now placed him in an attitude of almost avowed rebel lion All functionaries, from governors of provinces down to subalterns in the army, were required to take a new oath of allegiance, "novum et hacterius musitatum religionis jura mentum," as the Prince characterized it, which was, he said, quite equal to the inquisition Every man who bore his Majesty's commission was ordered solemnly to pledge him self to obey the orders of government, everywhere, and against every person, without limitation or restriction a Count Mansfeld, now "factotum at Brussels," had taken the oath with great fervour So had Aerschot, Berlaymont, Meghem, and, after a little wavering, Egmont' Orange spurned the proposition. He had taken oaths enough which he had never broken, nor intended now to break He was ready still to do everything conducive to the real interest of the monarch Who dared do more was no true servant to the government, no true lover of the country He would never disgrace himself by a blind pledge, through which he might be constrained to do acts detrimental, in his opinion, to the safety of the crown, the happiness of the commonwealth, and his own honour. The alternative presented he willingly embraced " He renounced all his offices, and desired no longer to serve a government whose policy he did not approve, a King by whom he was suspected

His resignation was not accepted by the Duchess, who still made efforts to retain the services of a man who was necessary to her administration. She begged him, notwith standing the purely defensive and watchful attitude which he had now assumed, to take measures that Brederode

Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, n 360 365 ² Archives et Correspondance in 29

³ Groen : Prinst , Archives etc., in 26 31 Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit ii 312, 313 317 321, 416 418

^{*} Expression of Orange Archives et Correspondance, in 40 5 Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit , il 312, 313 Strada, vi

²⁶⁴ Renom de France MS , 1 C 39

ceiving a garnson from government without his authority. So far he connived at Brederode's proceedings, as he had a perfect right to do, for Walcheren was within what had been the Prince's government, and he had no disposition that these cities should share the fate of Tournay, Valenciennes, Bois le Duc, and other towns which had already passed or were passing under the spears of foreign mercenaires.

It is also probable that he did not take any special pains to check the entoliments of Brederode. The peace of Antwerp was not endangered, and to the preservation of that city the Prince seemed now to limit himself. He was hereditary burgrave of Antwerp, but officer of Philip's never more Despite the shrill demands of Duchess Margaret, therefore, the Prince did not take very active measures by which the crown of Philip might be secured. He, perhaps, looked upon the struggle almost with indifference. Nevertheless, he issued a formal proclamation by which the Count's enlistments were forbidden. Van der Aa, a gentleman who had been active in making these levies, was compelled to leave the city? Brederode was already gone to the north to busy himself with further enrolments?

In the meantime there had been much alarm in Brussels Egmont, who omitted no opportunity of manifesting his loyalty, offered to throw himself at once into the Isle of Wal cheren, for the purpose of dislodging any rebels who might have effected an entrince! He collected accordingly seven or eight hundred Walloon veterans, at his disposal in Flanders, in the little port of Sas de Ghent, prepared at once to evecute his intention, "worthy," says a Catholic writer, "of his well known courage and magnanimity." The Duchess expressed gratitude for the Court's devotion and loyalty, but his ser vices in the sequel proved unnecessary. The rebels, several boat loads of whom had been cruising about in the neigh bourhood of Flushing during the early part of March, had been refused admittance into any of the ports on the sland. They therefore sailed up the Scheld, and landed at a little

5 T

¹ Gachard, Preface to Correspondance de Guilliume le Tacit, in calin 249 — Compare Groen v Prinst, Archives, etc., in 48 50, Bor, in 156, Meteren, in 45, Hoofd, in 120

² Bor in 156

² Bor m 156

delivered to their officers, by whom they were conveyed noiselessly to the place of rendezvous? Before daybreak upon the following morning, De Beauvoir met his soldiers at the abbey of Saint Bernard, within a league of Antwerp Here he gave them their arms, supplied them with refresh ments, and made them a brief speech. He instructed them that they were to advance, with furfied banners and without beat of drum, till within sight of the enemy, that the foremost section was, to deliver its fire, retreat to the rear and load, to be followed by the next, which was to do the same, and above all, that not an arquebus should be discharged till the faces of the enemy could be distinguished.

taces of the enemy could be distinguished."

The troop started After a few minutes' march they were in full sight of Ostrawell. They then displayed their firgs and advanced upon the fort with loud huzzas. I holouse was as much taken by surprise as if they had suddenly emerged from the bowels of the earth. He had been informed that the government at Brussels was in extreme trepidation. When he first heard the advincing trumpets and sudden shouts, he thought it a detachment of Brederode's promised force. The cross on the banners' soon undeceived him. Nevertheless, 'like a brave and generous young gentleman as he was," he lost no time in drawing up his men for action implored them to defend their breastworks, which were impregnable against so small a force, and in structed them to wait patiently with their fire, till the enemy.

were near enough to be marked

These orders were disobeyed The "young scholar," as De Beauvoir had designated him, had no power to infuse his own spirit into his ribble rout of followers. They were already panic struck by the unexpected appearance of the enemy. The Catholics came on with the coolness of veterans, taking as deliberate um as if it had been they, not their enemies, who were behind breastworks. The troops of Tholouse fired wildly, precipitately, quite over the heads of the

¹ Ponius Payen M5 —Compare Gachard, Preface to Guillaume le Tacil, 11 exxiv evex ² Pontus Payen M5 ³ Ilit —Compute the Letters of De Beauvoir, published by \t

Guchard Preface, etc., ubs sup

Pontus Payen \(\)

Letter of De Beauvoir, ubs sup

Letter of De Beauvoir, ubs sup

Pontus Payen MS

assailants. Many of the defenders were slain as fast as they showed themselves above their bulwarks. The ditch was crossed, the breastwork carried at a single determined charge. The rebels made little resistance, but fled as soon as the enemy entered their fort. It was a hunt, not a battle. Hundreds were stretched dead in the camp; hundreds were driven into the Scheld; six or eight hundred took refuge in a farm-house; but De Beauvoir's men set fire to the building, and every rebel who had entered it was burned alive or shot. No quarter was given. Hardly a man of the three thousand who had held the fort escaped. The body of Tholouse was cut into a hundred pieces. The Seigneur de Beauvoir had reason, in the brief letter which gave an account of this exploit, to assure her Highness that there were "some very valiant fellows in his little troop." Certainly they had accomplished the enterprise entrusted to them with promptness, neatness, and entire success. Of the great rebellious gathering, which every day had seemed to grow more formidable, not a vestige was left."

This bloody drama had been enacted in full sight of Antwerp. The fight had lasted from daybreak till ten o'clock in the forenoon, during the whole of which period the city ramparts looking towards Ostrawell, the roofs of houses, the towers of churches, had been swarming with eager spectators. The sound of drum and trumpet, the rattle of musketry, the shouts of victory, the despairing cries of the vanquished, were heard by thousands who deeply sympathized with the rebels thus enduring so sanguinary a chastisement. In Antwerp there were forty thousand people opposed to the Church of Rome. Of this number the greater proportion were Calvinists, and of these Calvinists there were thousands looking down from the battlements upon the disastrous fight.

The excitement soon became uncontrollable. Before ten o'clock vast numbers of sectaries came pouring towards the

^{1 &}quot;Le Sr de Tholouze qui at esté haché en cent pièces, non obstant l'offre de deux mil escus qu'il faisoit pour ranson," etc.—Letter of De Beauvoir in Gachard, ubi sup.

² Gachard, Presace, ubi sup. Pontus Payen MS.—Compare Bor, iii. 157. Meteren, f. 45. Strada, vi. 250, 251.

³ Strada, Bor, Meteren, ubi sup.

Letter of Sir T. Gresham in Burgon, ii. 195.

Red Gate which afforded the readiest egress to the scene of action, the drawbridge of the Ostrawell Gate huing heen destroyed the night before by command of Orange' They came from every street and alley of the city. Some were armed with lance, pike, or arquebus, some bore sledge-hummers, others had the pritisans, battle-axes, and huge two handed swords of the previous century, 2 all were determined upon issuing forth to the rescue of their friends in the fields,outside the town. The wife of Tholouse, not yet aware of her husburd's death, although his defeat was obvious, flew from street to street, calling upon the Culvinists to save or to avenge their perishing brethren?

A terrible tumult prevailed. Ten thousand men were already up and in arms It was then that the Prince of Orange, who was sometimes described by his enemies as timid and pusillanimous by nature, showed the mettle he was made of His sense of duty no longer bade him defend the crown of Philip-which thenceforth was to be entrusted to the hirelings of the Inquisition-but the vast population of Antwerp, the women, the children, and the enormous wealth of the richest city in the world, had been confided to his care, and he had accepted the responsibility Mounting his horse, he made his appearance instantly at the Red Gate, before as formidable a mob as man has ever faced. He came there almost alone, without guards Hoogstraaten arrived soon afterwards with the same intention. The Prince was received with howls of execution. A thousand hoarse voices called him the Pope's servant, minister of Antichrist, and layished upon him many more epithets of the same nature His life was in imminent danger A furious clothier levelled an arquebus full at his breast cherous villain " he cried, "thou who art the cause that our brethren have perished thus miserably in yonder field "" The loaded weapon was struck away by another hand in the crowd, while the Prince, neither daunted by the ferocious demonstrations against his life, nor enraged by the virulent abuse to which he was subjected, command tranquilly,

¹ Bor, m 157 Hoofd, m 121 ³ Strada vi 252

² Pontus Payen MS

⁴ Bor, 11: 157 Hoofd, 11: 121 -Com;

⁵ Pontus Payen MS Box

earnestly, imperatively to address the crowd. William of Orange had that in his face and tongue "which men willingly call master—authority." With what other talisman could he, without violence and without soldiers, have quelled even for a moment ten thousand furious Calvinists, armed, enraged against his person, and thirsting for vengeance on Catholics? The postern of the Red Gate had already been broken through before Orange and his colleague, Hoogstraaten, had arrived. The most excited of the Calvinists were preparing to rush forth upon the enemy at Ostrawell. The Prince, after he had gained the ear of the multitude, urged that the battle was now over, that the reformers were entirely cut to pieces, the enemy retiring, and that a disorderly and ill-armed mob would be unable to retrieve the fortunes of the day. Many were persuaded to abandon the design. Five hundred of the most violent, however, insisted upon leaving the gates; and the governors, distinctly warning these zealots that their blood must be upon their own heads, reluctantly permitted that number to issue from the city. The rest of the mob, not appeased, but uncertain, and disposed to take vengeance upon the Catholics within the walls, for the disaster which had been occurring without, thronged tumultuously to the long, wide street, called the Mere, situate in the very heart

Meantime the ardour of those who had sallied from the gate grew sensibly cooler, when they found themselves in the open fields. De Beauvoir, whose men, after the victory, had scattered in pursuit of the fugitives, now heard the tumult in Suspecting an attack, he rallied his compact little army again for a fresh encounter. The last of the vanquished Tholousians who had been captured, more fortunate than their predecessors, had been spared for ransom. There were three hundred of them; rather a dangerous number of prisoners for a force of eight hundred, who were just going into another battle. De Beauvoir commanded his soldiers, therefore, to shoot them all.2 This order having been accomplished, the Catholics marched towards Antwerp, drums beating, colours flying. The five hundred Calvinists, not

¹ Bor, iii. 157, sqq. Pontus Payen MS. Letter of Sir T. Gresham.
² Pontus Payen MS.—"Leur commanda de tuer sur le champ tous leurs prisonniers."—"Qui fust aussitôt executé que commandé."

liking their appearance, and being in reality outnumbered, retreated within the gates as hashly as they had just issued from them De Beauvoir advanced close to the city moat, on the margin of which he planted the banners of the unfor tunate I holouse, and sounded a trumpet of defiance Find ing that the citizens had apparently no stomach for the fight, he removed his trophies, and took his departure 1

On the other hand, the tumult within the walls had again increased The Calvinists had been collecting in great num bers upon the Mere This was a large and splendid thorough-fare, rather an oblong market place than a street, filled with stately buildings, and communicating by various cross streets with the Exchange and with many other public edifices By an early hour in the afternoon twelve or fifteen thousand Calvinsts, all armed and fighting men, had assembled upon the place. They had barricaded the whole precinct with pavements and upturned waggons. They had already broken into the arsenal and obtained many field pieces, which were planted at the entrance of every street and by way They had stormed the city rul and liberated the prisoners, all of whom, grateful and ferocious, came to swell the numbers who defended the stronghold on the Mere A tremendous muschief was a foot Threats of pillaging the churches and the houses of the Catholics, of sacking the whole opulent city, were distinctly heard among this powerful mob, excited by religious enthusiasm, but containing within one great heterogeneous mass the elements of every crime which humanity can commit The alarm throughout the city was indescribable. The cries of women and children, as they remained in trembling expectation of what the next hour might bring forth, were, said one who heard them, "enough to soften the hardest hearts"

Nevertheless the diligence and courage of the Prince kept pace with the insurrection He had caused the eight companies of guards enrolled in September, to be mustered upon the squire in front of the city hall, for the protection of that building and of the magistracy He had summoned the

Pontus Payen MS

² Correspondance de Marg d'Autriche, 226, 227
³ Bor, ni 159a, who has incorporated into his work the "justifica tion" published contemporaneously by the magistricy of Antwerp

sounds of the city, the board of ancients, the deans of guilds, the ward meter, to consult with him at the council-room. At the peril of he life he had again gone before the angry med in the Mere, advancing against their cannon and their owners, and compelling them to appoint eight deputies to treat with him and the magistrate, at the townhall. This done, quickly but deliberately he had drawn up six articles, to which the e-deputies gave their assent, and in which the city government cordially united. These articles provided that the key, of the city should remain in the possession of the Prince and of Hoogstraaten, that the watch should be held by burghers and soldiers together, that the magistrates should permit the entrance of no garrison, and that the citizens should be entituded with the care of the charters, especially with that of the joyful entrance.

These arrangements, when laid before the assembly at the Mere by their deputies, were not received with favour. The Calvinists demanded the keys of the city. They did not choose to be locked up at the merey of any man. They had already threatened to blow the city hall into the air if the keys were not delivered to them. They claimed that burghers, without distinction of religion, instead of mercenary troops, should be allowed to guard the market-place in front

of the town-hall.

It was now nightfall, and no definite arrangement had been concluded. Nevertheless a temporary truce was made, by means of a concession as to the guard. It was agreed that the burghers, Calvinists and Lutherans, as well as Catholics, should be employed to protect the city. By subtlety, however, the Calvinists detailed for that service, were posted not in the town-house square, but on the ramparts and at the gates.⁵

A night of dreadful expectation was passed. The army of fifteen thousand mutineers remained encamped and barricaded on the Mere, with guns loaded and artillery pointed. Fierce cries of "Long live the beggars," "Down with the papists," and other significant watchwords, were heard all

night long, but no more serious outbreak occurred.

During the whole of the following day, the Calvinists

¹ Bor, iii. 157, sqq ² Letter of Sir T. Gresham. Bor, ubi sup.
³ Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, iii. 121, sqq.

1567]

remained in their encampment, the Catholics and the city guardsmen at their posts near the city hall The Prince was occupied in the council chamber from morning till night with the municipal authorities, the deputies of "the religion, and the guild officers, in framing a new treaty of peace Fowards evening fifteen articles were agreed upon, which were to be proposed forthwith to the insurgents, and in case of non acceptance to be enforced. The arrangement provided that there should be no garrison, that the September contracts permitting the reformed worship at certain places within the city should be maintained that men of different parties should refrain from mutual insults, that the two governors, the Prince and Hoogstraaten, should keep the keys, that the city should be guarded by both soldiers and citizens, without distinction of religious creed, that a band of four hundred cavalry and a small flotilla of vessels of war should be maintained for the defence of the place, and that the expenses to be incurred should be levied upon all classes, clerical and lay, Catholic and Reformed, without any exception 1

It had been intended that the governors, accompanied by the magistrates, should forthwith proceed to the Mere, for the purpose of laying these terms before the insurgents Night had, however, already arrived, and it was understood that the ill temper of the Calvinists had rather increased than diminished, so that it was doubtful whether the arrangement would be accepted It was, therefore, necessary to await the issue of mother day, rather than to provoke a night battle in

the streets 2

During the night the Prince laboured incessantly to provide against the dangers of the morrow The Calvinists had fiercely expressed their disinclination to any reasonable arrangement They had threatened, without further pause, to plunder the religious houses and the mansions of all the wealthy Catholics, and to drive every papist out of town 3 They had summoned the Lutherans to join with them in their revolt, and menaced them, in case of refusal, with the same fate which awaited the Catholics * The Prince, who was himself a Lutheran not entirely free from the universal prejudice against the Calvinists, whose sect he afterwards 1 Bor, 111 158 2 /bif . nt 158b. 3 Third

1567

parties were excited, and eager for the fray. The fires of religious hatred burned fiercely in every breast. Many malefactors and outlaws, who had found refuge in the course of recent events at Antwerp, were in the ranks of the Cal vinists, profaming a sacred cause, and inspiring a fanatical party with bloody resolutions. Papists, once and for ever, were to be hunted down, even as they had been for years pursuing Reformers

Let the men who had fed fat on the spoils of plundered Christians be dealt with in like fashion spons of plugueted Christians be deaft with in like lashion.

Let their homes be sacked, their bodies given to the dogs—
such were the cries uttered by thousands of armed men

On the other hand, the Lutherans, as angry and as rich

as the Catholics, saw in every Calvinist a murderer and a robber. They thirsted after their blood, for the spirit of robber They thirsted after their blood, for the spirit of religious frenzy, the characteristic of the century, can with difficulty be comprehended in our colder and more sceptical age. There was every probability that a bloody battle was to be fought that day in the streets of Antwerp—a general engagement, in the course of which, whoever might be the victors, the city was sure to be delivered over to fire, sack, and outrage. Such would have been the result, according to the concurrent testimony of eye witnesses, and contemporary historians of every country and creed, but for the courage and wisdom of one man. Williams of Orange knew what would be the consequence of a battle, pent up within the walls of Antwerp. He foresaw the hornible have ow which was to be expected, the desolation which would be brought to every hearth in the city. "Never were men so desperate and so willing to fight," sud Sir Thomas Gresham, who had been expecting every hour his summons to share in the con flict. If the Prince were unable that morning to a vert the impending calamity, no other power, under heaven, could impending calamity, no other power, under heaven, could save Antwerp from destruction

save Antwerp from destruction

The articles prepared on the 14th had been already approved by those who represented the Catholic and Lu theran interests

They were read early in the morning to the troops assembled on the square and at St Michael's, and received with hearty cheers

It was now necessary that the Calvinists should accept them, or that the quarrel

¹ Letter in Burgon, 17th March 2 Bor Letter of Sir T Gresham.

should be fought out at once. At ten o'clock, William of Orange, attended by his colleague Hoogstraaten, together with a committee of the municipal authorities, and followed by a hundred troopers, rode to the Mere. They wore red scarfs over their armour, as symbols by which all those who had united to put down the insurrection were distinguished. The fifteen thousand Calvinists, fierce and disorderly as ever, maintained a threatening aspect. Nevertheless, the Prince was allowed to ride into the midst of the square. The articles were then read aloud by his command, after which, with great composure, he made a few observations. He pointed out that the arrangement offered them was founded upon the September concessions, that the right of worship was conceded, that the foreign garrison was forbidden, and that nothing further could be justly demanded or honourably admitted. He told them that a struggle upon their part would be hopeless, for the Catholics and Lutherans, who were all agreed as to the justice of the treaty, outnumbered them by nearly two to one. He, therefore, most earnestly and affectionately adjured them to testify their acceptance to the peace offered by repeating the words with which he should conclude. Then, with a firm voice, the Prince exclaimed, "God save the King!" It was the last time that those words were ever heard from the lips of the man already proscribed by Philip. The crowd of Calvinists hesitated an instant, and then, unable to resist his tranquil influence, convinced by his reasonable language, they raised one tremendous shout of "Vive le Roi!"

The deed was done, the peace accepted, the dreadful battle averted, Antwerp saved. The deputies of the Calvinists now formally accepted and signed the articles. Kind words were exchanged among the various classes of fellow-citizens, who but an hour before had been thirsting for each other's blood, the artillery and other weapons of war were restored to the arsenals, Calvinists, Lutherans, and Catholics, all laid down their arms, and the city, by three o'clock, was entirely quiet. Fifty thousand armed men had been up, according to some estimates, yet, after three days of dreadful

¹ Bor. Letter of Sir T. Gresham.

expectation, not a single person had been injured, and the

tumult was now appeased1

The Prince had, in truth, used the mutual animosity of Protestant sects to a good purpose, averting bloodshed by the very weapons with which the battle was to have been Gresham was right, however, in his conjecture that the Regent and court would not "take the business well" Margaret of Parma was incapable of comprehending such a mind as that of Orange, or of appreciating its efforts was surrounded by unscrupulous and mercenary soldiers, who hailed the coming civil war as the most profitable of speculations "Factorum Mansfeld, the Counts Aremberg and Meghem, the Duke of Aerschot, the sanguinary Noir carmes, were already counting their share in the coming confiscations In the internecime conflict approaching, there would be gold for the gathering, even if no honourable laurels would wreath their swords "Meghem with his regiment is desolating the country," wrote William of Orange to the Landgrave of Hesse, "and reducing many people to poverty Aremberg is doing the same in Friesland They are only thinking how, under the pretext of religion, they may grind the poor Christians, and grow rich and powerful upon their estates and their blood? 2

The Segmor de Beauvor wrote to the Duchess, claiming all the estates of Tholouse, and of his brother St Aldegonde, as his reward for the Ostrawell victory, while Noir carmes was at this very moment to commence at Valen cennes that career of murder and spoliation which, con tinued at Mons a few years afterwards, was to load his name with infamy.

As a matter of course, therefore, Margaret of Parma denounced the terms by which Antwerp had been saved as a "novel and exorbitant capitulation," and had no intention of signifying her approbation either to prince or magistrate."

D

magistrate

¹ Bor, 11 159 Hoofd, 1v 121, 122 Strada, v1 252, 253 Archives et Correspondance, 11 48 52, 58, 59

Archives et Correspondance, m 39
 Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 546

^{*} Correspondance de Marg d'Autriche, 227

CHAPTER X.

THE PROLOGUE FINISHED.

Egmont and Aerschot before Valenciennes—Severity of Egmont—Capitulation of the city—Escape and capture of the ministers—Execution of La Grange and De Bray—Horrible cruelty at Valenciennes—Effects of the reduction of Valenciennes—The Duchess at Antwerp—Armed invasion of the provinces decided upon in Spain—Appointment of Alva—Indignation of Margaret—Mission of De Billy—Pretended visit of Philip—Attempts of the Duchess to gain over Orange—Mission of Berty—Interview between Orange and Egmont at Willebroek—Orange's letters to Philip, to Egmont, and to Horn—Orange departs from the Netherlands—Philip's letter to Egmont—Secret intelligence received by Orange—La Torre's mission to Brederode—Brederode's departure and death—Death of Berghen—Despair in the provinces—Great emigration—Cruelties practised upon those of the new religion—Edict of 24th May—Wrath of the King.

TALENCIENNES, whose fate depended so closely upon the issue of these various events, was now trembling to Noircarmes had been drawing the lines more and more closely about the city, and by a refinement of cruelty had compelled many Calvinists from Tournay to act as pioneers in the trenches against their own brethren in Valenciennes.1 After the defeat of Tholouse, and the consequent frustration of all Brederode's arrangements to relieve the siege, the Duchess had sent a fresh summons to Valenciennes, together with letters acquainting the citizens with the results of the Ostrawell battle. The intelligence was not believed. Egmont and Aerschot, however, to whom Margaret had entrusted this last mission to the beleaguered town, roundly rebuked the deputies who came to treat with them, for their insolence in daring to doubt the word of the Regent. The two seigniors had established themselves in the Chateau of Beusnage, at a Here they received league's distance from Valenciennes. commissioners from the city, half of whom were Catholics

¹ Pasquier de la Barre MS., f. 92.

appointed by the magistrates, half Calvinists deputed by the consistories. These envoys were informed that the Duchess would pardon the city for its past offences, provided the gates should now be opened the garrison received, and a complete suppression of all religion except that of Rome acquiesced in without a murmur. As nearly the whole population was of the Calvinist faith, these terms could hardly be thought fait ourible. It was however, added, that fourteen days should be allowed to the Reformers for the purpose of converting their property, and returning from the country!

The deputies, after conferring with their constituents in the city, returned on the following day with counter propositions, which were not more likely to find favour with the government. They offered to accept the garrison, provided the soldiers should live at their own expense, without any tax to the citizens for their board, lodging, or pay. They claimed that all property which had been seized should be restored, all persons accused of treason liberated. They demanded the unconditional revocation of the edict by which the city had been declared rebellious, together with a guirantee from the Knights of the Fleece and the state council that the terms of the proposed treaty should be strictly observed.

As soon as these terms had been read to the two seg most, the Duke of Aerschot burst into an immoderate fit of laughter. He protested that nothing could be more ludicrous than such propositions, worthy of a conqueror dictating a peace, thus offered by a city closely beleaguered, and entirely at the mercy of the enemy. The Duke's hilarity was not shared by Egmont, who, on the contrary, fell into a furious passion. He swore that the city should be burned about their ears, and thit every one of the inhabitants should be put to the sword for the insolent language which they had thus dared to address to a most clement sovereign. He ordered the trembling deputies instantly to return with this peremptory rejection of their terms, and with his command that the proposals of government should be accepted within 'three days delay."

The commissioners fell upon their knees at Egmont's feet,

¹ Pontus Payen MS Valenciennes VIS ² Pontus Payen MS

² Pontus Payen

and to good for mercy. They implored him at least to send this imperious message by some other band than theirs, and to permit them to absent themselves from the city. They should be torn lumb from limb, they said, by the enraged inhabitants, if they dated to present themselves with such instructions before them. Egmont, however, assured them that they should be sent into the city, bound hand and foot, if they did not instantly obey his orders. The deputies, therefore, with heavy hearts, were fain to return home with this bitter result to their negotiations. The terms were rejected, as a matter of course, but the gloomy forebodings of the commissioners, as to their own fate at the hands of their fellow-citizens, were not fulfilled.

Instant measures were now taken to cannonade the city. Egmont, at the hazard of his life, descended into the foss, to reconnoitre the works, and to form an opinion as to the most eligible quarter at which to direct the batteries.2 Having communicated the result of his investigations to Noirearmes. he returned to report all these proceedings to the Regent at Certainly the Count had now separated himself far enough from William of Orange, and was manifesting an energy in the cause of tyranny which was sufficiently un-Many people who had been deceived by his scrupulous. more generous demonstrations in former times, tried to persuade themselves that he was acting a part. Noircarmes, however and no man was more competent to decide the question,—distinctly expressed his entire confidence in Egmont's loyalty, Margaret had responded warmly to his culogies, had read with approbation secret letters from Egmont to Noircarmes, and had expressed the utmost respect and affection for "the Count." Egmont had also lost no time in writing to Philip, informing him that he had selected the most eligible spot for battering down the obstinate city of Valenciennes, regretting that he could not have had the eight or ten military companies, now at his disposal, at an earlier day, in which case he should have been able to suppress many tumults, but congratulating his sovereign that the preachers were all fugitive, the reformed religion suppressed, and the people disarmed. He assured the King that he

¹ Pontus Payen MS. Valenciennes MS. ² *Ibid*. ³ Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 502.

would neglect no effort to prevent any renewal of the tumults, and expressed the hope that his Majesty would be satisfied with his conduct, notwithstanding the calumnies of which the times were full.

Norcarmes meanwhile had unmasked his batteries, and opened his fire exactly according to Egmont's suggestions a The artillery played first upon what was called the "White Tower," which happened to bear this ancient, rhyming inscription —

"When every man receives his own, And justice reigns for strong and weak, Perfect shall be this tower of stone, And—all the dumb will learn to speak.

For some unknown reason, the rather insipid quatrain was tortured into a baleful prophecy. It was considered very ominous that the battery should be first opened against this Sibylline tower. The chimes, too, which had been playing, all through the siege, the music of Marot's sacred songs, hap pened that morning to be sounding forth from every belfry the twenty second psalm. "My God, my God, why hast thou forsylven me??"

It was Palm Sunday, 23rd of March The women and children were going mounfully about the streets, bearing green branches in their hinds, and praying upon their knees, in every part of the city Despair and superstition had taken possession of citizens who up to that period had justified La Noue's assertion, that none could endure a siege like Huguenois. As soon as the cannonading began, the spirit of the inhabitants seemed to depair. The ministers exhorted their flocks in vain as the tiles and chimneys began to topple into the streets, and the concussions of the artillery were responded to by the universal wailing of affinghted women.

Upon the very first day after the unmasking of the batteries,

¹ Correspondance de Phil ppe II , 1 524. ² I ontus Payen MS Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 , ubi sup ³ "Quand chacun seru satisfaict,

Et la justice regnera
Ce boulevard sera parfaict
Et—la muette pariera. — I alenciennes MS

⁴ Valenciennes VIS

⁴ Pontus Paven MS

the city sent to Noircarmes, offering almost an unconditional surrender. Not the slightest breach had been effected—not the least danger of an assault existed—yet the citizens, who had earned the respect of their antagonists by the courageous manner in which they had sallied and skirmished during the siege, now in despair at any hope of eventual succour, and completely demoralized by the course of recent events outside their walls, surrendered ignominiously, and at discretion. The only stipulation agreed to by Noircarmes was, that the city should not be sacked, and that the lives of the inhabitants should be spared.

This pledge was, however, only made to be broken. Noircarmes entered the city and closed the gates. All the richest citizens, who of course were deemed the most criminal, were instantly arrested. The soldiers, although not permitted formally to sack the city, were quartered upon the inhabitants, whom they robbed and murdered, according to the testimony of a Catholic citizen, almost at their pleasure.³

Michael Herlin, a very wealthy and distinguished burgher, was arrested upon the first day. The two ministers, Guido de Bray and Peregrine de la Grange, together with the son of Herlin, effected their escape by the water-gate. Having taken refuge in a tavern at Saint Arnaud, they were observed, as they sat at supper, by a peasant, who forthwith ran off to the mayor of the borough with the intelligence that some individuals, who looked like fugitives, had arrived at Saint Arnaud. One of them, said the informer, was richly dressed, and wore a gold-hilted sword with velvet scabbard. the description, the mayor recognized Herlin the younger, and suspected his companions. They were all arrested, and sent to Noircarmes. The two Herlins, father and son, were immediately beheaded.4 Guido de Bray and Peregrine de la Grange were loaded with chains, and thrown into a filthy dungeon, previously to their being hanged.5 Here they were visited by the Countess de Roeulx, who was curious to see how the Calvinists sustained themselves in their martyrdom.

Pontus Payen MS. Valenciennes MS. Bor, iii. 142.

² Bor, iii. 142. Hoofd, iv. 129 (bis).

³ Valenciennes MS.

⁴ Pontus Payen MS.

⁵ Brandt, Reformatie, i. 448, 449.

She asked them how they could sleep, eat, or drink, when covered with such heavy fetters "The cause, and my good conscience," answered De Bray, "make me eat, drink, and sleep better than those who are doing me wrong These shackles are more honourable to me than golden rings and chains They are more useful to me, and as I hear their clank, methinks I hear the music of sweet voices and the tinkling of luttes" "

This exultation never desetted these courageous enthus asts. They received their condemnation to death "as if it had been an invitation to a marrange feast." They encouraged the friends who crowded their path to the scaffold with exhortations to remain true in the Reformed faith. La Grange, standing upon the ladder, proclaimed with a loud voice, that he was slain for having preached the pure word of God to a Christian people in a Christian land. De Bray, under the same gibbet, testified stoutly that he too, had committed that offence alone. He warned his friends to obey the magistrates, and all others in authority, except in matters of conscience, to abstain from sedition, but to obey the will of God. The executioner threw him from the ladder while he was yet speaking. So ended the lives of two eloquent, letrined, and highly gifted divines?

Many hundreds of vectoms were sacrificed in the unfortunate city "There were a great many other citizens strangled or beheaded," says an anstocratic Catholic historian of the time, "but they were mostly personages of httle quality, whose names are quite unknown to me "" The franchises of the city were all revoked. There was a prodigious amount of property confiscated to the benefit of Norcames and the rest of the "Seven Sleepers" Many Calvinists were burned, others were hanged "For two whole years," says another Catholic, who was a citizen of Valenciennes at the time, "there was sarredy a neek in which several datus were not excelled, and

¹ Brandt, Reformatie, 1 448, 449 Hist des Mart, f 661, 662, appled Brandt

² "Fn schickten sich soo blij moedelijk tot sterven als of ze ter bruiloft gingen "—Brandt, ubi sup

Brandt Hist des Martyrs, ubs sup

Pontus Payen MS — Beaucoup d'autres bourgeois pareil traictement, qui estoient personnages

incognus '

often a great number were despatched at a time. All this gave so much alarm to the good and innocent, that many quitted the city as fast as they could." If the good and innocent happened to be rich, they might be sure that Noircarmes would deem that a crime for which no goodness and innocence could atone.

Upon the fate of Valenciennes had depended, as if by common agreement, the whole destiny of the anti-Catholic party. "People had learned at last," says another Walloon, "that the King had long arms, and that he had not been enlisting soldiers to string beads. So they drew in their horns and their evil tempers, meaning to put them forth again, should the government not succeed at the siege of Valenciennes." The government had succeeded, however, and the consternation was extreme, the general submission immediate and even abject. "The capture of Valenciennes," wrote Noircarmes to Granvelle, "has worked a miracle. The other cities all come forth to meet me, putting the rope around their own necks."3 No opposition was offered anywhere. Tournay had been crushed; Valenciennes, Bois le Due, and all other important places, accepted their garrisons without a murmur. Even Antwerp had made its last struggle, and as soon as the back of Orange was turned, knelt down in the dust to receive its bridle. The Prince had been able, by his courage and wisdom, to avert a sanguinary conflict within its walls, but his personal presence alone could guarantee anything like religious liberty for the inhabitants, now that the rest of the country was subdued. On the 26th April, sixteen companies of infantry, under Count Mansfeld, entered the gates.4 On the 28th the Duchess made a visit to the city, where she was received with respect, but where her eyes were shocked by that which she termed the "abominable, sad, and hideous spectacle of the desolated churches."5

To the eyes of all who loved their fatherland and their race, the sight of a desolate country, with its ancient charters superseded by brute force, its industrious population swarm-

¹ Valenciennes MS. ² Renom de France MS., i. 35, 37.

Gachard, Preface to Guillaume le Tacit., ii. clxi., note 2. Gachard, Preface, etc., lxxxix.

⁵ Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 383-386.

ing from the land in droves, as if the pestilence were raging, with gibbets and scaffolds erected in every village, and with a sickening and universal apprehension of still darker disasters to follow, was a speciacle still more sad, hideous, and abominable

For it was now decided that the Duke of Alva, at the head of a Spanish army, should forthwith take his departure for the Netherlands A land already subjugated was to be crushed, and every vestige of its ancient liberties destroyed. The conquered provinces once the abode of municipal liberty. of science, art, and literature, and blessed with an unex ampled mercantile and manufacturing prosperity, were to be placed in absolute subjection to the cabinet council at A dull and malignant bigot, assisted by a few Spanish grandees, and residing at the other extremity of Europe, was thenceforth to exercise despotic authority over countries which for centuries had enjoyed a local administration, and a system nearly approaching to complete self government Such was the policy devised by Granvelle and Spinosa,1 which the Duke of Alva, upon the 15th April, had left Madrid to enforce

It was very natural that Margaret of Parma should be indiginant at being thus superseded. She considered her self as having acquired much credit by the manner in which the latter insurrectionary movements had been suppressed, so soon as Philip, after his endless tergiversations, had supplied her with arms and money. Therefore she wrote in a tone of great asperty to her brother, expressing her discontent. She had always been trainmelled in her action, she said, by his restrictions upon her authority. She complained that he had no regard for her reputation or her peace of mind. Notwithstanding all impediments and dangers, she had at last settled the country, and now another person was to reap the honour?

tions to his Majesty upor Duke of Alva to the Ne Spanish army

Confessions of Del Rio

2 Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 523

Pontus Payen MS Correspondance de Philippe II

Margaret gained nothing, however, by her letters and her envoy, tave a round rebuke from Philip, who was not accustomed to brook the language of remonstrance, even from his sister. His purpose was fixed. Absolute submission was now to be rendered by all. "He was highly astonished and dissatisfied," he said, "that she should dare to write to him with so much passion, and in so resolute a manner. If she received no other recompense, save the glory of having restored the service of God, she ought to express her gratitude to the King for having given her the opportunity of so doing."

The affectation of element intentions was still maintained, together with the empty pretence of the royal visit. Alva and his army were coming merely to prepare the way for the King, who still represented himself as "debonair and gentle, slow to anger, and averse from bloodshed." Superficial people believed that the King was really coming, and hoped wonders from his advent. The Duchess knew better. The Pope never believed in it, Granvelle never believed in it, the Prince of Orange never believed in it, Councillor d'Assonleville never believed in it. "His Majesty," says the Walloon historian, who wrote from Assonleville's papers, "had many imperative reasons for not coming. He was fond of quiet, he was a great negotiator, distinguished for phlegm and modesty, disinclined to long journeys, particularly to sea voyages, which were very painful to him. Moreover, he was then building his Escorial with so much taste and affection that it was impossible for him to leave home."2 These excellent reasons sufficed to detain the monarch, in whose place a general was appointed, who, it must be confessed, was neither phlegmatic nor modest, and whose energies were quite equal to the work required. There had in truth never been anything in the King's project of visiting the Netherlands but pretence.3

On the other hand, the work of Orange for the time was finished. He had saved Antwerp, he had done his best to maintain the liberties of the country, the rights of conscience, and the royal authority, so far as they were compatible with

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 540.

² Renoni de France, MS., i. 29.

^{3 &}quot;Nihil profectionis inerat, præter speciem," says Strada, vi. 280.

1567]

each other The alternative had now been distinctly forced upon every man, either to promise blind obedience, or to accept the position of a rebel William of Orange had thus become a rebel He had been requested to sign the new oath, greedily taken by the Mansfelds, the Berlaymonts, the Aerschots, and the Egmonts, to obey every order which he might receive, against every person and in every place, with out restriction or limitation, and he had distinctly and repeatedly declined the demand He had again and again insisted upon resigning all his offices. The Duchess, more and more anxious to gain over such an influential personage to the cause of tyranny, had been most importunate in her requisitions "A man with so noble a heart," she wrote to the Prince, "and with a descent from such illustrious and loyal ancestors, can surely not forget his duties to his Majesty and the country "2

William of Orange knew his duty to both better than the Duchess could understand
He answered this fresh sum mons by reminding her that he had uniformly refused the new and extraordinary pledge required of him. He had been true to his old oaths, and therefore no fresh pledge was

now determined, by the advice of the state council, to send Secretary Berty, provided with an ample letter of instructions, upon a special mission to the Prince at Antwerp. That respectable functionary performed his task with credit, going through the usual formalities, and adducing the threadbare arguments in favour of the unlimited oath, with much adroitness and decorum. He mildly pointed out the impropriety of laying down such responsible posts as those which the Prince now occupied at such a juncture. He alluded to the distress which the step must occasion to the debonair sovereign.

William of Orange became somewhat impatient under the official lecture of this secretary to the privy council, a mere man of sealing-wax and protocols. The slender stock of platitudes with which he had come provided was soon ex-His arguments shrivelled at once in the scorn with which the Prince received them. The great statesman, who, it was hoped, would be entrapped to ruin, dishonour, and death by such very feeble artifices, asked indignantly whether it were really expected that he should acknowledge himself perjured to his old obligations by now signing new ones; that he should disgrace himself by an unlimited pledge which might require him to break his oaths to the provincial statutes and to the Emperor; that he should consent to administer the religious edicts which he abhorred; that he should act as executioner of Christians on account of their religious opinions, an office against which his soul revolted; that he should bind himself by an unlimited promise which might require him to put his own wife to death, because she was a Lutheran? Moreover, was it to be supposed that he would obey without restriction any orders issued to him in his Majesty's name, when the King's representative might be a person whose supremacy it ill became one of his race to acknowledge? Was William of Orange to receive absolute commands from the Duke of Alva? Having mentioned that name with indignation, the Prince became silent.1

. It was very obvious that no impression was to be made upon the man by formalists. Poor Berty returned to his green board in the council-room with his process verbal of the

¹ Strada, vi. 265-268. Hoofd, iv. 130. Corresp. de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 354, 355-369, 370, 391-417.

conference

Before be took his leave, however, he prevailed ne Duke of Aerschot,

Willebroek, a village

midway between Antwerp and Brussels, in the first week of April The Duke of Aerschot was prevented from attending, but Mansfeld and Egmont—accompanied by the faithful Berty, to make another procès verhal—duly made their appearance? The Prince had never felt much sympathy with Mansfeld, but a tender and honest friendship had always existed between himself and Egmont, notwithstanding the difference of their characters, the incessant artifices employed by the Spanish court to separate them, and the impassable chasm which now existed between their respective positions towards the government.

The same commonplaces of argument and rhetoric were now discussed between Orange and the other three person ages, the Prince distinctly stating, in conclusion, that he considered himself as discharged from all his offices, and that he was about to leave the Netherlands for Germany The interview, had it been confined to such formal conver sation, would have but little historic interest Egmont's choice had been made Several months before he had sig nified his determination to hold those for enemies who should cease to conduct themselves as faithful vassals, de clared himself to be without fear that the country was to be placed in the hands of Spaniards, and disavowed all intention, in any case whatever, of taking arms against the King 3 His subsequent course, as we have seen, had been entirely in conformity with these solemn declarations less, the Prince, to whom they had been made, thought it still possible to withdraw his friend from the precipice upon which he stood, and to save him from his impending fate, His love for Egmont had, in his own noble and pathetic language, "struck its roots too deeply into his heart" to permit him, in this their parting interview, to neglect a last

¹ Strada, 268

² Correspondance de Gullaume le Tacit, ii 416 418 The processerbal made by Berty upon this occasion has been lost. Gachard, note, p. 417 Guillaume le Tacit, ii Compare Strada, vi Gachard, Preface to vol 11. Guillaume le T

[&]quot; Gachard, Preface to vol 11. Guillaume le

effort, even if this solemn warning were destined to be disregarded.

By any reasonable construction of history, Philip was an unscrupulous usurper, who was attempting to convert himself from a Duke of Brabant and a Count of Holland into an absolute king. It was William who was maintaining, Philip who was destroying; and the monarch who was thus blasting the happiness of the provinces, and about to decimate their population, was by the same process to undermine his own power for ever, and to divest himself of his richest inheritance. Could a vision, like that imagined by the immortal dramatist for another tyrant and murderer, have revealed the future to Philip, he, too, might have beheld his victim, not crowned himself, but pointing to a line of kings, even to some who two-fold balls and treble sceptres carried, and smiling on them for his. But such considerations as these had no effect upon the Prince of Orange. He knew himself already proscribed, and he knew that the secret condemnation had extended to Egmont also. He was anxious that his friend should prefer the privations of exile, with the chance of becoming the champion of a struggling country, to the wretched fate towards which his blind confidence was leading him. Even then it seemed possible that the brave soldier, who had been recently defiling his sword in the cause of tyranny, might become mindful of his brighter and earlier fame. Had Egmont been as true to his native land as, until "the long divorce of steel fell on him," he was faithful to Philip, he might yet have earned brighter laurels than those gained at St. Quentin and Gravelingen. Was he doomed to fall, he might find a glorious death upon freedom's battle-field, in place of that darker departure then so near him, which the prophetic language of Orange depicted, but which he was too sanguine to fear. He spoke with confidence of the royal clemency. "Alas, Egmont," answered the Prince, "the King's clemency, of which you boast, will destroy you. Would that I might be deceived, but I foresee too clearly that you are to be the bridge which the Spaniards will destroy so soon as they have passed over it to invade our country." With these last, solemn words he concluded his appeal to awaken the Count

¹ Strada, vi. 286. Compare Bentivoglio, iii. 55.

from his fatal security. Then, as if persuaded that he was looking upon his friend for the last time, William of Orange threw his arms around Egmont, and held him for a moment in a close embrace. Tears fell from the eves of both at this parting moment-and then the brief scene of simple and lofty pathos terminated—Egmont and Orange separated from each other, never to meet again on earth 1

A few days afterwards, Orange addressed a letter to Philip, once more resigning all his offices, and announcing his intention of departing from the Netherlands for Germany He added, that he should be always ready to place himself and his property at the King's orders in everything which he believed conducive to the true service of his Majesty² The Prince had already received a remarkable warning from old Landgrave Philip of Hesse, who had not forgotten the in sidious manner in which his own memorable captivity had been brought about by the arts of Granvelle and of Alva "Let them not smear your mouths with honey," said the Landgrave "If the three seigniors, of whom the Duchess Margaret has had so much to say, are invited to court by Alva, under pretext of friendly consultation, let them be wary, and think twice ere they accept I know the Duke of Alva and the Spaniards, and how they dealt with

The Prince, before he departed, took a final leave of Horn and Egmont, by letters, which, as if aware of the monu mental character they were to assume for posterity, he drew up in Latin ' He desired, now that he was turning his back

goedt, been of

an invention. Hoofd observes that the whole conversation was reported by a person whom the Calvinists had concealed in the chimney of the apartment where the interview took place. It would be difficult to believe in such epigrams even had the historian himself been in the channey He, however, only gives the anecdote as a rumour, which he does not himself believe "Twelk ik nochtans niet zoo zeeker houde," etc -H ofd, Ne lerl Hest , iv 131

\(^2\) Archives et Correspondance, m 64, 65

3 Ibid , 111 42

¹ Strada, vi. 286 Compare Bentivoglio, in 55 Hoofd alludes to a rumour, according to which Egmont said to Orange at purting, "Adieu, landless Prince." and was answered by his friend with "Adieu, head less Co

upon the country, that those two nobles who had refused to imitate, and had advised against his course, should remember that he was acting deliberately, conscientiously, and in pursuance of a long-settled plan.

suance of a long-settled plan.

To Count Horn he declared himself unable to connive longer at the sins daily committed against the country and his own conscience. He assured him that the government had been accustoming the country to panniers, in order that it might now accept patiently the saddle and bridle. For himself, he said, his back was not strong enough for the weight already imposed upon it, and he preferred to endure any calamity which might happen to him in exile, rather than be compelled by those whom they had all condemned to acquiesce in the object so long and steadily pursued.

He reminded Egmont, who had been urging him by letter to remain, that his resolution had been deliberately taken, and long since communicated to his friends. He could not, in conscience, take the oath required, nor would he, now that all eyes were turned upon him, remain in the land, the only recusant. He preferred to encounter all that could happen, rather than attempt to please others by the sacrifice of liberty, of his fatherland, of his own conscience. "I hope, therefore," said he to Egmont in conclusion, "that you, after weighing my reasons, will not disapprove my departure. The rest I leave to God, who will dispose of all as may most conduce to the glory of his name. For yourself, I pray you to believe that you have no more sincere friend than I am. My love for you has struck such deep root into my heart, that it can be lessened by no distance of time or place, and I pray you in return to maintain the same feelings towards me which you have always cherished."2

The Prince had left Antwerp upon the 11th April, and had written these letters from Breda, upon the 13th of the same month. Upon the 22nd he took his departure for Dillenburg, the ancestral seat of his family in Germany, by the way of Grave and Cleves.³

It was not to be supposed that this parting message would influence Egmont's decision with regard to his own move-

¹ Archives et Correspondance, iii. 69-73.

² Ibid. ³ Ibid., iii. 73, 74.

ments, when his determination had not been shaken at his memorable interview with the Prince The Count's fate was sealed Had he not been praised by Noircarmes, had he not earned the hypocritical commendations of Duchess Mar garet, nay more, had he not just received a most affectionate letter of thanks and approbation from the King of Spain himself? This letter, one of the most striking monuments of Philip's cold blooded perfidy, was dated the 26th of March "I am pleased, my cousin," wrote the monarch to Egmont, "that you have taken the new oath, not that I considered it at all necessary so far as regards yourself, but for the example which you have thus given to others, and which I hope they will all follow I have received not less pleasure in hearing of the excellent manner in which you are doing your duty, the assistance you are rendering, and the offers which you are making to my sister, for which I thank you, and request you to continue in the same course "1

The words were written by the royal hand which had already signed the death-warrant of the man to whom they were addressed. Alva, who came provided with full powers to carry out the great scheme resolved upon, unrestrained hy provincial laws or by the statutes of the Golden Fleece, had left Middt to embark at Carthagena, at the very moment when Egmont was reading the royal letter. "The Spanish honey," to use once more old Landgrave Philip's homely metaphor, had done its work, and the unfortunate victim was

already entrapped

Count Horn remained in gloomy silence in his lair at Weert, awaiting the hunters of men, already on their way It seemed inconceivable that he, too, who knew himself sus pected and disliked, should have thus blinded himself to his position. It will be seen, however, that the same periddy was to be employed to ensnare him which proved so success full with Emmont.

As for the Prince himself, he did not move too soon. Not long after his arrival in Germany, Vandenesse, the King's private secretary, but Orange's secret agent, wrote him word that he had read letters from the King to Alva, in which the Duke was instructed to "arrest the Prince as soon as he

¹ Foppens, Supplement, 11 544 ² Correspondance de I hilippe II , 12 528, 15th April, 1567

could lay hands upon him, and not to let his trial last more than twenty-four hours."1

Brederode had remained at Viane, and afterwards at Amsterdam, since the ill-starred expedition of Tholouse, which he had organized, but at which he had not assisted. He had given much annoyance to the magistracy of Amsterdam, and to all respectable persons, Calvinist or Catholic. He made much mischief, but excited no hopes in the minds of reformers. He was ever surrounded by a host of pot companions, swaggering nobles disguised as sailors, bankrupt tradesmen, fugitives and outlaws of every description, excellent people to drink the beggars' health and to bawl the beggars' songs, but quite unfit for any serious enterprise.2 People of substance were wary of him, for they had no confidence in his capacity, and were afraid of his frequent demands for contributions to the patriotic cause. He spent his time in the pleasure gardens, shooting at the mark with arquebus or crossbow, drinking with his comrades, and shrieking "Vivent les gueux." 3

The Regent, determined to dislodge him, had sent Secretary La Torre to him in March, with instructions that if Brederode refused to leave Amsterdam, the magistracy were to call for assistance upon Count Meghem, who had a regiment at Utrecht. This clause made it impossible for La Torre to exhibit his instructions to Brederode. Upon his refusal, that personage, although he knew the secretary as

¹ This appears in a document, never yet published, in the Royal Archives at Dresden. It is a report drawn up by Captain von Berlepsch, of an interview held with the Prince of Orange, to whom he had been deputed by the Elector Augustus of Saxony. It is to be remarked, moreover, that Augustus at this period (November, 1567), declined receiving the Prince at Dresden, while professing the greatest interest in his welfare!—Unpublished letter from Elector Augustus to Prince W. of Orange, 10th Nov., 1567, in Dresden Archives. "So hatte auch des Konnings Vortrauter Kemmerling Signor Vandenes auch in grosser geheim warnen laszen dasz ehr hette aufs Konnings tische briefe gesehen ahn Hertzogen von Alba, darin bewohlen, s. fg. nachzutrachten und wan man ihn bekeme, seinen procesz nicht uber 24 Stunden zuvorlengern."—Bericht von Hauptm. v. Berlepsch.

² Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 434, 454. Bor, iii. 161.

Hoofd, v. 127.

3 *Ibid*.

⁴ Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 439, 440 Bor, ii. 161, 162.

well as he knew his own father, coolly informed him that he knew nothing about him, that he did not consider him as respectable a person as he pretended to be, that he did not believe a word of his having any commission from the Duchess, and that he should therefore take no notice what ever of his demands La Torre answered meekly, that he was not so presumptuous, nor so destitute of sense, as to put himself into comparison with agentleman of Count Brederode's quality but that as he had served as secretary to the privy council for twenty three years, he had thought that he might be believed upon his word Hereupon La Torre drew up ? formal protest, and Brederode drew up another La Torre made a proces verbal of their interview, while Brederode stormed like a madman, and abused the Duchess for a capricious and unreasonable tyrant He ended by imprison ing La Torre for a day or two, and seizing his papers a singular coincidence these events took place on the 13th, 14th, and 15th of March, the very days of the great Antwerp tumult The manner in which the Prince of Orange had been dealing with forty or fifty thousand armed men, anxious to cut each others' throats, while Brederode was thus occu pied in browberting a pragmatical but decent old secretary, illustrated the difference in calibre of the two men

This was the Count's last exploit He remained at Am sterdam some weeks longer, but the events which succeeded changed the Hector into a faithful vassal Before the 12th of April, he wrote to Egmont begging his intercession with Margaret of Parma, and offering, "carte blanche' as to terms if he might only be allowed to make his peace with government 2 It was, however, somewhat late in the day for the "great oeggar' to make his submission No terms were accorded him, but he was allowed by the Duchess to enjoy his revenues provisionally, subject to the King's pleasure Upon the 25th April, he entertained a select circle of friends at his hotel in Amsterdam and then embarked at midnight for Embden A numerous procession of his adherents escorted him to the ship bearing lighted torches, and singing

¹ Correspondance de Guilliame le Tacit , ii 444 454. ² — Brederode ha suplicado de ser Monsieur d Egmont carta blanca.² —MS

Bill de Bourg

bacchanalian songs. He died within a year afterwards, of disappointment and hard drinking, at Castle Hardenberg, in Germany, after all his fretting and fury, and notwithstanding his vehement protestations to die a poor soldier at the feet of Louis Nassau.¹

That "good chevalier and good Christian," as his brother affectionately called him, was in Germany, girding himself for the manly work which Providence had destined him to The life of Brederode, who had epgaged in the early struggle, perhaps from the frivolous expectation of hearing himself called Count of Holland, as his ancestors had been, had contributed nothing to the cause of freedom. nor did his death occasion regret. His disorderly band of followers dispersed in every direction upon the departure of their chief. A vessel in which Batenburg, Galaina, and other nobles, with their men-at-arms, were escaping towards a German port, was carried into Harlingen, while those gentlemen, overpowered by sleep and wassail, were unaware of their danger, and delivered over to Count Meghem, by the treachery of their pilot. The soldiers were immediately hanged. The noblemen were reserved to grace the first great scaffold which Alva was to erect upon the horse-market in Brussels.2

The confederacy was entirely broken to pieces. Of the chieftains to whom the people had been accustomed to look for support and encouragement, some had rallied to the government, some were in exile, some were in prison. Montigny, closely watched in Spain, was virtually a captive, pining for the young bride to whom he had been wedded amid such brilliant festivities but a few months before his departure, and for the child which was never to look upon its father's face. His colleague, Marquis Berghen, more fortunate, was already dead. The excellent Viglius seized the opportunity to put in a good word for Noircarmes, who had been grinding Tournay in the dust and butchering the inhabitants of Valenciennes. "We have heard of Berghen's

¹ Bor, iii. 168. Hoofd, iv. 135. Vit. Vigilii, 51.—Compare Bor, Hoofd, uhi sup.

² Pontus Payen MS. ³ The child was baptized at Tournay on the 1st December, 1566.— Pasquier de la Barre MS., f. 73.

death," wrote the President to his faithful Joachim "The Lord of Noircarmes, who has been his substitute in the governorship of Hainault, has given a specimen of what he can do Although I have no privite intimacy with that nobleman, I cannot help embracing him with all my bene volence. Therefore, oh my Hopper, pray do your best to have him appointed governor"

With the departure of Orange, a total eclipse seemed to come over the Netherlands The country was absolutely helpless, the popular heart cold with apprehension All persons at all implicated in the late troubles, or suspected of heresy, fled from their homes Fugitive soldiers were hunted into rivers, cut to pieces in the fields, hanged, burned, or drowned, like dogs, without quarter, and without remorse The most industrious and valuable part of the population left the land in droves The tide swept outwards with such rapidity that the Netherlands seemed fast becoming the desolate waste which they had been before the Christian era Throughout the country, those Reformers who were unable to effect their escape betook themselves to their old lurking places The new religion was banished from all the cities. every conventicle was broken up by armed men, the preachers and leading members were hanged, their disciples beaten with rods, reduced to beggary, or imprisoned, even if they sometimes escaped the scaffold An incredible number. however, were executed for religious causes Hardly a village so small, says the Antwerp chronicler, but that it could furnish one, two, or three hundred victims to the exe cutioner. The new churches were levelled to the ground and out of their timbers gallows were constructed 3 It was thought an ingenious pleasantry to hang the Reformers upon the beams under which they had hoped to worship (rod The property of the fugitives was confiscated. The began in name became beggars in reality Many who felt ob! to remain, and who loved their possessions better than creed, were suddenly converted into the most zealor " Catholics Persons who had for years not gore to never omitted now their daily and nightly visits an

Foppens Supplement, u. 552 2 Metern I-

churches.\(^1\) Persons who had never spoken to an ecclesiastic but with contumely, now could not eat their dinners without one at their table.\(^2\) Many who were suspected of having participated in Calvinistic rites, were foremost and loudest in putting down and denouncing all forms and shows of the reformation. The country was as completely "pacified," to use the conqueror's expression, as Gaul had been by Cæsar.

The Regent issued a fresh edict upon the e4th May, to refresh the memories of those who might have forgotten previous statutes, which were, however, not calculated to make men oblivious. By this new proclamation, all ministers and teachers were sentenced to the gallows. All persons who had suffered their houses to be used for religious purposes were sentenced to the gallows. All parents or masters whose children or servants had attended such meetings were sentenced to the gallows, while the children and servants were only to be beaten with rods. All people who sang hymns at the burial of their relations were sentenced to the gallows. Parents who allowed their newly-born children to be baptized by other hands than those of the Catholic priest were sentenced to the gallows. The same punishment was denounced against the persons who should christen the child or act as its sponsors. Schoolmasters who should teach any error or false doctrine were likewise to be punished with death. Those who infringed the statutes against the buying and selling of religious books and songs were to receive the same doom, after the first offence. All sneers or insults against priests and ecclesiastics were also made capital crimes. Vagabonds, fugitives, apostates, runaway monks, were ordered forthwith to depart from every city on pain of death. In all cases confiscation of the whole property of the criminal was added to the hanging.3

This edict, says a contemporary historian, increased the fear of those professing the new religion to such an extent that they left the country "in great heaps." It became necessary, therefore, to issue a subsequent proclamation forbidding all persons, whether foreigners or natives, to leave the land or to send away their property, and prohibiting

¹ Bor, iii. 174.

² Ibid.

³ The edict is published in Bor, iii. 170, 171.

⁴ Ibid., 171.

all shipmasters, waggoners, and other agents of travel, from assisting in the flight of such fugitives, all upon pain of death 1

Yet will it be credited that the edict of 24th May, the provisions of which have just been sketched, actually excited the wrath of Philip on account of their elemency? He wrote to the Duchess, expressing the pain and dissatisfaction which he felt, that an edict so indecent, so illegal, so contrary to the Christian religion, should have been published Nothing, he said, could offend or distress him more deeply, than any outrage whatever, even the slightest one offered to God and to His Roman Catholic Church He therefore commanded his sister instantly to revoke the edict 2 One commanded his sister instantly to revoke the edict. One might almost imagine from reading the Kings letter that Philip was at last appalled at the horrors committed in his name. Alas, he was only indignant that heretics had been suffered to hang who ought to have been burned, and that a few narrow and almost impossible loopholes had been left, through which those who had offended might effect their escape

And thus, while the country is paralyzed with present and expect

army upon of Or

disaster and of bloodshed, battles, sieges, executions, deeds of unfaltering but valiant tyranny, of superhuman and successful resistance, of heroic self sacrifice, fanatical courage and insane cruelly, both in the cause of the Wrong and the Right, will then, soul in the revealed in a will succession—a spectacle of human energy, human suffering, and human strength to suffer, such as has not often been displayed upon the stage of the world's events

¹ Bor, m 175

² Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 550 552

PART III.

ALVA.

1567-1573.

maintained. He assured the Regent that he should be governed by her advice, and as she had made all needful preparations to receive him in Zeland, that it would be in Zeland he should arrive.1

The same two men among Philip's advisers were prominent as at an earlier day-the Prince of Eboli and the Duke of They still represented entirely opposite ideas, and in character, temper, and history, each was the reverse of the other. The policy of the Prince was pacific and temporizing; that of the Duke uncompromising and ferocious. Gomez was disposed to prevent, if possible, the armed mission of Alva, and he now openly counselled the King to fulfil his long-deferred promise, and to make his appearance in person before his rebellious subjects. The jealousy and hatred which existed between the Prince and the Dukebetween the man of peace and the man of wrath—were constantly exploding, even in the presence of the King. wrangling in the council was incessant. Determined, if possible, to prevent the elevation of his rival, the favourite was even for a moment disposed to ask for the command of the army himself. There was something ludicrous in the notion, that a man whose life had been pacific, and who trembled at the noise of arms, should seek to supersede the terrible Alva, of whom his eulogists asserted, with Castilian exaggeration, that the very name of fear inspired him with horror. But there was a limit beyond which the influence of Anna de Mendoza and her husband did not extend. was not to be driven to the Netherlands against his will, nor to be prevented from assigning the command of the army to the most appropriate man in Europe for his purpose.2

It was determined at last that the Netherland heresy should be conquered by force of arms. The invasion resembled both a crusade against the infidel, and a treasurehunting foray into the auriferous Indies, achievements by which Spanish chivalry had so often illustrated itself. The banner of the cross was to be replanted upon the conquered battlements of three hundred infidel cities, and a torrent of wealth, richer than ever flowed from Mexican or Peruvian

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 550.
² Cabrera, l. 7, c. vii. p. 414. Strada, i. 282, 283. Hist. du Duc d'Albe, ii. 155, 242.

mines, was to flow into the royal treasury from the perennial fountains of confiscation. Who so fit to be the Taincred and the Pizarro of this bicoloured expedition as the Duke of Alva, the min who had been devoted from his earliest child hood, and from his father's grave, to hostlith; against un believers, and who had prophesied that treasure would flow in a stream, a yard deep, from the Netherlands so soon as the heretics began to meet with their deserts? An army of chosen-troops was forthwith collected, by taking the four legions, or terzos, of Naples, Sielly, Sardinia, and Lombardy, and filling their places in Italy by fresh levies. About ten thousand picked and veteran soldiers were thus obtained, of which the Duke of Alva was appointed general in-chief.¹

Ferdinando Alvarez de Toledo Duke of Alva, was now in his sixtieth year. He was the most successful and ex perienced general of Spain, or of Europe No man had studied more deeply, or practised more constantly the imilitary science. In the most important of all arts at that epoch he was the most consummate artist. In the only honourable profession of the age, he was the most thorough and the most pedantic professor. Since the days of De metrius Poliorcetes, no man had besieged so many cities Since the days of Fabius Cunctator, no general had avoided so many battles, and no soldier, courageous as he was, ever attained to a more sublime indifference to calumny or de preciation Having proved in his boyhood, at Fontarabia, and in his maturity at Muhlberg, that he could exhibit herosm and herdlong courage, when necessary, he could afford to look with contempt upon the witless gibes which his enemies had occasionally perpetrated at his expense Conscious of holding his armies in his hand, by the power of an unrivilled discipline, and the magic of a name illustrated by a hundred triumphs, he could bear with patience and benevolence the murmurs of his soldiers when their battles were denied them

He was born in *508, of a family which boasted imperial descent — A Palcologus, brother of a Byzantine emperor, had conquered the city of Toledo, and transmitted its appel

¹ Brandt, Hist der Ref., 1 496 De Thou v., L 41 pp. 289, 290. Bern de Mendoza. Guerras de los Payses Baxos etc., 20 21, 29.

lation as a family name.1 The father of Ferdinando, Don Garcia, had been slain on the isle of Gerbes, in battle with the Moors, when his son was but four years of age.2 The child was brought up by his grandfather, Don Frederic, and trained from his tenderest infancy to arms. Hatred to the infidel, and a determination to avenge his father's blood. crying to him from a foreign grave, were the earliest of his instincts. As a youth he was distinguished for his prowess. His maiden sword was fleshed at Fontarabia, where, although but sixteen years of age, he was considered, by his constancy in hardship, by his brilliant and desperate courage, and by the example of military discipline which he afforded to the troops, to have contributed in no small degree to the success of the Spanish arms.

In 1530, he accompanied the Emperor in his campaign against the Turk. Charles, instinctively recognizing the merit of the youth who was destined to be the life-long companion of his toils and glories, distinguished him with his favour at the opening of his career. Young, brave, and enthusiastic, Ferdinand de Toledo at this period was as interesting a hero as ever illustrated the pages of Castilian romance. His mad ride from Hungary to Spain and back again, accomplished in seventeen days, for the sake of a brief visit to his newly-married wife, is not the least attractive episode in the history of an existence which was destined to be so dark and sanguinary. In 1535, he accompanied the Emperor on his memorable expedition to Tunis. 1546 and 1547 he was generalissimo in the war against the Smalcaldian league. His most brilliant feat of armsperhaps the most brilliant exploit of the Emperor's reignwas the passage of the Elbe and the battle of Mühlberg, accomplished in spite of Maximilian's bitter and violent reproaches, and the tremendous possibilities of a defeat.3 That battle had finished the war. The gigantic and magnanimous John Frederic, surprised at his devotions in the church, fled in dismay, leaving his boots behind him, which, for their superhuman size, were ridiculously said afterwards

¹ De la Roca. Resultas de la Vida de Don F. A. de T. Duque de Alva, p. 3. Hist. du Duc d'Albe, i. 5.

³ Hist. du Duc d'Albe, i. 8.

³ Hist, du Duc d'Albe, liv. i. c. vii. De Thou, liv. iv.

to be treasured among the trophies of the Toledo house 1 The rout was total "I came, I saw, and God conquered," said the Emperor, in pious parody of his immortal predeces sor's epigram Maximilian, with a thousand apologies for his previous insults, embraced the heroic Don Ferdinand over and over again, as, arrayed in a plain suit of blue armour, unadorned save with streaks of his enemies blood. he returned from pursuit of the fugitives So complete and so sudden was the victory, that it was found impossible to account for it, save on the ground of miraculous interposition Like Joshua, in the vale of Ajalon, Don Terdinand was supposed to have commanded the sun to stand still for a serson, and to have been obeyed Otherwise, how could the passage of the river, which was only concluded at six in the evening, and the complete overthrow of the Protestant forces, have all been accomplished within the narrow space of an April twilight? The reply of the Duke to Henry the Second of France, who questioned him subsequently upon the subject, is well known 'Your Majesty' I was too much occupied that evening with what was taking place on the earth beneath, to pay much heed to the evolutions of the heavenly bodies" Spared as he had been by his good fortune from taking any part in the Algerine expedition, or in witnessing the ignominious retreat from Innspruck, he was obliged to submit to the intercalation of the disastrous siege of Metz in the long history of his successes the duty of a field murshal and a sentinel, supporting his army by his firmness and his discipline when nothing else could have supported them, he was at last enabled, after half the hundred thousand men with whom Charles had begun the siege had been sacrificed, to induce his imperial master to raise the siege before the remaining fifty thousand had been frozen or starved to death

¹ Hist du Duc d'Albe 1 274 Brantôme, Hom Illust etc. (ch 1) says that one of the boots was "large enough to hold a comp bedstead " p ii I insert the anecdote only as a specimen of the manner in which similar absurdaties, both of great and of little consequence are perpetuated by writers in every land and age. The armour of the noble hearted and unfortunate John Frederie may still be seen in Dresden Its size indicates a man very much above the average height, while the ex ternal length of the iron shoe, on the contrary, is less than eleven inches Hist du Duc d Albe, 1, 272 28, hy mi, chans, 2

The culminating career of Alva seemed to have closed in the mist which gathered around the setting star of the Empire. Having accompanied Philip to England in 1554, or his matrimonial expedition, he was destined in the following years, as viceroy and generalissimo of Italy, to be placed in a series of false positions. A great captain engaged in a little war, the champion of the cross in arms against the successor of St. Peter, he had extricated himself at last, with his usual adroitness, but with very little glory.1 To him-had been allotted the mortification, to another the triumph. The lustre of his own name seemed to sink in the ocean while that of a hated rival, with new spangled ore, suddenly "flamed in the forehead of the morning sky." While he had heen paltering with a dotard, whom he was forbidden to crush, Egmont had struck down the chosen troops of France, and conquered her most illustrious commanders. Here was the unpardonable crime which could only be expiated by the blood of the victor. Unfortunately for his rival, the time was now approaching when the long-deferred revenge was to be satisfied.

On the whole, the Duke of Alva was inferior to no general of his age. As a disciplinarian he was foremost in Spain, perhaps in Europe. A spendthrift of time, he was an economist of blood, and this was, perhaps, in the eye of humanity, his principal virtue. Time and myself are two, was a frequent observation of Philip, and his favourite general considered the maxim as applicable to war as to politics. Such were his qualities as a military commander. As a statesman, he had neither experience nor talent. As a man, his character was simple. He did not combine a great variety of vices, but those which he had were colossal, and he possessed no virtues. He was neither lustful nor intemperate, but his professed eulogists admitted his enormous avarice, while the world has agreed that such an amount of stealth and ferocity, of patient vindictiveness and universal bloodthirstiness, were never found in a savage beast of the forest, and but rarely in a human bosom. His history was now to show that his previous thrift of human life was not derived from any love of his kind. Personally he was stern and overbearing. As

¹ Hist. du Duc d'Albe, liv. iv. et v. De Thou, liv. xviii. De la Roca, Resultas, etc., 68-72.

difficult of access as Philip himself, he was even more haughty to those who were admitted to his presence. He addressed every one with the depreciating second person plural. Possessing the right of being covered in the presence of the Spanish monarch, he had been with difficulty brought to renounce it before the German Emperor 2 He was of an illustrious family, but his territorial possessions were not extensive His duchy was a small one, furnishing him with not more than fourteen thousand crowns of annual income, and with four hundred soldiers 3 He had, however, been a thrifty financier all his life, never having been without a handsome sum of ready money at interest. Ten years before his arrival in the Netherlands, he was supposed to have already increased his income to forty thousand a year by the proceeds of his investments at Antwerp. As already intimated, his military character was sometimes profoundly misunderstood He was often considered rather a pedantic than a practical commander, more capable to discourse of battles than to gain them. Notwithstanding that his long life had been an almost unbroken campaign, the ridiculous accusation of timidity was frequently made against him A gentleman at the court of the Emperor Charles once ad dressed a letter to the Duke with the title of "General of his Majesty's armies in the Duchy of Milan in time of peace, and major domo of the household in the time of war " It was said that the lesson did the Duke good, but that he rewarded very badly the nobleman who gave it, having subsequently

N d Vynckt, 11 41

² Ibil , 42

Badoviro MS

4 "Ha d entrata come Duca 14,000 scudi, ma fino a 40 000 per danan investiti in Anversa et se silma che egli si Irova sempre buona somma di conjanti"—*Bador arv M*S

^{6 &}quot;Ha visto el manegnato molte guerre et per la pratinca che ha diverer meplio che in habbas mai conosciuto in quella corte-ma le due oppositioni luna che facci le provisioni sue con iroppo reservato e cauto et quass limido nell'imprese "— Surrano AIX.

Bado aro is much more severe "Nella guerra mostra limidità el

Badovaro is much more severe "Nella guerra mostra limidità el poca intelligenza et poco simuato nella corte come per persona avara, superba et ambitiosa, adulatore et invido molto et di puochissimo cuore"

The mandate entire tail h Dom 1 E oco a and h M Cook 1

caused his head-to be taken off.¹ In general, however, Alva manifested a philosophical contempt for the opinions expressed concerning his military fame, and was especially disdainful of criticism expressed by his own soldiers. "Recollect," said he, at a little later period, to Don John of Austria, "that the first foes with whom one has to contend are one's own troops, with their clamours for an engagement at this moment, and their murmurs about results at another; with their 'I thought that the battle should be fought; or, 'it was my opinion that the occasion ought not to be lost.' Your highness will have opportunity enough to display valour, and will never be weak enough to be conquered by the babble of soldiers."

In person he was tall, thin, erect, with a small head, a long visage, lean yellow cheek, dark twinkling eyes, adust complexion, black bristling hair, and a long sable-silvered beard, descending in two waving streams upon his breast.³

Such being the design, the machinery was well selected. The best man in Europe to lead the invading force was placed at the head of ten thousand picked veterans. The privates in this exquisite little army, said the enthusiastic connoisseur Brantôme, who travelled post into Lorraine expressly to see them on their march, all wore engraved or gilded armour, and were in every respect equipped like captains. They were the first who carried muskets, a weapon which very much astonished the Flemings when it first rattled in their ears. The musketeers, he observed, might have been mistaken for princes, with such agreeable and graceful arrogance did they present themselves. Each was attended by his servant or esquire, who carried his piece for him, except in battle, and all were treated with extreme de-

¹ Dom l'Evesque, Mem. de Granvelle, i. 26, sqq.—The Benedictine does not further indicate the author of the pleasantry. One is disposed to imagine it to have been Egmont. Nevertheless, the Duke caused the heads of so many gentlemen to be taken off, that the description is sufficiently vague.

² Documentos Ineditos para la Historia de España, iii. 273-283. ³ "Di persona grande, magra, piccola testa, collerico et adusto."— Badovaro MS.

There is a very good contemporary portrait of the Duke, by Barends, in the Royal Gallery at Amsterdam, which accords very exactly with the descriptions preserved concerning his person.

4 "Gentille et gaillarde armée."

ference by the rest of the army, as if they had been officers The four regiments of Lombardy, Sardinia, Sicily, and Naples, composed a total of not quite nine thousand of the best foot soldiers in Europe¹ They were commanded respectively by Don Sancho de Lodrono, Don Gonzalo de Bracamonte, Julian Romero, and Alfonso de Ulloa, all dis tinguished and experienced generals 2 The cavalry, amount ing to about twelve hundred, was under the command of the natural son of the Duke, Don Ferdinando de Toledo, Prior of the Knights of St John Chiapin Vitelli, Marquis of Cetons, who had served the King in many a campuign, was appointed maréchal de camp, and Gabriel Cerbelloni was placed in command of the artillery On the way the Duke received as a present from the Duke of Savoy, the services of the distinguished engineer, Pacheco, or Paciotti whose name was to be associated with the most celebrated citadel of the Netherlands, and whose dreadful fate was to be contemporaneous with the earliest successes of the liberal party

With an army thus perfect, on a small scale, in all its departments, and furnished, in addition, with a force of two thousand prostitutes, as regularly enrolled, disciplined, and distributed as the cavalry or the artillery, the Duke em barked upon his momentous enterprise, on the 10th of May, at Carthagena Thirty seven galleys under command of Prince Andrea Doria, brought the principal part of the force to Genoa, the Duke being delayed a few days at Nice by an

..

Brantome, Grandes Capitaines Etrangers etc (usa 75) (Duc d Albe)

² Mendoza Guerras de los Payses Baxos, fol 20 21, 29 30

³ Hooft IV 148

^{*} Ibi f Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 565 - "Or dit qu'ils ont plus de deux milles putaines avecques eux, tellement que nous ne serons en faulte des putaines avecq ceulx que nous avons -Lett de Jean de Hornes \ Arr out Munten

co rmy which came to enforce ch infamous shape was the the eyes of the heretics in

attack of fever On the 2nd of June, the army was mustered at Alexandria de Palla, and ordered to rendezvous again at San Ambrosio at the foot of the Alps. It was then directed to make its way over Mount Cenis and through Savoy, Burgundy, and Lorraine, by a regularly-arranged treble movement. The second division was each night to encamp on the spot which had been occupied upon the previous night by the vanguard, and the rear was to place itself on the following night in the camp of the corps de bataille. Thus coiling itself along almost in a single line by slow and serpentine windings, with a deliberate, deadly, venomous purpose, this army, which was to be the instrument of Philip's long-deferred vengeance, stole through narrow mountain pass and tangled forest. So close and intricate were many of the defiles through which the journey led them,2 that, had one tithe of the treason which they came to punish, ever existed, save in the diseased imagination of their monarch, not one man would have been left to tell the tale. Egmont, had he really been the traitor and the conspirator he was assumed to be, might have easily organized the means of cutting off the troops before they could have effected their entrance into the country which they had doomed to destruction. His military experience, his qualifications for a daring stroke, his great popularity, and the intense hatred entertained for Alva, would have cfurnished him with a sufficient machinery for the purposehe cient machinery for the purposehe

Twelve days' march carried tiketearmy through Burgundy, twelve more through Lorraine. Widuring the whole of the journey they were closely accoment tied by a force of cavalry and infantry, or the proposed proposed in the set, who by the King of France, who, for fear of the proposed in the set, who by the King of France, who, for fear of the proposed in the set of the set of the spanial through his dominions. This reconnoiting army ker proposed with them like their shadow, and watched all their movements. A force of six thousand Swiss, equally alarmed and uneasy at the progress of the troops, hovered likewise about their flanks, without, however, offering any impediment to their advance. Before the middle of August they had reached Thionville, on the Luxemburg frontier, having on the last day marched a

¹ B. de Mendoza, 30.

² Ibid., 30, 31.

distance of two leagues through a forest, which seemed expressly arranged to allow a small defensive force to embarrass and destroy an invading army No opposition, how ever, was attempted, and the Spanish soldiers encamped at last within the territory of the Netherlands, having accomplished their adventurous journey in entire safety, and under perfect discipline 1

The Duchess had in her secret letters to Philip continued to express her disapprobation of the enterprise thus committed to Alva She had bitterly complained that now, when the country had been pacified by her efforts, another should be sent to reap all the glory, or perhaps to undo all that she had so painfully and so successfully done stated to her brother, in most unequivocal language, that the name of Alva was odious enough to make the whole Spanish nation detested in the Netherlands She could find no lan guage sufficiently strong to express her surpri e that the Ling should have decided upon a measure likely to be attended with such fatal consequences without consulting her on the subject, and in opposition to what had been her uniform advice She also wrote personally to Alva, imploring com manding, and threatening, but with equally ill success a The Duke knew too well who was sovereign of the Nether lands now, his master's sister or himself. As to the effects of his armed invasion upon the temper of the provinces, he was supremely indifferent He came as a conqueror, not as n mediator "I have tamed people of iron in my day, said he contemptuously, "shall I not easily crush these men of butter?"3

At Thonville he was, however, officially waited upon by Berlaymont and Noircarmes, on the part of the Regent He it his point, moreover, began to receive deputations from various cities, bidding him a hollow and trembling welcome, and deprecating his displeasure for injthing in the past which might seem offensive. To all such embassies he replied in vigue and conventional language, saying however, to his confidential attendants.—I am here—so much is cer

B. de Mendoza 30 31
 Correspondance de Philippe II 1 546 556 etc. Strada, 1 289.
 Hoof I v 148 Strada, 1 292.
 Hoof I, v 148.

tain-whether I am welcome or not is to me a matter of little consequence. At Tirlemont, on the 22nd August, he was met by Count Egmont, who had ridden forth from Brussels to show him a becoming respect, as the representative of his sovereign. The Count was accompanied by several other noblemen, and brought to the Duke a present of several beautiful horses.2 Alva received him, however, but coldly, for he was unable at first to adjust the mask to his countenance as adroitly as was necessary. Behold the greatest of all the heretics, he observed to his attendants, as soon as the nobleman's presence was announced, and in voice loud enough for him to hear.³ Even after they have exchanged salutations, he addressed several remarks to hin in a half-jesting, half-biting tone, saying among other things that his countship might have spared him the trouble o making this long journey in his old age.4 There were othe observations in a similar strain which might have wel aroused the suspicion of any man not determined, like Eg mont, to continue blind and deaf. After a brief interval however, Alva seems to have commanded himself. He passed his arm lovingly over that stately neck, which he had already devoted to the block, and—the Count having resolved beforehand to place himself, if possible, upon amicable terms with the new Viceroy—the two rode along side by side in friendly conversation, followed by the regiment of infantry and three companies of light horse, which belonged to the Duke's immediate command. Alva, still attended by Egmont, rode soon afterwards through the Louvain gate into Brussels, where they separated for a season. Lodgings had been taken for the Duke at the house of a certain Madame de Jasse,7 in the neighbourhood of Egmont's palace. Leaving here the principal portion of his attendants, the Captain-General, without alighting, forthwith proceeded to the palace to pay his respects to the Duchess of Parma.

For three days the Regent had been deliberating with her

(

¹ Bor, iv. 182.

² MS., 12-941. Bib. de Bourg.—Troubles des Pays Bas de Jean de Grutere; Extraits par M. Emile Gachet (1st Août, 1847).

³ Bor, iv. 182. Hoofd, iv. 150.

⁴ Jean de Grutere MS. Extraits de M. Gachet.

⁵ Hoofd, 150.

⁶ Jean de Grutere MS. Extraits de M. Gachet.

council as to the propriety of declining any visit from the man whose presence she justly considered a disgrace and an insult to herself. This being the reward of her eight years' devo tion to her brother's commands, to be superseded by a subject, and one too who came to carry out a policy which she had urgently deprecated, it could hardly be expected of the Emperor's daughter that she should graciously submit to the indignity, and receive her successor with a smiling countenance. In consequence, however, of the submissive lan guage with which the Duke had addressed her in his recent communications, offering with true Castilian but empty courtesy, to place his guards, his army, and himself at her feet, she had consented to receive his visit with or without his attendants.

On his appearance in the court yard a scene of violent altercation and almost of bloodshed took place between his body guard and the archers of the Regent's household, who were at last, with difficulty, persuaded to allow the merce naries of the hated Captain General to pass 1 Presenting lumself at three o'clock in the afternoon, after these not very satisfactory preliminaries, in the bedchimber of the Duchess, where it was her habit to grant confidential audiences, he met, as might easily be supposed, with a chilling reception The Duchess, standing motionless in the centre of the apart ment, attended by Berlaymont, the Duke of Aerschot, and Count Egmont, acknowledged his salutations with calm seventy. Neither she nor any one of her attendants advanced a step to meet him The Duke took off his hat, but she, calmly recognizing his right as a Spanish grandee, insisted upon his remaining covered A stiff and formal conversa tion of half an hour's duration then ensued, all parties remaining upon their feet. The Die albeith of

it difficult to conceal his

forbidding disguising her rage and her mortification under vivil of impernal pride. Alva, in a letter to Philip, describing the interview, assured his Majest; that he had treated the Duchess with as much deference as he could have shown

Correspondance de Philippe II . 1 631

^{*} Strada : 297

to the Queen; 1 but it is probable, from other contemporaneous accounts, that an ill-disguised and even angry arrogance was at times very visible in his demeanour. state council had advised the Duchess against receiving him until he had duly exhibited his powers. This ceremony had been waived, but upon being questioned by the Duchess at this interview as to their nature and extent, he is reported to have coolly answered that he really did not exactly remember, but that he would look them over, and send her information at his earliest convenience.2

The next day, however, his commission was duly exhibited. In this document, which bore date 31st January, 1567, Philip appointed him to be Captain-General "in correspondence with his Majesty's dear sister of Parma, who was occupied with other matters belonging to the government," begged the Duchess to co-operate with him and to command obedience for him, and ordered all the cities of the Netherlands to receive such garrisons as he should direct.3

At the official interview between Alva and Madame de Parma, at which these powers were produced, the necessary preliminary arrangements were made regarding the Spanish troops, which were now to be immediately quartered in the principal cities. The Duke, however, informed the Regent that as these matters were not within her province, he should take the liberty of arranging them with the authorities, without troubling her in the matter, and would inform her of the result of his measures at their next interview, which was to take place on the 26th August.4

Circular letters signed by Philip, which Alva had brought with him, were now despatched to the different municipal bodies of the country. In these the cities were severally commanded to accept the garrisons, and to provide for the armies whose active services the King hoped would not be required, but which he had sent beforehand to prepare a peaceful entrance for himself. He enjoined the most absolute obedience to the Duke of Alva until his own arrival, which was to be almost immediate. These letters were dated at Madrid on the 28th February, and were now

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 636.
³ Bor, iv. 182, 183. ² V. de Vynckt, ii. 53. 4 Corre-pondance de Philippe II., i. 632.

1567]

accompanied by a brief official circular, signed by Margaret of Parma, in which she announced the arrival of her dear cousin of Alva, and demanded unconditional submission to bis authorty

Having thus complied with these demands of external and conventional propriety, the indignant Duchess unbosomed herself, in her private Italian letters to her brother, of the rage which had been hitherto partially suppressed. She reiterated her profound regret that Philip had not yet accepted the resignation which she had so recently and so earnestly offered She disclaimed all jealousy of the supreme powers now conferred upon Alva, but thought that his Majesty might have allowed her to leave the country before the Duke arrived with an authority which was so extraordinary, as well as so humiliating to herself. Her honour might thus have been saved. She was pained to perceive that she was like to furnish a perpetual example to all others, who considering the manner in which she had been treated by the King, would henceforth have but little inducement to do their duty. At no time, on no occasion, could any person ever render him such services as hers had been I or nine years she had enjoyed not a moment of repose If the King had shown her but little gratitude, she was consoled by the thought that she had satisfied her God, herself, and the world She had compromised her health, perhaps her life, and now that she had pacified the country, now that the King was more absolute, more power ful than ever before, another was sent to enjoy the fruit of her labours and her sufferings *

The Duchess made no secret of her indignation at being thus superseded, and as she considered the matter, outraged She openly avowed her displeasure. She was at times almost beside herself with rage. There was universal sympathy with her emotions, for all hated the Duke, and shuddlered at the arrival of the Spaniards. The day of doom for all the crimes which had ever been committed in the course of ages, seemed now to have dawned upon the Netherlands. The sword which had so long been hanging over them, seemed about to descend. Throughout the

¹ Bor, 1v 1St 184

² Correspondance de l'Inhippe II , 1. 635 Strada, 1 298

provides, there was but one feeling of cold and hopeless dismay. Tho e who still saw a possibility of effecting their made from the fated land, swarmed across the frontier. All foreign mereliants described the great marts. The cities bycame as still as if the plague banner had been unfurled on every house top.

Meantime the Captain-General proceeded methodically with his work. He distributed his troops through Brussels, Ghent, Autwerp, and other principal cities. As a measure of necessity and mark of the last humiliation, he required the municipalities to transfer their keys to his keeping. The magistrates of Ghent humbly remonstrated against the indignity, and Egmont was imprudent enough to make himself the mouth-piece of their remonstrance, which, it is needless to add, was unsuccessful.4 Meantime his own day of reckoning had arrived.

As already observed, the advent of Alva at the head of a foreign army was the natural consequence of all which had gone before. The delusion of the royal visit was still maintained, and the affectation of a possible elemency still displayed, while the monarch sat quietly in his cabinet without a remote intention of leaving Spain, and while the messengers of his accumulated and long-concealed wrath were already descending upon their prey. It was the deliberate intention of Philip, when the Duke was despatched to the Netherlands, that all the leaders of the anti-inquisition party, and all who had, at any time or in any way, implicated themselves in opposition to the government, or in censure of its proceedings, should be put to death. It was determined that the provinces should be subjugated to the absolute domination of the council of Spain, a small body of foreigners sitting at the other end of Europe, a junta in which Netherlanders were to have no voice and exercise no influence. The despotic government of the Spanish and Italian possessions was to be extended to these Flemish territories, which were thus to be converted into the helpless dependencies of a forcign and an absolute crown.² There was to be a re-organiza-

tion of the inquisition, upon the same footing claimed for it

¹ Bor, iv. 184. Hoofd, iv. 150.

² "—— Touchant l'ordre qu'il debvoit tenir audiet pays —— l'on s'est peu appercevoir que *l'intention estait de meetre avec* le temps l'ordre

before the outbreak of the troubles, together with a re-enact ment and vigorous enforcement of the famous edicts against heresy '

Such was the scheme recommended by Granvelle and Espinosa, and to be executed by Alva ' As part and parcel of this plan, it was also arranged at secret meetings at the house of Espinosa, before the departure of the Duke, that all the seigniors against whom the Duchess Margaret had made so many complaints, especially the Prince of Orange, with the Counts Egmont, Horn, and Hoogstraaten, should be immediately arrested and brought to chastisement. The Marquis Berghen and the Baron Montigny, being already in Spain, could be dealt with at pleasure. It was also decided that the gentlemen implicated in the confederacy or compromise, should at once be proceeded against for high treason, without any regard to the promise of pardon granted by the Duchess.

The general features of the great project having been thus mapped out, a few indispensable preliminaries were at once executed. In order that Egmont, Horn, and other distinguished victims might not take alarm, and thus escape the doom deliberately arranged for them, royal assurances were despatched to the Netherlands, cheering their despondency and dispelling their doubts. With his own hand Philip wrote the letter, full of affection and confidence, to Egmont, to which allusion has already been made. He wrote it after Alva had left Madrid upon his mission of

de l'administration de justice et gouvernément à la façon d'Espagne, en quoy le feu Courtewille et moy avons toujours resiste."—Confessions of Counciller Louis del No

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1. 562

Et que mesmement le Cardinal Granvelle et President Viglius M de Berlayment et Norrearmes auraient a sa Majesté conseillé le même.

apparu par pluneurs letres exerptes en ce temps là a ses amys, et tout

vengeance. The same stealthy measures were pursued with regard to others. The Prince of Orange was not capable of falling into the royal trap, however cautiously baited. Unfortunately, he could not communicate his wisdom to his friends.

It is difficult to comprehend so very sanguine a temperament as that to which Egmont owed his destruction. It was not the Prince of Orange alone who had prophesied his doom. Warnings had come to the Count from every quarter, and they were now frequently repeated. Certainly he was not without anxiety, but he had made his decision; determined to believe in the royal word, and in the royal gratitude for his services rendered, not only against Montmorency and De Thermes, but against the heretics of Flanders. however, much changed. He had grown prematurely old. At forty-six years his hair was white, and he never slept without pistols under his pillow.1 Nevertheless he affected, and sometimes felt, a light-heartedness which surprised all around The Portuguese gentleman Robles, Seigneur de Billy, who had returned early in the summer from Spain, whither he had been sent upon a confidential mission by Madame de Parma, is said to have made repeated communications to Egmont as to the dangerous position in which he stood.2 Immediately after his arrival in Brussels he had visited the Count, then confined to his house by an injury caused by the fall of his horse. "Take care to get well very fast," said De Billy, "for there are very bad stories told about you in Spain." Egmont laughed heartily at the observation, as if nothing could well be more absurd than such a warning. His friend-for De Billy is said to have felt a real attachment to the Count-persisted in his prophecies, telling him that "birds in the field sang much more sweetly than those in cages," and that he would do well to abandon the country before the arrival of Alva.3

These warnings were repeated almost daily by the same gentleman, and by others, who were more and more astonished at Egmont's infatuation. Nevertheless, he had disregarded their admonitions, and had gone forth to meet the Duke at Tirlemont. Even then he might have seen, in the

t ontill Thyen 1115

¹ Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc. Supplément, 35, 36.
² Pontus Payen MS.

coldness of his first reception, and in the disrespectful manner of the Spanish soldiers, who not only did not at first salute him, but who murmured audibly that he was a Lutheran and traitor, that he was not so great a favourite with the govern ment at Madrid as he desired to be

After the first few moments, however, Alva's manner had changed, while Chiappin Vitelli, Gabriel de Cerbelloni, and other principal officers, received the Count with great cour tesy, even upon his first appearance. The grand prior, Fer dinando de Toledo, natural son of the Duke, and already a distinguished soldier, seems to have felt a warm and un affected frendship for Egmont, whose brilliant exploits in the field had excited his jouthful admiration, and of whose destruction he was, nevertheless, compelled to be the un willing instrument. For a few days, accordingly, after the arrival of the new Governor General, all seemed to be going smoothly. The grand prior and Egmont became exceedingly intimate, passing their time together in banquets, masquerades, and play, as jojously as if the merry days which had succeeded the treaty of Cateau Cambresis were returned. The Duke, too, manifested the most friendly dispositions, taking care to send him large presents of Spanish and Italian fruits, received frequently by the government couriers.

Lapped in this fatal security, Egmont not only forgot his fears, but unforturitely succeeded in inspiring Count Horn with a portion of his confidence. That gentleman had still remained in his solitary mansion at Weert, notwithstanding the arful means which had been used to lure him from that "desert". It is singular that the very same person who, according to a well informed Catholic contemporary, had been most eager to warn Egmont of his danger, had also been the foremost instrument for effecting the capture of the Admiral The Segneur de Billy, on the day after his arrival from Madrid, had written to Horn, telling him that the King was highly pleased with his services and character. De Billy also strated that he had been commissioned by Philip to cypress distinctly the royal grantude for the Count's conduct," adding that his Majesty was about to visit the Netherlands in

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , L 574. ² Pontus Payen M5

August, and would probably be preceded or accompanied by Baron Montigny.1

Alva and his son Don Ferdinando had soon afterwards addressed letters from Gerverbiller (dated 26th and 27th July) to Count Horn, filled with expressions of friendship and confidence.2 The Admiral, who had sent one of his gentlemen to greet the Duke, now responded from Weert that he was very sensible of the kindness manifested towards him. but that for reasons which his secretary, Alonzo de la Loo, would more fully communicate, he must for the present beg to be excused from a personal visit to Brussels. secretary was received by Alva with extreme courtesy.3 The Duke expressed infinite pain that the King had not yet rewarded Count Horn's services according to their merit, said that a year before he had told his brother Montigny how very much he was the Admiral's friend, and begged La Looto tell his master that he should not doubt the royal generosity and gratitude. The governor added, that if he could see the Count in person he could tell him things which would please him, and which would prove that he had not been forgotten by his friends. La Loo had afterward a long conversation with the Duke's secretary Albornoz, who assured him that his master had the greatest affection for Count Horn, and that since his affairs were so much embarrassed, he might easily be provided with the post of governor at Milan, or viceroy of Naples, about to become vacant. The secretary added, that the Duke was much hurt at receiving no visits from many distinguished nobles whose faithful friend and servant he was, and that Count Horn ought to visit Brussels, if not to treat of great affairs, at least to visit the Captain-General as a friend. "After all this," said honest Alonzo, "I am going immediately to Weert, to urge his lordship to yield to the Duke's desires."4

This scientific manœuvring, joined to the urgent representations of Egmont, at last produced its effect.

Foppens. Suppl. à Strada, ii. 553, sqq.
 Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 563, note.
 Letter of Alonzo de la Loo in Correspondance de Philippe II., i.

<sup>563, 564.

**</sup>Ibid.—Compare "La déduction de l'innocence du Comte de Hornes" (1568), pp. 33-35.

Admiral left his retirement at Weert to fall into the pit which his enemies had been so skilfully prepring at Brussels. On the night of the 8th September, Egmont received unother most significative and mysterious warning. A Spaniard, apparently an officer of rank, crine secretly into his house, and urged him solemnly to effect his escape before the morrow. The Countess, who related the story afterwards, always be lieved, without being certun, that the mysterious visitor was Julian Romejo, miréchal de camp. Egmont, however, con tinued as blindly confident as before

On the following day, September 9th, the grand prior,

enlivened by the music of Alva's own military band, which the Duke sent to entertain the company. At three o'clock he sent a message begging the gentlemen, after their dinner should be concluded, to favour him with their company at his house (the maison de Jassy), as he wished to consult them concerning the plan of the citadel, which he proposed erecting at Antwerp.

At this moment, the grand prior, who was seated next to Egmont, whispered in his ear "Leave this plice, Signor Count, instruitly, take the fleetest horse in your stable, and make your escape without a moment's delay". Egmont, much troubled, and remembering the manifold prophecies and admonitions which he had passed by unheeded, rose from the table and went into the next room. He was followed by Noiricames and two other gentlemen, who had observed his agitation, and were curious as to its cause. The Count repeated to them the mysterious words just whispered to him by the grand prior, adding that he was determined to take the advice without a moment's delay. "Ha'l Count," exclaimed Noirearmes, "do not put lightly such implicit con

2 Pontus Payen MS , book is

^{1 &}quot;Vottes le jour précédent, quelque Seigneur du conseil la voit pre ordretti, anin Madame sa femme souvent declare que ung ca tinue Espagnol qu'on souloponnoit autre cete Julian Romero, ettait venu de nuite en son logis lu conseiller la retraite, mois la confidence de see services, l'espoir de son innocence le fit desmeuter." "Votom "128" US. 11. 2.

fidence in this stranger, who is counselling you to your destruction. What will the Duke of Alva and all the Spaniards say of such a precipitate flight? Will they not say that your Excellency has fled from the consciousness of guilt? Will not your escape be construed into a confession of high treason?"

If these words were really spoken by Noircarmes, and that they were so we have the testimony of a Walloon gentleman in constant communication with Egmont's friends and with the whole Catholic party, they furnish another proof of the malignant and cruel character of the man. The advice fixed for ever the fate of the vacillating Egmont. He had risen from table determined to take the advice of a nobleminded Spaniard, who had adventured his life to save his friend. He now returned in obedience to the counsel of a fellow-countryman, a Flemish noble, to treat the well-meant warning with indifference, and to seat himself again at the last banquet which he was ever to grace with his presence. At four o'clock, the dinner being finished, Horn and

Egmont, accompanied by the other gentlemen, proceeded to the "Jassy" house, then occupied by Alva, to take part in the deliberations proposed. They were received by the Duke with great courtesy. The engineer, Pietro Urbino, soon appeared and laid upon the table a large parchment containing the plan and elevation of the citadel to be erected at Antwerp. A warm discussion upon the subject soon arose, Egmont, Horn, Noircarmes and others, together with the engineers Urbino and Pacheco, all taking part in the debate. After a short time, the Duke of Alva left the apartment, on pretext of a sudden indisposition, leaving the company still warmly engaged in their argument. The council lasted till near seven in the evening. As it broke up, Don Sancho d'Avila, captain of the Duke's guard, requested Egmont to remain for a moment after the rest, as he had a communication to make to him. After an insignificant remark or two, the Spanish officer, as soon as the two were alone, requested Egmont to surrender his sword. The Count, agitated, and notwithstanding everything which had gone

⁵ Pontus Payen MS

¹ Pontus Payen MS., book iv. ² Ibid. ³ Ibid.

⁴ Ibid.—Compare Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 573.

before, still taken by surprise, scarcely knew what reply to make ¹ Don Sancho repeated that he had been commis sioned to arrest him, and again demanded his sword. At the same moment the doors of the adjacent apartment were opened, and Egmont saw himself surrounded by a company of Spanish musqueteers and halberdmen Finding himself thus entrapped, he gave up his sword, saying bitterly, as he did so, that it had at least rendered some service to the King in times which were past. He was then conducted to a chamber, in the upper story of the house, where his tem porary prison had been arranged The windows were birn caded, the daylight excluded the whole apartment hung with black Here he remained fourteen days (from the 9th to 23rd September) During this period, he was allowed no communication with his friends His room was lighted day and night with candles, and he was served in strict silence by Spanish attendants, and guarded by Spanish soldiers The captain of the watch drew his curtain every midnight, and aroused him from sleep that he might be identified by the relieving officer 2

Count Horn was arrested upon the same occasion by Captain Salinas, as he was proceeding through the courtyard of the house, after the breaking up of the council. He was confined in another chamber of the mansion, and met with a precisely similar treatment to that experienced by Egmont Upon the 23rd September both were removed under a strong.

guard to the castle of Ghent 3

On this same day, two other important arrests, included and arranged in the same programme, had been successfully accomplished Bakkerzel, private and confidential secretary of Egmont, and Antony Van Straalen, the rich and in fluential burgomaster of Antwerp, were taken almost simul taneously ⁴ At the request of Alra, the burgomaster had been invited by the Duchess of Parma to repair on business to Brussels He seemed to have feared an ambuscade, for as he got into his coach to set forth upon the journey, he was

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , L 573

Pontus Payen MS

³ Ibid - Compare Bor, n 184, Hoofd, n 150, 151

^{298 300 ,} Correspondance de Philippe II , ubi sur



able thought should be lurking, it was to go hard but it might be twisted into a cord strong enough to strangle them all

The Duke wrote a trumphant letter to his Majesty thrivery night. He apologized that these important captures hid been deferred so long, but stated that he had thought it desirable to secure all these leading personages at a single stroke. He then narrated the masterly manner in which the operations had been conducted. Certainly, when it is remembered that the Duke had only reached Brussels upon the 23rd August, and that the two Counts were securely lodged in prison on the 9th of September, it seemed a super fluous modesty upon his part thus to excuse himself for an apparent delay. At any rate, in the eyes of the world and of postenty, his zeal to carry out the bloody commands of his master was sufficiently swift.

The consternation was universal throughout the provinces when the arrests became known Egmont's great popularity and distinguished services placed him so high above the mass of citizens, and his attachment to the Catholic religion was moreover so well known, as to make it obvious that no man could now be safe, when men like him were in the power of Alva and his myrmidons The animosity to the Spaniards increased hourly 1 The Duchess affected indig nation? at the arrest of the two nobles although it nowhere appears that she attempted a word in their defence, or lifted, at any subsequent moment, a finger to save them She was not anxious to wash her hands of the blood of two innocent men, she was only offended that they had been arrested without her permission The Duke had, it is true, sent Ber laymont and Mansfeld to give her information of the fact, as soon as the capture had been made, with the plausible ex cuse that he preferred to save her from all the responsibility and all the unpopularity of the measure 3 Nothing, how ever, could appease her wrath at this and every other indica tion of the contempt in which he appeared to hold the sister of his sovereign She complained of his conduct daily to every one who was admitted to her presence Herself

oppressed by a sense of personal indignity, she seemed for a moment to identify herself with the cause of the oppressed provinces. She seemed to imagine herself the champion of their liberties, and the Netherlanders, for a moment, to participate in the delusion. Because she was indignant at the insolence of the Duke of Alva to herself, the honest citizens began to give her credit for a sympathy with their own wrongs. She expressed herself determined to move about from one city to another, until the answer to her demand for dismissal should arrive. She allowed her immediate attendants to abuse the Spaniards in good set terms upon every occasion. Even her private chaplain permitted himself, in preaching before her in the palace chapel, to denounce the whole nation as a race of traitors and ravishers. and for this offence was only reprimanded, much against her will, by the Duchess, and ordered to retire for a season to his convent.² She did not attempt to disguise her dissatisfaction at every step which had been taken by the Duke. In all this there was much petulance, but very little dignity, while there was neither a spark of real sympathy for the oppressed millions, nor a throb of genuine womanly emotion for the impending fate of the two nobles. Her principal grief was, that she had pacified the provinces, and that another had now arrived to reap the glory; but it was difficult, while the unburied bones of many heretics were still hanging, by her decree, on the rafters of their own dismantled churches, for her successfully to enact the part of a benignant and merciful Regent. But it is very true that the horrors of the Duke's administration have been propitious to the fame of Margaret, and perhaps more so to that of Cardinal Granvelle. The faint and struggling rays of humanity which occasionally illumined the course of their government, were destined to be extinguished in a chaos so profound and dark, that these last beams of light seemed clearer and more bountiful by the contrast.

The Count of Hoogstraaten, who was on his way to Brussels, had, by good fortune, injured his hand through the accidental discharge of a pistol. Detained by this casualty at Cologne, he was informed, before his arrival at

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 631.

the capital, of the arrest of his two distinguished friends, and accepted the hint to betake himself at once to a place of safety

The loyalty of the elder Mansfeld was beyond dispute even by Alva His son Charles had, however, been imprudent, and, as we have seen, had even affixed his name to the earliest copies of the Compromise He had retired, it is true, from all connexion with the confederates, but his father knew well that the young Count's signature upon that famous document would prove his death warrant, were he found in the country He therefore had sent him into Germany before the arrival of the Duke 2

The King's satisfaction was unbounded when he learned this important achievement of Alva, and he wrote immediately to express his approbation in the most extravagant terms Cardinal Granvelle, on the contrary, affected astonishment at a course which he had secretly counselled his Majesty that

sentiments opp

interests of the

from the Netherlands He was persuaded, he said, that the Count had been abused by others, although, to be sure, the Cardinal had learned with regret what Egmont had written on the occasion of the haptism of Count Hoogstraaten's child As to the other persons arrested, he said that no one re gretted their fate. The Cardinal added, that he was sub tosed to be himself the instigator of these captures, but that he was not disturbed by that, or by other imputations of a sımılar nature *

In conversation with those about him, he frequently ex pressed regret that the Prince of Orange had been too crafty to be caught in the same net in which his more simple com panions were so mextricably entangled. Indeed, on the first arrival of the news, that men of high rank had been arrested in Brussels, the Cardinal eagerly inquired if the Tacitum had been taken, for by that term he always charac tenzed the Prince Recurring a negative reply, he expressed extreme disappointment, adding, that if Orange had es

¹ Bor, 1 185

² Ibid Correspondance de I hilippe II , 1 647 Correspondance de Philippe II , L 666

⁴ Ibid . 674

caped, they had taken nobody, and that his capture would have been more valuable than that of every man in the Netherlands.1

Peter Titchmann, too, the famous inquisitor, who, retired from active life, was then living upon Philip's bounty, and encouraged by friendly letters from that monarch, expressed the same opinion. Having been informed that Egmont and Horn had been captured, he eagerly inquired if "wise William" had also been taken. He was, of course, answered in the negative. "Then will our joy be but brief," he observed, "Woe unto us for the wrath to come from Germany."

On the 12th July, of this year, Philip wrote to Granvelle to inquire the particulars of a letter which the Prince of Orange, according to a previous communication of the Cardinal, had written to Egmont on the occasion of the baptism of Count Hoogstraaten's child. On the 17th of August, the Cardinal replied, by setting the King right as to the error which he had committed. The letter, as he had already stated, was not written by Orange, but by Egmont, and he expressed his astonishment that Madame de Parma had not yet sent it to his Majesty. The Duchess must have seen it, because her confessor had shown it to the person who was Granvelle's informant. In this letter, the Cardinal continued, the statement had been made by Egmont to the Prince of Orange that their plots were discovered, that the King was making armaments, that they were unable to resist him, and that therefore it had become necessary to dissemble and to accommodate themselves as well as possible to the present situation, while waiting for other circumstances under which to accomplish their designs. Granvelle advised, moreover, that Straalen, who had been privy to the letter, and perhaps the amanuensis, should be forthwith arrested.

The Cardinal was determined not to let the matter sleep, notwithstanding his protestation of a kindly feeling towards

Hoofd, iv. 151. Strada, i. 300. Meteren, 50.
 Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 523.
 —— Si (inquit) astutus Gulielmus (Aurantius) evasit non erunt solida gaudia nostra, væ nobis à bello Germanico."—Pandoræ sive veniæ Hispanicæ edutæ Anatomia. Prometheo auctore, 1574.

4 Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 564-610.

5 Ibid., 624.

the imprisoned Count Against the statement that he knew of a letter which amounted to a full confession of treason, out of Egmont's own mouth-a fact which, if proved, and perhaps, if even insimuated, would be sufficient with Philip to deprive Egmont of twenty thousand lives—against these constant recommendations to his suspicious and sanguinary master, to ferret out this document, if it were possible, it must be confessed that the churchman's vague and hypo critical expressions on the side of mercy were very little worth

Certainly these seeds of suspicion did not fall upon a barren soil Philip immediately communicated the infor-mation thus received to the Duke of Alva, charging him on repeated occasions to find out what was written, either by Egmont, or by Straalen at Egmont's instigation, stating that such a letter was written at the time of the Hoogstraaten baptism, that it would probably illustrate the opinions of Egmont at that period, and that the letter itself, which the confessor of Madame de Parma had once had in his hands, ought, if possible, to be procured ' Thus the very language used by Granvelle to Philip was immediately repeated by the monarch to his representative in the Netherlands, at the moment when all Egmonts papers were in his possession, and when Egmont's private secretary was undergoing the torture, in order that secrets might be wrenched from him which had never entered his brain. The fact that no such letter was found, that the Duchess had never alluded to any such document, and that neither a careful scrutiny of papers, nor the application of the rack, could elicit any satisfactory information on the subject, leads to the conclusion that no such treasonable paper had ever existed, save in the im agination of the Cardinal At any rate, it is no more than just to hesitate before affixing a damning character to a document, in the absence of any direct proof that there ever was such a document at all. The confessor of Madame de Parma told another person, who told the Cardinal, that either Count Egmont, or Burgomaster Straalen by command

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 666 702
² Vigl Lipst ad Hopp , xxvi 406 V d Vynckt, 11 S2
spondance de Philippe II , 1 671
³ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 671

of Count Egmont, wrote to the Prince of Orange thus and so. What evidence was this upon which to found a charge of high treason against a man whom Granvelle affected to characterize as otherwise neither opposed to the Catholic religion, nor to the true service of the King? What kind of mercy was it on the part of the Cardinal, while making such deadly insinuations, to recommend the imprisoned victim to clemency?

The unfortunate envoys, Marquis Berghen and Baron Montigny, had remained in Spain under close observation. Of those doomed victims who, in spite of friendly remonstrances and of ominous warnings, had thus ventured into the lion's den, no retreating footmarks were ever to be seen. Their fate, now that Alva had at last been despatched to the Netherlands, seemed to be sealed, and the Marquis Berghen, accepting the augury in its most evil sense, immediately afterwards had sickened unto death. Whether it were the sickness of hope deferred, suddenly changing to despair, or whether it were a still more potent and unequivocal poison which came to the relief of the unfortunate nobleman, will perhaps never be ascertained with certainty. The secrets of those terrible prison-houses of Spain can never perhaps be accurately known, until the grave gives up its dead, and the buried crimes of centuries are revealed.

It was very soon after the departure of Alva's fleet from Carthagena, that the Marquis Berghen felt his end approaching. He sent for the Prince of Eboli, with whom he had always maintained intimate relations, and whom he believed to be his disinterested friend. Relying upon his faithful breast, and trusting to receive from his eyes alone the pious drops of sympathy which he required, the dying noble poured out his long and last complaint. He charged him to tell the man whom he would no longer call his king, that he had ever been true and loyal, that the bitterness of having been constantly suspected, when he was conscious of entire fidelity, was a sharper sorrow than could be lightly believed, and that he hoped the time would come when his own truth and the artifices of his enemies would be brought to light. He closed his parting message by predicting that after he

¹ Strada, i. 290. Hoofd, iv. 146.

had been long laid in the grave, the impeachments against his character would be at last, although too late, retracted '

So spake the unhappy envoy, and his friend replied with words of consolation. It is probable that he even ventured, in the King's name, to grant him the liberty of returning to his home, the only remedy, as his physicians had repeatedly stated, which could possibly be applied to his disease But the devilish hypocrisy of Philip, and the abject perfids of Lboli, at this juncture, almost surpass behef. The Prince came to press the hand and to close the eyes of the dying man whom he called his friend, having first carefully studied a billet of most minute and secret instructions from his master as to the deportment he was to observe upon this solemn occasion and afterwards This paper, written in Philip's own hand, had been delivered to Eboli on the very day of his visit to Berghen, and bore the superscription that it was not to be read nor opened till the messenger who brought it had left his presence. It directed the Prince, if it should be evident that the Marquis was past recovery, to promise him, in the kings name, the permission of re turning to the Netherlands Should, however, a possibility of his surviving appear, Eboli was only to hold out a hope that such permission might eventually be obtained 'In case of the death of Berghen, the Prince was immediately to confer with the Grand Inquisitor and with the Count of Ferra, upon the measures to be taken for his obsequies It might seem advisable, in that event, to exhibit the regret which the king and his ministers felt for his death, and the great esteem in which they held the nobles of the Nether At the same time Eboli was further instructed to confer with the same personages as to the most efficient means for preventing the escape of Baron Montigny keep a vigilant eye upon his movements, and to give general directions to governors and to postmasters to intercept his flight, should it be attempted Finally, in case of Berghen's death, the Prince was directed to despatch a special mes senger, apparently on his own responsibility, and as if in the absence and without the knowledge of the King, to inform the Duchess of Parma of the event, and to urge

mediately to take possession of the city of Bergen-op-Zoom, and of all other property belonging to the Marquis, until it should be ascertained whether it were not possible to convict him, after death, of treason, and to confiscate his estates accordingly.1

Such were the instructions of Philip to Eboli, and precisely in accordance with the programme was the horrible comedy enacted at the death-bed of the envoy. Three days after his parting interview with his disinterested friend, the Marquis was a corpse.² Before his limbs were cold, a messenger was on his way to Brussels, instructing the Regent to sequestrate his property, and to arrest, upon suspicion of heresy, the youthful kinsman and niece, who, by the will of the Marquis, were to be united in marriage and to share his estate.3 The whole drama, beginning with the death-scene, was enacted according to order. Before the arrival of Alva in the Netherlands, the property of the Marquis was in the hands of the Government, awaiting the confiscation,4 which was but for a brief season delayed; while on the other hand, Baron Montigny, Berghen's companion in doom, who was not, however, so easily to be carried off by home-sickness, was closely confined in the alcazar of Segovia, never to leave a Spanish prison alive.5 There is something pathetic in the delusion in which Montigny and his brother, the Count Horn, both indulged, each believing that the other was out of harm's way, the one by his absence from the Netherlands, the other by his absence from Spain, while both, involved in the same meshes, were rapidly and surely approaching their fate.6
In the same despatch of the 9th September, in which the

Duke communicated to Philip the capture of Egmont and Horn, he announced to him his determination to establish a new court for the trial of crimes committed during the recent period of troubles.7 This wonderful tribunal was accordingly created with the least possible delay. It was called the

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 572. ² Strada, i. 290. ³ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 547-590; Strada, i. 291; and note of M. Gachard.

⁴ V. d. Vynckt, ii. 77.

⁶ Hoofd, iv. 172, 173. Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 648, 654,

⁶ Vide Déduction de l'Innocence du Comte de Hornes, pp. 203, 204.

⁷ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 637.

Council of Troubles, but it soon acquired the terrible name, by which it will be for ever known in history, of the Blood Council 1 It superseded all other institutions Every court, from those of the municipal magistracies up to the supreme councils of the provinces, were forbidden to take cognizance in future of any cause growing out of the late troubles 2 The Council of State, although it was not formally disbanded, fell into complete desuetude, its members being occasionally summoned into Alva's private chambers in an irregular manner, while its principal functions were usurped by the Blood Council Not only citizens of every province, but the municipal bodies and even the sovereign provincial estates themselves, were compelled to plead, like humble individuals, before this new and extraordinary tribunal. It is unnecessary to allude to the absolute violation which was thus committed of all charters, laws, and privileges, because the very creation of the council was a bold and brutal proclamation that those laws and privileges were at an end The constitution or maternal principle of this suddenly erected court was of a twofold nature. It defined and it punished the crime of treason The definitions, couched in eighteen articles, declared it to be treason to have delivered or signed any petition against the new bishops, the inquisition, or the edicts, to have tolerated public preaching under any cir cumstances, to have omitted resistance to the image-break ing, to the field preaching, or to the presentation of the Request by the nobles, and "either through sympathy or surprise" to have asserted that the King did not possess the right to deprive all the provinces of their liberties, or to have maintained that this present tribunal was bound to respect in any manner any laws or any charters ' In these brief and simple, but comprehensive terms, was the crime of high treason defined. The punishment was still more briefly, simply, and comprehensively stated, for it was in stant death in all cases. So well, too, did this new and terrible engine perform its work, that in less than three months from the time of its erection, eighteen hundred

¹ Hoofd, w 153 Bor, w 185, 186 Meteren, f 49 keidani, Ann Belg, p 5

Bor, 1, 185, 186 Meteren, 49

Bor, Hoofl, Meteren, ubs sup Hoofd, Bor, ubs sup Meteren

his life had been spent in administrative and judicial employments, he did not blush upon a matter of constitutional law to defer to the authority of such jurisconsults as the Duke of Alva and his two Spanish bloodhounds, Vargas and Del He did not like, he observed in his confidential correspondence, to gainsay the Duke, when maintaining, that in cases of treason, the privileges of Brabant were powerless, although he mildly doubted whether the Brabantines would agree with the doctrine.1 He often thought, he said, of remedies for restoring the prosperity of the provinces, but in action he only assisted the Duke, to the best of his abilities, in arranging the Blood-Council. He wished well to his country, but he was more anxious for the favour of Alva. "I rejoice," said he, in one of his letters, "that the most illustrious Duke has written to the King in praise of my obsequiousness; when I am censured here for so reverently cherishing him, it is a consolation that my services to the King and to the governor are not unappreciated there."2 Indeed the Duke of Alva, who had originally suspected the President's character, seemed at last overcome by his indefatigable and cringing homage. He wrote to the King, in whose good graces the learned doctor was most anxious at that portentous period to maintain himself, that the President was very serviceable and diligent, and that he deserved to receive a crumb of comfort from the royal hand.3 Philip, in consequence, wrote in one of his letters a few lines of vague compliment, which could be shown to Viglius, according to Alva's suggestion. It is, however, not a little charac teristic of the Spanish court and of the Spanish monarch, that, on the very day before, he had sent to the Captain-General a few documents of very different import. In order, as he said, that the Duke might be ignorant of nothing which related to the Netherlands, he forwarded to him copies of the letters written by Margaret of Parma from Brussels, three years before. These letters, as it will be recollected, contained an account of the secret investigations which the Duchess had made as to the private character and opinions of Viglius—at the very moment when he apparently stood highest in her confidence—and charged him with heresy,

² Ibid., 26.

¹ Vigl. ad Hopp., Epist. 24. ³ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 647.

swindling, and theft. Thus the painstaking and time-serving President, with all his learning and experience, was successively the dupe of Margaret and of Alva, whom he so obsequiously courted, and always of Philip, whom he so feared and worshipped.

With his assistance the list of blood councillors was quickly completed. No one who was offered the office re fused it. Noircarmes and Berlaymont accepted with very great eagerness. Several presidents and councillors of the different provincial tribunals were appointed, but all the Netherlanders were men of straw. Two Spannards, Del Rio and Vargas, were the only members who could vote, while their decisions, as already stated, were subject to reversal by Alva. Del Rio was a man without character or talent, a mere tool in the hands of his superiors, but Juan de Vargas was a terrible reality.

No better man could have been found in Europe for the post to which he was thus elevated To shed human blood was, in his opinion, the only important business and the only exhilarating pastime of life. His youth had been stained with other crimes. He had been obliged to retire from Spain, because of his violation of an orphan child to whom he was guardian,3 but, in his manhood, he found no pleasure but in murder He executed Alva's bloody nork with an industry which was almost superhuman, and with a merri ment which would have shamed a demon. His execrable jests ring through the blood and smoke and death-cries of those days of perpetual sacrifice He was proud to be the double of the iron hearted Duke, and acted so uniformly in accordance with his views, that the right of revision remained but nominal There could be no possibility of collision where the subaltern was only anxious to surpass an incomparable superior The figure of Vargas rises upon us through the mist of three centuries with terrible distinctness his barbarous grammar has not been forgotten; and his crimes

also La Deduction de l'Innocence du Comte de Hilippe II, ii 713 731, also La Deduction de l'Innocence du Comte de H pp.

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 666

² Norcarme y Barlemon—na sola no han rehusado, pero me parece lo han acetado de muy buena gana. —MS Letter of Alba 10th beffember, 1567, cital in Gachard, Notice sur le Conseil des Troubles, p 7 note.

against syntax and against humanity have acquired the same immortality. "Heretici fraxerunt templa, boni nihili faxerunt contra, ergo debent omnes patibulare," was the comprehensive but barbarous formula of a man who murdered the Latin language as ruthlessly as he slaughtered his contemporaries.

Among the ciphers who composed the rest of the board, the Flemish Councillor Hessels was the one whom the Duke most respected. He was not without talent or learning, but the Duke only valued him for his cruelty. Being allowed to take but little share in the deliberations, Hessels was accustomed to doze away his afternoon hours at the council table, and when awakened from his nap in order that he might express an opinion on the case then before the court, was wont to rub his eyes and to call out "Ad patibulum, ad patibulum," ("to the gallows with him, to the gallows with him,") with great fervour, but in entire ignorance of the culprit's name or the merits of the case. His wife, naturally disturbed that her husband's waking and sleeping hours were alike absorbed with this hangman's work, more than once ominously expressed her hope to him, that he, whose head and heart were thus engrossed with the gibbet, might not one day come to hang upon it himself; a gloomy prophecy which the future most terribly fulfilled.2

The Council of Blood, thus constituted, held its first session on the 20th September, at the lodgings of Alva. Springing completely grown and armed to the teeth from the head of its inventor, the new tribunal—at the very outset in possession of all its vigour—forthwith began to manifest a terrible activity in accomplishing the objects of its existence. The councillors having been sworn to "eternal secrecy as to anything which should be transacted at the board, and having likewise made oath to denounce any one of their number who should violate the pledge," the court was considered as organized. Alva worked therein seven

•

¹ V. d. Vynckt, ii. 75, 76, 77; Brandt, i. 465, 466; Reidani, p. 5; Hoofd, 152. "The heretics destroyed the temples, the good men did nothing to prevent it, therefore they should all be hanged."

² Hoofd, xiv. 594. Brandt, 494. ³ Gachard. Notice, etc., 9.

hours daily. It may be believed that the subordinates were not spared, and that their office proved no sinecure Their labours, however, were not encumbered by antiquated forms. As this supreme and only tribunal for all the Nether lands had no commission or authority save the will of the Captain General, so it was also thought a matter of superero gution to estriblish a set of rules and orders such as might be useful in less independent courts. The forms of proceeding were hatef and artless. There was a rude organization by which a crowd of commissioners, acting as inferior officers of the council, were spread over the provinces, whose business was to collect information concerning all persons who might be inerminated for participation in the recent troubles? The greatest erime, however, was to be ruch, and one when could be expiated by no virtues, however signal. Alia was bent upon proving himself as recomplished a financiar as he was indisputably a consummate commander, and he had promised his master an annual income of 500,000 ducats from the confiscations which were to accompany the executions.

It was necessary that the blood torrent should flow at once through the Netherlands, in order that the promised golden river, a yard deep, according to his vaunt, should begin to irrigate the thirsty soil of Span II is obvious, from the fundamental laws which were made to define treason at the same moment in which they established the council, that my man might be at any instant summoned to the court. Every man, whether innocern or guilty, whether Papist or Protestant, felt his head shaking on his shoulders. If he were wealthy, there seemed no remedy but flight, which was now almost impossible, from the heavy penalties affixed by the new edict upon all carriers, shipmasters, and waggoners, who

should aid in the escape of heretics.

A certain number of these commissioners were particularly instructed to collect information as to the treason of Orange, Louis Nassau, Brederode, Egmont, Horn, Culemberg Van den Berg, Berghen, and Montigny Upon such information the proceedings against those distinguished

Gachard Notice etc., 10 2 Ibid., 14 etc.
Illi 22 —Compare Brandt, 1 475, Meteren 29, Hoofl, 1v,
V d. Vjnckt in Si, et alios
Brandt, 1 406

seigniors were to be summarily instituted. Particular councillors of the Court of Blood were charged with the arrangement of these important suits, but the commissioners were to report in the first instance to the Duke himself, who afterwards returned the paper into the hands of his subordinates.¹

With regard to the inferior and miscellaneous cases which were daily brought in incredible profusion before the tribunal, the same preliminaries were observed, by way of aping the proceedings in courts of justice. Alva sent the cart-loads of information which were daily brought to him, but which neither he nor any other man had time to read, to be disposed of by the board of councillors. It was the duty of the different subalterns, who, as already stated, had no right of voting, to prepare reports upon the cases. Nothing could be more summary. Information was lodged against a man, or against a hundred men, in one document. The Duke sent the papers to the council, and the inferior councillors reported at once to Vargas. If the report concluded with a recommendation of death to the man, or the hundred men in question, Vargas instantly approved it, and execution was done upon the man, or the hundred men, within forty-eight hours. If the report had any other conclusion, it was immediately sent back for revision, and the reporters were overwhelmed with reproaches by the President.2

Such being the method of operation, it may be supposed that the councillors were not allowed to slacken in their terrible industry. The register of every city, village, and hamlet throughout the Netherlands showed the daily lists of men, women, and children thus sacrificed at the shrine of the demon who had obtained the mastery over this unhappy land.³ It was not often that an individual was of sufficient importance to be tried—if trial it could be called—by him-

¹ Gachard. Notice, etc., 10, 11.

² Ibid., 19, 20.—"En siendo el aviso de condenaer à muerte se decia que estaba muy bien y no habia mas que ver; empero, si el aviso era de menor pena, no se estaba à lo que ellos decian, sino tornabase à ver el proceso, y decian les sobre ellos malas palabras y hacian les ruin tratamiento," etc.—Official document cited by M. Gachard in Notice sur le Conseil, etc.

³ Hoofd, iv. Brandt, ix.

self 1 It was found more expeditious to send them in batches to the furnace Thus, for example, on the 4th of January, eighty four inhabitants of Valenciennes were condemned, on another day, ninety five miscellaneous individuals, from different places in Flanders, on another, forty six inhabitants of Malines, on another, tlurty five persons from different localities, and so on 2

The evening of Shrovetide, a favourite holiday in the Netherlands, afforded an occasion for arresting and carrying off a vast number of doomed individuals at a single swoop. It was correctly supposed that the burghers, filled with wine and wassail, to which perhaps the persecution under which they lived lent an additional and horrible stimulus, might be easily taken from their beds in great numbers, and be delivered over at once to the council. The plot was ingenious, vered over at once to the council. The piot was ingenious, the net was spread accordingly. Many of the doomed were, however, luckily warned of the terrible termination which was impending over their festival, and bestowed themselves in safety for a season. A prize of about the hundred prisoners was all which rewarded the sagacity of the enterprise. It is needless to add that they were all immediately executed. It is a wearisome and odious task to ransack the mouldy records of three centuries ago, in order to reproduce the obscure names of the thousands who were thus sacrificed. The dead have buried their dead, and are forgotten. It is likewise hardly necessary to state that the proceedings before the council were all exparts, and that an information was almost inevitably followed by a death warrant. It sometimes happened even that the zeal of the councillors outstipped the industry of the commissioners The sentences were occasionally in advance of the docket. Thus upon one occasion

¹ See in particular the "Sententen van Alsa gesammelt van J. Markus," passum, a work, in which a few thousand sentences of death upon men and women still in the Netherlands, or of benishment under pain of detth upon such as had escaped, have been collected and published. The sentences were given mainly upon the culprits in lost or property.

a man's case was called for trial, but before the investigation was commenced it was discovered that he had been already executed. A cursory examination of the papers proved, moreover, as usual, that the culprit had committed no crime. "No matter for that," said Vargas, jocosely, "if he has died innocent, it will be all the better for him when he takes his trial in the other world." 1

But, however the councillors might indulge in these gentle jests among themselves, it was obvious that innocence was in reality impossible, according to the rules which had been laid down regarding treason. The practice was in accordance with the precept, and persons were daily executed with senseless pretexts, which was worse than executions with no pretexts at all. Thus Peter de Wit of Amsterdam was beheaded, because at one of the tumults in that city he had persuaded a rioter not to fire upon a magistrate. taken as sufficient proof that he was a man in authority among the rebels, and he was accordingly put to death.2 Madame Juriaen, who, in 1566, had struck with her slipper a little wooden image of the Virgin, together with her maidservant, who had witnessed without denouncing the crime, were both drowned by the hangman in a hogshead placed on the scaffold.3

Death, even, did not in all cases place a criminal beyond the reach of the executioner. Egbert Meynartzoon, a man of high official rank, had been condemned, together with two colleagues, on an accusation of collecting money in a Lutheran church. He died in prison of dropsy. sheriff was indignant with the physician, because, in spite of cordials and strengthening prescriptions, the culprit had slipped through his fingers before he had felt those of the hangman. He consoled himself by placing the body on a chair, and having the dead man beheaded in company with his colleagues.4

Thus the whole country became a charnel-house; the death-bell tolled hourly in every village; not a family but was called to mourn for its dearest relatives, while the sur-

Brandt, i. 494. Hoofd, v. 191.
 Hoofd, v. 183. Brandt, i. 488.
 Brandt, i. 488. Reael, 43. Hist. des Martyrs, 449.
 Brandt, 488. Reael, 60, 6. Hoofd, v. 181, 182.

vivors stalked listlessly about, the ghosts of their former selves, among the wrecks of their former homes The spirit of the nation, within a few months after the arrival of Alva, seemed hopelessly broken. The blood of its best and bravest had already stained the scaffold, the men to whom it had been accustomed to look for guidance and protection, were dead, in prison, or in exile Submission had ceased to be of any avail, flight was impossible, and the spirit of ven geance had alighted at every fireside. The mourners went duly about the streets, for there was hardly a house which had not been made desolate. The scaffolds, the gallows, the funeral piles, which had been sufficient in ordinary times, furnished now an entirely madequate machinery for the in cessant executions Columns and stakes in every street, the door posts of private houses, the fences in the fields, were laden with human carcises, strangled, buxned, beheaded The orchards in the country bore on many a tree the hideous fruit of human hodies 1

Thus the Netherlands were crushed, and but for the strin gency of the tyrunny which had now closed their gates, would have been depopulated. The grass began to grow in the streets of those cities which had recently nourished so many artisans. In all those great manufacturing and industrial marts, where the tide of human life had throbbed so ugor ously, there now night. It was a

to his friend Ho.

gentleness of the Duke of Alsa? Such were among the first fruits of that prudence and that gentleness

The Duchess of Parma had been kept in a continued state of irritation She had not ceased for many months to demand her release from the odious position of a cipher in a hand where she had so lately been sovereign, and she had at last obtained it Philip transmitted his acceptance of her resignation by the same courier who brought Alia's commission to be governor-general in her place ³ The letters to the Duchess were full of conventional compliments for her past services, accompanied, however, with a less barren and more acceptable acknowledgment, in the shape of a life

¹ Hoofd, 18 153. 2 Vigl ad Hopp., Fp., xlv1 451 2 Correspondance de Philippe II., 1 658, 600 etc.

of the Spaniard, and Alva had written to Philip that he was disposed to accept the offer, and to render the service. The places thus held would be a guarantee for his expenses, he said, while in case King Charles and his brother should die, "their possession would enable Philip to assert his own claim to the French crown in right of his wife, the Salic law being merely a pleasantry."

The Queen Dowager, adopting now a very different tone from that which characterized her conversation at the Bayonne interview, wrote to Alva, that if, for want of 2,000 Spanish musketeers, which she requested him to furnish, she should be obliged to succumb, she chose to disculpate herself in advance before God and Christian princes for the peace which she should be obliged to make.² The Duke wrote to her in reply, that it was much better to have a kingdom ruined in preserving it for God and the king by war, than to have it kept entire without war, to the profit of the devil and of his followers.³ He was also reported on another occasion to have reminded her of the Spanish proverb—that the head of one salmon is worth those of a hundred frogs.⁴ The hint, if it were really given, was certainly destined to be acted upon.

The Duke not only furnished Catherine with advice, but with the musketeers which she had solicited. Two thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, under the Count of Aremberg, attended by a choice band of the Catholic nobility of the Netherlands, had joined the royal camp at Paris before the end of the year, to take their part in the brief hostilities by which

the second treacherous peace was to be preceded.5

Meantime, Alva was not unmindful of the business which had served as a pretext in the arrest of the two Counts. The fortifications of the principal cities were pushed on with great rapidity. The memorable citadel of Antwerp in particular had already been commenced in October under the superintendence of the celebrated engineers, Pacheco and Gabriel de Cerbelloni.⁶ In a few months it was completed,

Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 593, 594.

² Ibid., î. 694. ⁴ De Thou, t. v., liv. xliv. 515. Hug. Grot. Annal., lib. ii. 40. Bor, iv. 219,

Ibid., iv. 219.
 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 725, 726. Bor, iv.

at a cost of one million four hundred thousand florins, of which sum the citizens, in spite of their remonstrances, were compelled to contribute more than one quarter The sum of four hundred thousand florins was forced from the burghers by a tax upon all hereditary property within the municipality I wo thousand workmen were employed daily in the construc tion of this important fortress, which was erected, as its position most plainly manifested, not to protect, but to con trol the commercial capital of the provinces It stood at the edge of the city, only separated from its walls by an open esplanade. It was the most perfect pentagon in Europe,2 having one of its sides resting on the Scheld, two turned towards the city, and two towards the open country bastions, with walls of hammered stone, connected by curtains of turf and masonry, surrounded by walls measuring a league in circumference, and by an outer moat fed by the Scheld, en closed a spacious enceinte, where a little church with many small lodging houses, shaded by trees and shrubbery, nestled among the bristling artillery, as if to mimic the appearance of a peaceful and pastoral village To four of the five bastions, the Captain General, with characteristic ostentation, gave his own names and titles One was called the Duke, the second Ferdi nundo, a third I oledo, a fourth Alva, while the fifth was bantized with the name of the ill fated engineer, Pacheco The water gate was decorated with the escutcheon of Alva, surrounded by his Golden Fleece collar, with its pendant lamb of God, a symbol of blasphemous iron), which still remains upon the fortress, to recall the image of the tyrant and murderer Each bustion was honeycombed with casemates and subter ranean storehouses, and capable of contuning within its bowels a vast supply of provisions, munitions, and soldiers Such was the celebrated citadel built to tame the turbulent spirit of Antwerp, at the cost of those whom it was to terrify and to insult 3

¹ Correspondance de Phihppe II , 1 725 726 llor, iv 219

"La nonpareille forteresse du monde —Brantome I te de Don Sancho d'Atula

De Thou 1 500 Bor, 11 219 Hoofd 1v 154 Bentivogho, 1v 58

CHAPTER IL

VICTIMS AND CHAMPIONS.

Orange, Count Louis, He getraaten, and others, cited before the Bloods coincil. Charges against them-Letter of Orange in reply-Position and continent, of the Prince-Seirore of Count de Buren-Detail, of that transaction-Petitions to the Council from Louvain and other place. Sentence of death against the whole population of the Netherlands pronounced by the Spanish Inquisition and proclaimed by Cruel invention, against heretics—The Wild Beggars—Preliminary propertings of the Council against Egmont and Horn-Intertogatorie, addressed to them in prison-Articles of accusation against them--Forceloure of the cases-Pleas to the jurisdiction-Efforts by the Counterers Egmont and Horn, by many Knights of the Fleece, and by the Emperor, in favour of the prisoners—Answers of Alva and of Philip-Obsequious behaviour of Viglius-Difficulties arising from the Golden Pleece statutes set aside-Particulars of the charges against Count Horn and of his defence-Articles of accusation against Egmont -Sketch of his reply-Reflections upon the two trials-Attitude of Orange -- His published "Justification"-- His secret combinations-His commission to Count Louis-Large sums of money subscribed by the Nassau family, by Netherland refugees, and others—Great personal sacrifices made by the Prince-Quadruple scheme for invading the Netherlands—Defeat of the patriots under Cocqueville—Defeat of Villers—Invasion of Friesland by Count Louis—Measures of Alva to oppose him -Command of the royalists entrusted to Aremberg and Meghem-The Duke's plan for the campaign-Skirmish at Dam-Detention of Meghem-Count Louis at Heiliger-Lee-Nature of the ground-Advance of Aremberg-Disposition of the patriot forces-Impatience of the Spanish troops to engage—Battle of Heiliger-Lee— Defeat and death of Aremberg—Death of Adolphus Nassau—Effects of the battle-Anger and severe measures of Alva-Eighteen nobles executed at Brussels-Sentence of death pronounced upon Egmont and Horn-The Bishop of Ypres sent to Egmont-Fruitless intercession by the prelate and the Countess—Egmout's last night in prison—The "Grande Place" at Brussels-Details concerning the execution of Egmont and Horn-Observation upon the characters of the two nobles -Destitute condition of Egmont's family.

ATE in October, the Duke of Alva made his triumphant entry into the new fortress. During his absence, which was to continue during the remainder of the year, he

had ordered the Secretary Courteville and the Councillor del Rio to superintend the commission, which was then actually engaged in collecting materials for the prosecutions to be instituted against the Prince of Orange and the other nobles who had abandoned the country 'Accordingly, soon after his return, on the 19th of January, 1568, the Prince, his brother Louis of Nassau, his brother in liw, Count Van den Berg, the Count Hoogstraaten, the Count Culemberg, and the Baron Mantign), were summoned in the name of Alva to appear before the Blood Council, within three fourteen days from the date of the proclamation, under prin of per petual banishment with confiscation of their estates 'It is needless to say that these seigmors did not obey the sum mons. They knew full well that their obedience would be rewarded only by death

The charges agunst the Prince of Orange, which were drawn up in ten articles, stried, chiefly and briefly, that he had been, and was, the head and front of the rebellion, that as soon as his Majesty had left the Netherlands, he had begun his machinations to make himself master of the country and to expel his sovereign by force, if he should attempt to return to the provinces, that he had seduced his Majesty's subjects by false pretences that the Sprinish inquisition was about to be introduced, that he had been the secret encourager and director of Brederode and the confederated nobles, and that when sent to Antwerp, in the name of the Regent, to put down the rebellion, he had encouraged heresy and accorded freedom of religion to the Reformers.

The articles against Hoogstraaten and the other gentlemen were of similar tenor. It certainly was not a slender proof of the calm effrontery of the government thus to see Alvas's proclamation charging it as a crime upon Orange that he had inveigled the lieges into revolt by a false assertion that the inquisition was about to be established, when letters from the Duke to Philip, and from Granvelle to Philip, dated upon nearly the same day, advised the immediate restoration of the inquisition as soon as an adequate number of execu

Gachard Nolice, etc., 10, 11

² Bor, iv 220, 221, 222 Meteren, 50. V d Vynckt, ii. 77.

³ See the document condensed in Bor, ubi supra

tions had paved the way for the measure. It was also a sufficient indication of a reckless despotism, that while the Duchess, who had made the memorable Accord with the Religionists, received a flattering letter of thanks and a farewell pension of fourteen thousand ducats yearly, those who, by her orders, had acted upon that treaty as the basis of their negotiations, were summoned to lay down their heads upon the block.

The Prince replied to this summons by a brief and somewhat contemptuous plea to the jurisdiction. As a Knight of the Fleece, as a member of the Germanic Empire, as a sovereign prince in France, as a citizen of the Netherlands, he rejected the authority of Alva and of his self-constituted tribunal. His innocence he was willing to establish before competent courts and righteous judges. As a Knight of the Pleece, he said he could be tried only by his peers, the brethren of the order, and, for that purpose, he could be summoned only by the King as Head of the Chapter, with the sanction of at least six of his fellow-knights. In conclusion, he offered to appear before his Imperial Majesty, the Electors, and other members of the Empire, or before the Knights of the Golden Fleece. In the latter case, he claimed the right, under the statutes of that order, to be placed while the trial was pending, not in a solitary prison, as had been the fate of Egmont and of Horn, but under the friendly charge and protection of the brethren themselves. The letter was addressed to the procurator-general, and a duplicate was forwarded to the Duke.2

From the general tenor of the document, it is obvious both that the Prince was not yet ready to throw down the gauntlet to his sovereign, nor to proclaim his adhesion to the new religion. On departing from the Netherlands in the spring, he had said openly that he was still in possession of sixty thousand florins yearly, and that he should commence no hostilities against Philip, so long as he did not disturb him in his honour or his estates.³

His character had, however, already been attacked, his property threatened with confiscation. His closest ties of

•

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 624

² See the letter in Bor, iv. 222, 223, 224.

³ Reidani, i. 5.

family were now to be severed by the hand of the tyrant. His eldest child, the Count de Buren, torn from his protection, was to be carried into indefinite captivity in a foreign land. It was a remarkable oversight, for a person of his sagacity, that, upon his own departure from the provinces, he should leave his son, then a boy of thirteen years, to pursue his studies at the college of Louvain. Thus exposed to the power of the government, he was soon serzed as a hosting for the good behaviour of the father. Granvelle appears to have been the first to recommend the step in a secret letter to Philip, but Alva scarcely needed prompting. Accordingly, upon the 13th of Tebruary, 1568, the Duke sent the Seginior de Chassy to Louvain, attended by four officers and by twelve archers. He was furnished with a letter to the Count de Buren, in which that young nobleman was requested to place implicit confidence in the bearer of the despatch, and was informed that the desire which his Majesty had to see him educated for his service, was the cruse of the communication which the Seigmor de Chassy was about to male.

That gentleman was, moreover, minutely instructed as to his method of proceeding in this memorable case of kidnap ping. He was to present the letter to the young Count in presence of his tutor. He was to invite him to Span in the name of his Majesty. He was to assure him that his Majesty seomminds were solely with a view to his own good, and that he was not commissioned to arrest, but only to escort him He was to allow the Count to be accompaned only by two valets, two piges, a cook, and a keeper of accounts. He was, however, to induce his tutor to accompany him, at least to the Spransh frontier. He was to arrange that the second day after his arrival at Louvain, the Count should set out for Antwerp, where he was to lodge with Count Lodron, after which they were to proceed to Flushing, whence they were to embirk for Span. At that city he was to deliver the young Prince to the person whom he would find there, com missioned for that purpose by the Duke. As soon as he had made the first proposition at Louvain to the Count, he was, with the assistance of his retinue, to keep the most street.

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II 1 791

watch over him day and night, but without allowing the

supervision to be perceived.1

The plan was carried out admirably. It was fortunate, however, for the kidnappers, that the young Prince proved favourably disposed to the plan. He accepted the invitation of his captors with alacrity. He even wrote to thank the governor for his friendly offices in his behalf.2 He received with boyish gratification the festivities with which Lodron enlivened his brief sojourn at Antwerp, and he set forth without reluctance for that gloomy and terrible land of Spain. whence so rarely a Flemish traveller had returned.3 changeling, as it were, from his cradle, he seemed completely transformed by his Spanish tuition, for he was educated and not sacrificed by Philip. When he returned to the Netherlands, after a twenty years' residence in Spain, it was difficult to detect in his gloomy brow, saturnine character, and Jesuitical habits, a trace of the generous spirit which characterized that race of heroes, the house of Orange-Nassau.

Philip had expressed some anxiety as to the consequences of this capture upon the governments of Germany. Alva, however, reassured his sovereign upon that point, by reason of the extreme docility of the captive, and the quiet manner in which the arrest had been conducted. At that particular juncture, moreover, it would have been difficult for the government of the Netherlands to excite surprise anywhere, except by an act of clemency. The president and the deputation of professors from the university of Louvain waited upon Vargas, by whom, as acting president of the Blood-Council, the arrest had nominally been made, with a remonstrance that the measure was in gross violation of their statutes and privileges. That personage, however, with his usual contempt both for law and Latin, answered brutally, "Non curamus vestros privilegios," and with this memorable answer, abruptly closed his interview with the trembling pedants.5

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii, 729. ² Ibid., ii. 734.

³ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 729, 730, 733, 734, 735, 737.—Compare Strada, i. 311, 312. Hoofd, iv. 152. Brandt, i. 468. Bor, iv. 222. V. d. Vynckt, ii. 97, 98.

⁴ Correspondance de Philippe II., i. 731.

⁵ Bor, iv. 222. V. d. Vynckt, ii. 98.

Petitions now poured into the council from all quarters, abject recantations from terror stricken municipalities humble intercessions on behalf of doomed and imprisoned victims To a deputation of the magistracy of Antwerp who came with a prayer for mercy in behalf of some of their most distinguished fellow citizens, then in prison the Duke gave a passionate and ferocious reply. He expressed his wonder that the citizens of Antwerp that hotbed of treason should dare to approach him in behalf of traitors and heretics. Let them look to it in future he continued, or he would hang every man in the whole city to set an example to the rest of the country for his Majesty would rather the whole land should become an uninhabited wilderness, than that a single dissenter should exist within its territory

Events now marched with rapidity The monarch seemed disposed literally to execute the threat of his viceroy | Larly in the year, the most sublime sentence of death was promul gated which has ever been pronounced since the creation of the world I he Roman tyrint wished that his enemies heads were all upon a single neck, that he might strike them off at a blow the inquisition assisted Philip to place the heads

lands to death as heretics From this universal doom ents a fer persons especially named, were excepted ' A proclama tion of the King dated ten days later, confirmed this decree. of the inquisition and ordered it to be carried into instant execution without regard to age, sex or condition? This is probably the most concise death warrant that was ever framed Three millions of people, men women and children, were sentenced to the scaffold in three lines and as it was well known that these were not harmless thunders, like some bulls of the Vatican but serious and practical measures, which were to be enforced the horror which they produced may be easily imagined. It was hardly the purpose of government to compel the absolute completion of the wholesale plan in all its length and breadth yet in the horrible times upon

Hooft iv 157 Bor is 21, 216 217 ² bor is 2 6 Hooft is 158 Met ³ Bor Hoofd, Meteren uls sup

which they had fallen, the Netherlanders might be excused for believing that no measure was too monstrous to be fulfilled. At any rate, it was certain that when all were condemned, any might at a moment's warning be carried to the scaffold, and this was precisely the course adopted by the authorities. Under this universal decree the industry of the Blood-Council might now seem superfluous. Why should not these mock prosecutions be dispensed with against individuals, now that a common sentence had swallowed the whole population in one vast grave? Yet it may be supposed that if the exertions of the commissioners and councillors served no other purpose, they at least furnished the government with valuable evidence as to the relative wealth and other circumstances of the individual victims. The leading thought of the government being that persecution, judiciously managed, might fructify into a golden harvest, it was still desirable to persevere in the cause in which already such bloody progress had been made.

And under this new decree, the executions certainly did not slacken. Men in the highest and the humblest positions were daily and hourly dragged to the stake. Alva, in a single letter to Philip, coolly estimated the number of executions which were to take place immediately after the expiration of holy week, "at eight hundred heads." Many a citizen, convicted of a hundred thousand florins and of no other crime, saw himself suddenly tied to a horse's tail, with his hands fastened behind him, and so dragged to the gallows. But although wealth was an unpardonable sin, poverty proved rarely a protection. Reasons sufficient could always be found for dooming the starveling labourer as well as the opulent burgher. To avoid the disturbances created in the streets by the frequent harangues or exhortations addressed to the bystanders by the victims on their way to the scaffold, a new gag was invented. The tongue of each prisoner was screwed into an iron ring, and then seared with a hot iron. The swelling and inflammation which were the immediate result, prevented

[&]quot;Hem (den Koning) opvullende met de hoope van een ander Indie in 't aenslaen der verbeurde goederen opgedaen te hebben; hoewel 't nergens 200 breedt uitviel."—Brandt, i. 475. Batavishe Arcadia, 577. Meteren, 50, et mult. al.

² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 754.

³ Meteren, 50.

the tongue from slipping through the ring and of course effectually precluded all possibility of speech 1

Although the minds of men were not yet prepared for concentrated resolt against the tyranny under which they were languishing it was not possible to suppress all senti ments of humanity, and to tread out every spark of natural Unfortunately, in the bewilderment and misery of this people, the first development of a forcible and or ganized resistance was of a deprayed and malignant character I stensive bands of marauders and highway robbers sprang into existence, who called themselves the Wild Beggars 2 and who wearing the mask and the symbols of a revolutionary faction committed great excesses in many parts of the country, robbing plundering and murdering. Their principal wrath was exercised against religious houses and persons Many monasteries were robbed many clerical persons maimed and maltreated It became a habit to deprive priests of their noses or ears and to tie them to the tails of horses I his was the work of ruffian gangs, whose very existence was engendered out of the social and moral putrescence to which the country was reduced, and who were willing to profit by the deep and universal hatred which was felt against Catholics and monks An edict thundered forth by Alva, authorizing and commanding all persons to slay the wild beggars at sight, without trial or hangman, was of comparatively slight avail An armed force of veterans actively scouring the country was more successful and the freebooters were, for a time, suppressed 3

Weantime the Counts Egmont and Horn had been kept in rigorous confinement at Ohent. Not a warrant had been read or drawn up for their arrest. Not a single preliminary investigation, not the shadow of an information, had preceded the long imprisonment of two men so clevated in rank so distinguished in the public service. After the expiration of two months, however, the Duke condescended to commence a mock process against them. The count

¹ Meteren 54 Hoofd v 173 2 Bor iv 224 Hoofd,

² Bor iv 224 Hoofd, ³ Bor iv 224 Dated 27th March 1568 Bor iv 225 * 15td

⁶ La Deduction de l'Innocence du Comte de Hornes A.D 1568, etc., 35 36. Bor iv 195

^{35 30.} Hor iv i

cillors appointed to this work were Vargas and Del Rio, assisted by Secretary Praets. These persons visited the Admiral on the 10th, 11th, 12th, and 17th of November, and Count Egmont on the 12th, 13th, 14th, and 16th of the same month; requiring them to respond to a long, confused, and rambling collection of interrogatories.1 They were obliged to render these replies in prison, unassisted by any advocates, on penalty of being condemned in contumaciam.² The questions, awkwardly drawn up as they seemed, were yet tortuously and cunningly arranged with a view of entrapping the prisoners into self-contradiction. After this work had been completed, all the papers by which they intended to justify their answers were taken away from them.3 Previously, too, their houses and those of their secretaries, Bakkerzeel and Alonzo de la Loo, had been thoroughly ransacked, and every letter and document which could be found placed in the hands of government. Bakkerzeel, moreover, as already stated, had been repeatedly placed upon the rack, for the purpose of extorting confessions which might implicate his master. These preliminaries and precautionary steps having been taken, the Counts had again been left to their solitude for two months longer. On the 10th January, each was furnished with a copy of the declarations or accusations filed against him by the procurator-general. To these documents, drawn up respectively in sixty-three, and in ninety articles, they were required, within five days' time, without the assistance of an advocate, and without consultation with any human being, to deliver a written answer, on pain, as before, of being proceeded against and condemned by default.⁶

This order was obeyed within nearly the prescribed period, and here, it may be said, their own participation in their trial ceased; while the rest of the proceedings were buried in the deep bosom of the Blood-Council. After their answers had been delivered, and not till then, the prisoners were, by an additional mockery, permitted to employ advocates. These

³ Ibid., 39.

Bor, iv. 190.

² La Déduction, etc., 36, 37.

³ Ibid., 39.

⁴ Foppens, Supp. à l'Hist. de Strada, etc.. i. 24-63.

⁵ Bor, iv. 195. La Déduction, etc., 39-41.

⁶ La Déduction, etc., 42, 43. Compare Vigl. ad Hopp., Ep. 44 and 45.

advocates, however, were allowed only occasional interviews with their clients and always in the presence of certain persons, especially deputed for that purpose by the Duke 1 They were also allowed commissioners to collect evidence nind take depositions but before the witnesses were ready, a purposely premature day, 8th of M13 was fixed upon for declaring the case closed, and not a single tittle of their evidence, personal or documentary, was admitted. Their advocates petitioned for an exhibition of the evidence prepared by government, and were refused. Thus, they were forbidden to use the testimony in their favour, while that which was to be employed against them was kept secret Finally, the proceedings were formally concluded on the 1st of June, and the papers laid before the Duke ' The mass of matter relating to these two monster processes was declared, three days afterwards, to have been examined—a physical impossibility in itself —and judgment was pronounced upon the 4th of June This issue was precipitated by the cam paign of I ouis Nassau in FnesIand, forming a series of im portant events which it will be soon our duty to describe It is previously necessary, however, to add a few words in elucidation of the two mock trials which have been thus briefly sketched

The proceedings had been carried on from first to last, under protest by the prisoners, under a threat of contimacy on the part of the government. Apart from the totally irresponsible and illegal character of the tribunal before which they were summoned—the Blood Council being a private institution of Ma's without pretext or commission—these nobles acknowledged the jurisdiction of but three courts.

As Knights of the Golden Fleece, both claimed the privilege of that order to be tried by its statutes. As a citizen and noble of Brabant, Egmont claimed the protection of the

¹ La Deduction de l'Innocence etc. 42 43

La Deduction etc. 43 44. In the case of Egmont he was defenced "exclus et delaste, and therefore deprived of all right to make defence on the 14th Vay —V Supp. to Strada, 1. 102, 103. Appointment of Alva.

* Bor, 17 239

^{*} Ibid La Deduction etc., 45 46

[·] La Deduction etc , 40, 41

⁻⁻⁻⁻

"Joyeuse Entrée," a constitution which had been sworn to by Philip and his ancestors, and by Philip more amply than by all his ancestors. As a member and Count of the Holy Roman Empire, the Admiral claimed to be tried by his peers, the electors and princes of the realm.

The Countess Egmont, since her husband's arrest, and the confiscation of his estates before judgment, had been reduced to a life of poverty as well as agony. With her eleven children, all of tender age, she had taken refuge in a convent. Frantic with despair, more utterly desolate, and more deeply wronged than high-born lady had ever been before, she left no stone unturned to save her husband from his fate, or at least to obtain for him an impartial and competent tribunal. She addressed the Duke of Alva, the King, the Emperor, her brother the Elector Palatine, and many leading Knights of the Fleece.2 The Countess Dowager of Horn, both whose sons now lay in the jaws of death, occupied herself also with the most moving appeals to the same high personages.3 No pains were spared to make the triple plea to the jurisdiction valid. The leading Knights of the Fleece, Mansfeld, whose loyalty was unquestioned, and Hoogstraaten, although himself an outlaw, called upon the King of Spain to protect the statutes of the illustrious order of which he was the chief.4 The estates of Brabant, upon the petition of Sabina, Countess Egmont, that they would take to heart the privileges of the province, so that her husband might enjoy that protection of which the meanest citizen in the land could not be justly deprived, addressed a feeble and trembling protest to Alva, and enclosed to him the lady's petition.³ The Emperor, on behalf of Count Horn, wrote personally to Philip, to claim for him a trial before the members of the realm.6

¹ Bor, iv. 195. ² *Ibid.*, iv. 188, 189, 190.

³ La Déduction, etc., 605-642. Bor, ubi sup.

¹ La Déduction, etc., ubi sup.

⁵ Bor, iv. 189. Foppens, Supp. de Strada, i. 16 22.

⁶ The letter is published in the Déduction de l'Innocence, etc., 609. It is dated 20th October, 1567. The Emperor claims for the Admiral, as member of the Empire, a trial before the electors and princes of the holy realm, speaks of his distinguished services, and implores his release from a confinement "the reasons for which are entirely concealed and unknown."

It was all in vain The conduct of Philip and his Viceroy coincided in spirit with the honest brutality of Vargas "Non curamus testros privilegios, summed up the whole of the proceedings Non curamus testros privilegios had been the unanswerable reply to every constitutional argument which had been made against tyranny since Philip mounted his father's throne. It was now the only response deemed necessary to the crowd of petitions in favour of the County, whether they proceeded from sources humble or august Personally, the King remained silent as the grave. In writing to the Duke of Alva, he observed that "the Emperor, the Dukes of Bayaria and Lorraine, the Duchess and the Duchess Downger, had written to him many times, and in the most pressing manner, in favour of the Counts Horn and Egmont" He added, that he had made no reply to them, nor to other knights of the Pleece who had implored him to respect the statutes of the order, and he begged Alva "to hasten the process as fast as possible' To an earnest autograph letter, in which the Emperor, on the and of March, 1568 made a last effort to save the illustrious prisoners, he replied, that 'the whole world would at last approve his conduct, but that, at any rate he would not act differently, even if he should risk the loss of the provinces, and if the sky should fall on his head? 1

But little heed was pald to the remonstrances in behalf of the imperial courts or the privileges of Brabant were but cobweb impediments which, indeed, had long been brushed away President Vighus was even pathetic on the subject of Madame Egmont's petition to the Council of Bribint It was so bitter, he said, that the Duke was slightly annoyed, and took it ill that the royal servants in that council should have his Majesty's interests so little at heart 2. It seemed indecent in the eyes of the excellent I risian, that a wife pleading for her husband, a mother for her eleven children, so soon to be fatherless, should indulge in strong language!

The statutes of the Fleece were obstacles somewhat more senous. As however, Alva had come to the Nether

¹ Correspondance de Hulippe II , ii 762. See also Ibid , 738 739 746 750. Vigi al Holp, Epist xxiv 400.

lands 1 pledged to accomplish the destruction of these two nobles, as soon as he should lay his hands upon them, it was only a question of form, and even that question was, after a little reflection, unceremoniously put aside.

To the petitions in behalf of the two Counts, therefore, that they should be placed in the friendly keeping of the order, and be tried by its statutes, the Duke replied, peremptorily, that he had undertaken the cognizance of this affair by commission of his Majesty, as sovereign of the land, not as head of the Golden Fleece, that he should carry it through as it had been commenced, and that the Counts should discontinue presentations of petitions upon this point.2

In the embarrassment created by the stringent language of these statutes, Doctor Viglius found an opportunity to make himself very useful. Alva had been turning over the laws and regulations of the order, but could find no loophole. The President, however, came to his rescue, and announced it as his legal opinion that the Governor need concern himself no further on the subject, and that the code of the Fleece offered no legal impediment to the process.3 Alva immediately wrote to communicate this opinion to Philip, adding, with great satisfaction, that he should immediately make it known to the brethren of the order, a step which was the more necessary because Egmont's advocate had been making great trouble with these privileges, and had been protesting at every step of the proceedings.4 In what manner the learned President argued these troublesome statutes out of the way, has nowhere appeared; but he completely reinstated himself in favour, and the King wrote to thank him for his legal exertions.

It was now boldly declared that the statutes of the Fleece did not extend to such crimes as those with which the prisoners were charged. Alva, moreover, received an especial

¹ V. Gachard. Notice sur le Conseil des Troubles, 13, 14. Wagenaer, Vaderl. Hist. Deel, vi. 278. Hoofd, iv.

² Bor, iv. 189. La Déduction, etc., 642. Suppl. à l'Hist. de Strada,

^{3 &}quot;La chose ne laisse rien à désirer." — Correspondance de Philippe II., ii., 712.

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 712.

patent, ante-dated eight or nine months by which Philip em powered him to proceed against all persons implicated in the troubles, and particularly against Knights of the Golden Fleece 1

It is superfluous to observe that these were merely the arbitrary acts of a despot It is hardly necessary to criticise such proceedings. The execution of the nobles had been settled before Alva left Spain. As they were inhabitants of a constitutional country, it was necessary to stride over the constitution As they were Knights of the Heece it was necessary to set aside the statutes of the order. The Nether land constitutions seemed so entirely annihilated already, that they could hardly be considered obstacles but the order of the I leece was an august little republic of which Philip was the hereditary chief of which emperors, kings and great seigniors were the citizens. Tyranny might be embarrassed by such subtle and golden filments as these even while it crished through municipal charters as if they had been reeds and bulrushes. Nevertheless the Kings course was taken Although the thirteenth, fourteenth and fifteenth chapters of the order expressly provided for the trial and punishment of brethren who had been guilty of rebellion, heresy, or treason,² and although the eleventh chapter, perpetual and immutable, of additions to that constitution by the Imperor Charles, conferred on the order

Fleece bearing upon these questions with the addition of copio's citations from the text of the 'Dojeuse Entree —Ip- I an Auth Statket ext de Hist run P Bor, 1° 3° 'See the text of this citater of a Idinony in the pamphlet above

er of The manner of proceeding against a knight is therein minutely

presented

the arrest required a warrant signed by at lea t six knights and he was afterward to be kert, not in tinson but in the amade company of the said Order (fainable compagnie du dit ordre) while the process according to the proper form was taking its course. These tletails are curious. The cause of the Golden Fleece is not one of th versal interest but the stringent and imperious character of the atutes, which were it us holdly and contempriously violated seemed a turner which would have rous ed even the attacks of the des rover of

Correspondance de Philippe II , 1 553 705 ant u 731

exclusive jurisdiction over all crimes whatever committed by the knights, yet it was coolly proclaimed by Alva, that the crimes for which the Admiral and Egmont had been arrested were beyond the powers of the tribunal.

So much for the plea to the jurisdiction. It is hardly worth while to look any further into proceedings which were initiated and brought to a conclusion in the manner already Nevertheless, as they were called a process, a single glance at the interior of that mass of documents can hardly be superfluous.

The declaration against Count Horn, upon which, supported by invisible witnesses, he was condemned, was in the nature of a narrative. It consisted in a rehearsal of circumstances. some true and some fictitious, with five inferences. These five inferences amounted to five crimes—high treason, rebellion, conspiracy, misprision of treason, and breach of trust.1 The proof of these crimes was evolved, in a dim and misty manner, out of a purposely confused recital. No events, however, were recapitulated which have not been described in the course of this history. Setting out with a general statement, that the Admiral, the Prince of Orange, Count Egmont, and other lords, had organized a plot to expel his Majesty from the Netherlands, and to divide the provinces among themselves, the declaration afterwards proceeded to particulars. Ten of its sixty-three articles were occupied with the Cardinal Granvelle, who, by an absurd affectation, was never directly named, but called "a certain personage—a principal personage—a grand personage, of his Majesty's state council."2 None of the offences committed against him were forgotten: the 11th of March letter, the fool's-cap, the livery, were reproduced in the most violent colours, and the cabal against the minister was quietly assumed to constitute treason against the monarch.

othe Brabant constitution. Philip had no more difficulty in violating his oath as head of the Fleece than he had as Duke of Brabant. charter of the "Joyeuse Entrée" and its annihilation deserve a memorable place in the history of constitutional liberty. The article xvii. alone, was a sufficient shield to protect not only a grand seignior like Egmont, but the humblest citizen of the province.-Deduction de l'Innocence, etc., 581-590.

La Déduction, etc., 72, 73.
Interrogatories of Count Horn, in Bor, iv. 190 and seq.

The Admiral, it was further charged had advised and consented to the fusion of the finance and pmy councils with that of state, a measure which was clearly treasonable. He had, moreover, held mitrices with the Prince of Oringe, with Egmont and other nobles at Breda and at Hoogstraten at which meetings the confideracy and the petition had been engendered. That petition had been the cause of all the exils which had swept the land. It had scandalously injured the king by affirming that the inquisition was a tyrann to

In the consultation at the state-council which ensued both he and the Prince were for leaving Brussels at once while Count Lignont expressed an intention of going to Aix to drink the waters \[\text{\text{C}} \text{Count Lignont sappearance} \(\text{(proceded)} \] this indictment against another indi idual) exhibited not a single sign of sickness 1 The Admiral had moreover drunk the torst of "Vitent les evens on various occasions, at the Culemberg House banquet at the private table of the Prince of Orange, at a supper at the monastery of Saint Bernard's, at a dinner given by Burgomaster Straalen. He had sane tioned the treaties with the relicls at Duffel, by "thich he had clearly rendered himself guilty of high treason He had held on intersice with Oringe, I gmont, and Hoogstraaten, at Denremonde, for the treasonable purpose of arranging a levy of troops to present his Majesty's entrance into the Nether lands He had refused to come to Brussels at the request of the Duchess of Parma, when the rebels were about to present the petition. He had written to his secretary that he was thenceforth resolved to serve neither king nor Kuser He had received from one Paffin, with marks of approbation a paper, stating that the assembling of the states general was the only remedy for the troubles in the land.

¹ Cha pes against Count Horn art. vv. lor iv 191.—The same with occur also in the charges against Court. Ignont.—Proceed Lemont art. s.t. — Casor de proposer par jurement que linquisi. Dim cont ent en soit yranne en impassant toute burlaire qui soit jurollies infames et indi gnes de étre penser — Suity de Sirada. L. 31. Charges against (our Illom art. sat.).

He had repeatedly affirmed that the inquisition and edicts ought to be repeated.

On his arrival at Tournay, in August, 1566, the people had cried "Vivent les gueux;" a proof that he liked the cry. All his transactions at Tournay, from first to last, had been criminal. He had tolerated reformed preaching, he had forbidden Catholies and Protestants to molest each other, he had omitted to execute heretics, he had allowed the religionists to erect an edifice for public worship outside the walks. had said, at the house of Prince Espinoy, that if the King should come into the provinces with force, he would oppose him with 15,000 troops. He had said, if his brother Montigny should be detained in Spain, he would march to his rescue at the head of 50,000 men whom he had at his command. He had on various occasions declared that "men should live according to their consciences"-as if divine and human laws were dead, and men, like wild beasts, were to follow all their lusts and desires. Lastly, he had encouraged the rebellion in Valenciennes.

Of all these crimes and misdeeds the procurator declared himself sufficiently informed, and the aforesaid defendant

entirely, commonly, and publicly defamed.2

Wherefore, that officer terminated his declaration by claiming "that the cause should be concluded summarily, and without figure or form of process; and that therefore, by his Excellency or his sub-delegated judges, the aforesaid defendant should be declared to have in diverse ways committed high treason, should be degraded from his dignities, and should be condemned to death, with confiscation of all his estates."

The Admiral thus peremptorily summoned, within five days, without assistance, without documents, and from the walls of a prison, to answer to these charges, solus ex vinculis causam dicere, undertook his task with the boldness of innocence. He protested, of course, to the jurisdiction, and complained of the want of an advocate, not in order to excuse any weakness in his defence, but only any inelegance in his statement. He then proceeded flatly to deny some of the facts, to admit

Charges against Count Horn, v. Bor, iv. 190-195.

² Ibid. Bor, iv. 195. ⁴ Ibid. La Déduction, etc., 57, 68.

others, and to repel the whole treasonable inference 1. His answer in all escent al were ate at a mahant & ma by the evidence

till after his deat

He denied that he had ever plotted against his King to whom he had ever been attached, but admitted that he had desired the removal of Granvelle to whom he had always been hostile. He had however, been an open and avowed enemy to the Cardinal, and had been engaged in no secret conspiracy against his character or against his life? He denied that the livers (for which however, he was not responsible) had been intended to indicule the Cardinal but asserted that it was intended to afford an example of economy to an extravagant nobility 1 He had met Orange and Egmont at Breda and Hoogstraaten and had been glad to do so for he had been long separated from them. These interviews, however, had been social not political, for good cheer and merrymaking, not for conspiracy and treason. He had never had any connection with the confederacy, he had neither advised nor protected the pention but, on the contrary, after hearing of the contemplated movement, had written to give notice thereof to the Duchess He was in no manner allied with Brederode, but, on the contrary, for various reasons, was with precierous, out, on the contrary, for various reasons, was not upon frendly terms with him. He had not entired his house since his return from Spain. He had not been a party to the dinner at Culemberg House. Upon that day he had dinned with the Prince of Orange, with whom he was lodging, and, after dinner, they had both gone together to visit Various following the processing of the processing of the processing the processing of the pro feld who was confined with an inflamed eye. There they had met I gmont and the three had proceeded together to Culem berg House in order to bring away Hoogstraaten, whom the confederates had compelled to dine with them and also to warn the nobles not to commit themselves by extravagant and suspicious excesses. They had remained in the house but a few minutes, during which time the company had insisted upon their drinking a single cup to the toast of ' I nert le

Answer of Count Horn to the charges of the procureur general in * Pal. art v | bor 19"

¹ H J, att xx1 , 109 200.

roy et les gueux." They had then retired, taking with them Hoogstraaten, and all thinking that they had rendered a service to the government by their visit, instead of having made themselves liable to a charge of treason.1 As to the cries of "Vivent les gueux" at the tables of Orange, of the Abbot of Saint Bernard, and at other places, those words had been uttered by simple, harmless fellows; and as he considered the table a place of freedom, he had not felt himself justified in rebuking the manners of his associates, particularly in houses where he was himself but a guest.2 for committing treason at the Duffel meeting, he had not been there at all.3 He thanked God that, at that epoch, he had been absent from Brussels, for had he, as well as Orange and Egmont, been commissioned by the Duchess to arrange those difficult matters, he should have considered it his duty to do as they did.4 He had never thought of levying troops against his Majesty. The Denremonde meeting had been held to consult upon four subjects: the affairs of Tournay; the intercepted letters of the French Ambassador, Alava; the letter of Montigny, in which he warned his brother of the evil impression which the Netherland matters were making in Spain; and the affairs of Antwerp, from which city the Prince of Orange found it necessary at that moment to withdraw.5 With regard to his absence from Brussels, he stated that he had kept away from the Court because he was ruined. He was deeply in debt, and so complete was his embarrassment, that he had been unable in Antwerp to raise 1,000 crowns upon his property, even at an interest of one hundred per cent.6 So far from being able to levy troops, he was hardly able to pay for his daily bread. With regard to his transactions at Tournay, he had, throughout them all, conformed himself to the instructions of Madame de Parma. As to the cry of "Vivent les gueux," he should not have cared at that moment if the populace had cried Vive Comte Horn, for his thoughts were then occupied with more substantial matters. He had gone thither under a special commission from the Duchess, and had acted under instructions

Answer of Count Horn, art. xxii.

² Ibid., art. xxiv., xxv., 200.

⁴ Ibid., art. xxx. 5 Ibid., art. xxxiv.

³ Ibid., art. xxvi.

⁵ *Ibid.*, art. xxxiii.

Ans

daily received from her own hand. He had, by her orders, effected a temporary compromise between the two religious parties on the basis of the Duffel treaty. He had permitted the public preaching to continue, but had not introduced it for the first time. He had allowed temples to be built out side the gates, but it was by express command of Madame, as he could prove by her letters. She had even reproved him before the council, because the work had not been accomplished with sufficient despatch. With regard to his alleged threat, that he would oppose the King's entrance with 15 000 men, he answered with astonishing simplicity, that he did not remember making any such observation, but it was impossible for a man to retain in his mind all the nonsense which he might occasionally utter 2 The honest Admiral thought that his poverty, already pleaded, was so notorious, that the charge was not worthy of a serious answer He also tracted the observation which he was charged with having made, relative to his marching to Spain with 50,000 men to rescue Montigny, as "frivolous and ridiculous " He had no nower to ruse a hundred men Moreover he had rejoiced at Montigny's detention, for he had thought that to be out of the Netherlands was to be out of harms way ' On the whole, he claimed that in all those transactions of his which might be considered anti Catholic, he had been governed en tirely by the instructions of the Regent, and by her Accord with the nobles That Accord, as she had repeatedly stated to him, was to be kept sacred until his Majesty, by advice of the states general, should otherwise ordain

I inally, he observed that law was not his vocation. He was no pettlegger, but he had endeavoured loyally to conform himself to the broad and general punciples of honour, justice, and truth. In a very few and simple words, he begged his judges to have regard to his deeds, and to a life of loyal service. If he had erred occasionally in those times of tumult, his intentions had ever been faithful and honour able.

kleine proposten."-

· Ibid

[&]quot; Ibid , fairm, but particularly art is , 206.
" Ibid Conclusion, 208, 209.

The charges against Count Egmont were very similar to those against Count Horn. The answers of both defendants were nearly identical. Interrogations thus addressed to two different persons, as to circumstances which had occurred long before, could not have been thus separately, secretly, but simultaneously answered in language substantially the same, had not that language been the words of truth. Egmont was accused generally of plotting with others to expel the King from the provinces, and to divide the territory among themselves. Through a long series of ninety articles, he was accused of conspiring against the character and life of Cardinal Granvelle. He was the inventor, it was charged, of the fool's-cap livery. He had joined in the letters to the King, demanding the prelate's removal. He had favoured the fusion of the three councils. He had maintained that the estates-general ought to be forthwith assembled, that otherwise the debts of his Majesty and of the country could never be paid, and that the provinces would go to the French, to the Germans, or to the devil.1 He had asserted that he would not be instrumental in burning forty or fifty thousand men, in order that the inquisition and the edicts might be sustained.2 He had declared that the edicts were rigorous. He had advised the Duchess to moderate them, and remove the inquisition, saying that these measures, with a pardon general, in addition, were the only means of quieting the country. He had advised the formation of the confederacy, and promised to it his protection and favour. He had counselled the presentation of the petition. He had arranged all these matters, in consultation with the other nobles, at the interviews at Breda and Hoogstraaten. He had refused the demand of Madame de Parma, to take arms in her defence. He had expressed his intention, at a most critical moment, of going to the baths of Aix for his health, although his personal appearance gave no indication of any malady whatever.3 He had countenanced and counselled the proceedings of the rebel nobles at Saint Trond. He had made an accord with those of "the religion" at

¹ Interrogatoires de Comte'd'Egmont, 315. ² Ibid. ³ Procès d'Egmont, art. xx. Supp. Strada, i. 34. This remark of Egmont's was deemed so treasonable that, as already stated, it was brought most superfluously into the indictment against Horn.

Ghent, Bruges, and other places. He had advised the Duchess to grant a pardon to those who had taken up arms. He had maintained in common with the Prince of Orange, at a session of the state council that if Madame should leave Brussels they would assemble the states general of their own authority, and raise a force of forty thousand men 1 He had plotted treason and made arrangements for the levy of troops at the interview at Denremonde, with Horn Hoog structen, and the Prince of Orange. He had taken under his protection on the 20th April 1566, the confederacy of the rebels had promised that they should never be mo lested, for the future on account of the inquisition or the edicts, and that so long as they kept within the terms of the Petition and the Compromise, he would defend them with his own person. He had granted liberty of preaching outside the wills in many cities within his government had said repeatedly, that if the king desired to introduce the inquisition into the Netherlands, he would sell all his property and remove to another land, thus declaring with how much contempt and detestation he regarded the said inquisition? He had winked at all the proceedings of the sectiones He had permitted the cry of " Prient les queux at his table. He had assisted at the banquet at Culemberg House 3

I has ever, the principal points in the long act of accusa tion. I she the Admiral Ligimont admitted many of the facts, and flatly denied the rest. He indiginantly repelled the possibility of a treasonable inference from any of, or all, his deeds. He had certainly desired the removal of Gran celle, for he believed that the Kings service would profit by his recall. He replied, almost in the same terms as the Admiral had done, to the change concerning the livery, and asserted that its principal object had been to set an example of economy. The fool seap and bells had been changed to a bundle of arrows, in consequence of a certain remover thick beame rife in Brussell, and in obedience to an ordinance of Madame de Parma. As to the assembling of the states general the fusion of the councils, the moderation of

In errogatores 314. I roces d be nont 65

Proces 11 g nont 376
Interrogato res d Lemont 377 118 Proces d F 24-62

the edicts, he had certainly been in favour of these measures, which he considered to be wholesome and lawful, not mischievons or treasonable.1 He had certainly maintained that the edicts were rigorous, and had advised the Duchess, under the perilous circumstances of the country, to grant a temporary modification until the pleasure of his Majesty could be known. With regard to the Compromise, he had advised all his friends to keep out of it, and many in consequence had kept out of it.2 As to the presentation of the petition, he had given Madame de Parma notice thereof, so soon as he had heard that such a step was contemplated.3 He used the same language as had been employed by Horn with regard to the interview at Breda and Hoogstraatenthat they had been meetings of "good cheer" and good fellowship. He had always been at every moment at the command of the Duchess, save when he had gone to Flanders and Artois to suppress the tumults, according to her express orders. He had no connection with the meeting of the nobles at Saint Trond. He had gone to Duffel as special envoy from the Duchess, to treat with certain plenipotentiaries appointed at the Saint Trond meeting.5 He had strictly conformed to the letter of instructions, drawn up by the Duchess, which would be found among his papers, but he had never promised the nobles his personal aid or protection. With regard to the Denremonde meeting, he gave almost exactly the same account as Horn had given. The Prince, the Admiral, and himself, had conversed between a quarter past eleven and dinner time, which was twelve o'clock, on various matters, particularly upon the King's dissatisfaction with recent events in the Netherlands, and upon a certain letter from the ambassador Alava in Paris to the Duchess of Parma. He had, however, expressed his opinion to Madame that the letter was a forgery. He had permitted public preaching in certain cities, outside the walls, where it had already been established, because this was in accordance with the treaty which Madame had made at Duffel, which she had ordered him honourably to maintain. He had certainly winked at the religious exercises of the Reformers, be-

² Ibid., 317. ¹ Interrogatoires, 312. ² Ibid. 1bid., 319. Procès d'Egmont, 78. ³ Ibid., 330.

³ Ibid., 31S. ⁵ Ibid., 330, 331.

⁷ Ibid., 326, 327.

cause he had been expressly commanded to do so, and because the government at that time was not provided with troops to suppress the new religion by force. He related the visit of Horn, Orange, and himself to Culemberg House. at the memorable banquet, in almost the same words which the Admiral had used He had done all in his power to prevent Madame from leaving Brussels, in which effort he had been successful, and from which much good had resulted to the country. He had never recommended that a pardon should be granted to those who had taken up arms, but, on the contrary, had advised their chastisement, as had appeared in his demeanour towards the rebels at Ostrawell, Tournay, and Valenciennes He had never permitted the cry of "I'ment les gueux" at his own table, nor encouraged it in his presence anywhere else

Such were the leading features in these memorable cases of what was called high treason. Trial there was none The tribunal was incompetent, the prisoners were without advocates, the government evidence was concealed, the testimony for the defence was excluded, and the cause was finally decided before a thousandth part of its ments could have been placed under the eyes of the judge who gave the sentence 2

But it is almost puerile to speak of the matter in the terms The case had been settled

the prisoners in Brussels blank, had been brought The proceedings were a

mockery, and, so far as any effect upon public opinion was concerned, might as well have been omitted. If the gentlemen had been shot in the courtyard of Jassy House, by decree of a drum-head court martial, an hour after their arrest, the

Interrogatories, 327 346 Proces d'Egmont, 74, 75, 399
La Deduction de l'Innocence du Comte de Homes, 57, 58, 59
Hooff, v 16S, who relates the fact on the authority of Simon de

rights of the provinces and the sentiments of humanity would not have been outraged more utterly. Every constitutional and natural right was violated from first to last. This certainly was not a novelty. Thousands of obscure individuals, whose relations and friends were not upon thrones and in high places, but in booths and cellars, and whose fate, therefore, did not send a shudder of sympathy throughout Europe, had already been sacrificed by the Blood tribunal. country was simply under martial law—the entire population under sentence of death. The whole civil power was in Alva's hand; the whole responsibility in Alva's breast. Neither the most ignoble nor the most powerful could lift their heads in the desolation which was sweeping the country. This was now proved beyond peradventure. A miserable cobbler or weaver might be hurried from his shop to the scaffold, invoking the jus de non evocando till he was gagged, but the Emperor would not stoop from his throne, nor electors palatine and powerful nobles rush to his rescue; but in behalf of these prisoners the most august hands and voices of Christendom had been lifted up at the foot of Philip's throne; and their supplications had proved as idle as the millions of tears and death-cries which had been shed or uttered in the lowly places of the land. It was obvious, then, that all intercession must thereafter be useless. Philip was fanatically impressed with his mission. His viceroy was possessed by his loyalty as by a demon. In this way alone, that conduct which can never be palliated may at least be comprehended. It was Philip's enthusiasm to embody the wrath of God against heretics. It was Alva's enthusiasm to embody the wrath of Philip. Narrow-minded, isolated, see ing only that section of the world which was visible through the loop-hole of the fortress in which Nature had imprisoned him for life, placing his glory in unconditional obedience to his superior, questioning nothing, doubting nothing, fearing nothing, the viceroy accomplished his work of hell with all the tranquillity of an angel. An iron will, which clove through every obstacle; adamantine fortitude, which sustained without flinching a mountain of responsibility sufficient to crush a common nature, were qualities which, united to his fanatical obedience, made him a man for Philip's work such as could not have been found again in the world.

Fine case, then, was tried before a tribunal which was not only incompetent, under the laws of the land, but not even a court of justice in any philosophical or legal sense. Con stitutional and municipal law were not more outraged in its creation, than all national and natural maxims.

The reader who has followed step by stop the career of two distinguished victims, through the perilus days of Margaret's administration, is sufficiently aware of the amount of treason with which they are chargeable. It would be an insult to common sense for us to set forth, in full, the in justice of their sentence. Both were guiltless towards the crown, while the lands of one, on the contary, were deeply dyed in the blood of the people. This truth was so self cyident, that even a member of the Blood Council, Pierre Arsens, president of Artos, addressed an elaborate memorito the Duke of Alva, criticising the case according to the rules of law, and maintaining that Egmont, instead of deserving punishment, was entitled to a signal reward.

So much for the famous treason of Counts Egmont and Horn, so far as regards the history of the proceedings and the ments of the case The last act of the tragedy was precipitated by occurrences which must be now narrated

The Prince of Orange had at last thrown down the gaunt let. Proscribed, outlawed, with his Netherland property confiscated, and his eldest child kidnapped, he saw sufficient personal justification for at last stepping into the lists, the avowed champion of a nation's wrongs. Whether the revolution was to be successful, or to be disastrously crushed, whether its result would be to place him upon a throne or a scaffold, he could not possibly foresee. The Reformation, in which he took both a political and a religious interest, might prove a sufficient lever in his hands for the overthrow of Spanish power in the Netherlands The inquisition might roll back upon his country and himself, crushing them for The chances seemed with the inquisition Spaniards, under the first chieftain in Europe, were encamped and entrenched in the provinces. The Huguenots had just made their fatal peace in France, to the prophetic dissatis faction of Coligny 2 The leading men of liberal sentiments

in the Netherlands were captive or in exile. All were embarrassed by the confiscations which, in anticipation of sentence, had severed the nerves of war. The country was terror-stricken, abject, forswearing its convictions, and imploring only life. At this moment William of Orange reappeared upon the scene.

He replied to the act of condemnation, which had been pronounced against him in default, by a published paper, of moderate length and great eloquence. He had repeatedly offered to place himself, he said, upon trial before a competent court. As a Knight of the Fleece, as a member of the Holy Roman Empire, as a sovereign prince, he could acknowledge no tribunal save the chapters of the knights or of the realm. The Emperor's personal intercession with Philip had been employed in vain, to obtain the adjudication of his case by either. It would be both death and degradation on his part to acknowledge the jurisdiction of the infamous Council of Blood. He scorned, he said, to plead his cause "before he knew not what base knaves, not fit to be the valets of his companions and himself."

He appealed therefore to the judgment of the world. He published not an elaborate argument, but a condensed and scathing statement of the outrages which had been practised upon him.3 He denied that he had been a party to the Compromise. He denied that he had been concerned in the Request, although he denounced with scorn the tyranny which could treat a petition to government as an act of open war against the sovereign. He spoke of Granvelle with unmeasured wrath. He maintained that his own continuance in office had been desired by the Cardinal, in order that his personal popularity might protect the odious designs of the government. The edicts, the inquisition, the persecution, the new bishoprics, had been the causes of the tumults. concluded with a burst of indignation against Philip's conduct toward himself. The monarch had forgotten his services and those of his valiant ancestors. He had robbed him of honour, he had robbed him of his son-both dearer

¹ Hoofd, iv. 159. De Thou, v. 362, 363, 369.

² Apologie d'Orange, 64, 65. ³ Bor, iv. 227; and the text of the Justification in Byv. Aut. Stukk., i. 3, et seq.

to him than life By thus doing he had degraded himself more than he had injured him, for he had broken all his

royal oaths and obligations 1

The priper was published early in the summer of 1568. At about the same time, the Count of Hoogstraaten published a similar reply to the act of condemnation with which he had been visited. He defended himself mainly upon the ground that all the crimes of which he stood arraigned had been committed in obedience to the literal instructions of the Duchess of Parma, after her Accord with the confederates.

The Prince now made the greatest possible evertions to ruse funds and troops He had many meetings with in fluential individuals in Germany. The Protestant princes, particularly the Landgrave of Hesse and the Elector of Savons, promised him assistance He brought all his powers of cloquence and of diplomacy to make friends for the cause which he had now boldly espoused. The high born Demosthence electrified large assemblies by his indignant in vectives against the Spanish Philip. He excelled even his royal antagonist in the industrious subtlety with which he began to form a thousand combinations. He had high cor respondents and higher hopes in England He was already secretly or openly in league with half the sovereigns of Germany The Huguenots of France looked upon him as their friend and on Louis of Nassau as their inevitable chieftain, were Coligiij destined to fall 'He was in league with all the exiled and outlawed nobles of the Nether lands By his orders recruits were daily enlisted, with out sound of drum He granted a commission to his brother Louis, one of the most skilful and audacious soldiers of the age, than whom the revolt could not have found a more determined partisan, nor the Prince a more futhful licutenant

This commission, which was dated Dillenburg, 6th April, 1568, was a somewhat startling document. It authorized

¹ Byr Aut Stukk , ubi suf , Bor 1 3 sqq ² Bor, 12 224 ² Itoofd, v 161 163 Bentivogho, lib. 12 62-64

De Thou vi. 36

Hoofi, v 163, 164 Wagenaer Vaderl. I

²⁶⁸

the Count to levy troops and wage war against Philip, strictly for Philip's good. The fiction of loyalty certainly never went further. The Prince of Orange made known to all "to whom those presents should come," that through the affection which he bore the gracious King, he purposed to expel his Majesty's forces from the Netherlands. show our love for the monarch and his hereditary provinces," so ran the commission, "to prevent the desolation hanging over the country by the ferocity of the Spaniards, to maintain the privileges sworn to by his Majesty and his predecessors, to prevent the extirpation of all religion by the edicts, and to save the sons and daughters of the land from abject slavery, we have requested our dearly-beloved brother Louis Nassau to enrol as many troops as he shall think necessary."1

Van den Berg, Hoogstraaten, and others, provided with similar powers, were also actively engaged in levying troops,2 but the right hand of the revolt was Count Louis, as his illustrious brother was its head and heart. Two hundred thousand crowns was the sum which the Prince considered absolutely necessary for organizing the army with which he contemplated making an entrance into the Netherlands. Half this amount had been produced by the cities of Antwerp, Amsterdam, Leyden, Harlem, Middelburg, Flushing, and other towns, as well as by refugee merchants in England. The other half was subscribed by individuals. The Prince himself contributed 50,000 florins, Hoogstraaten 30,000, Louis of Nassau 10,000, Culemberg 30,000, Van den Berg 30,000, the Dowager-countess Horn 10,000, and other persons in less proportion.3 Count John of Nassau also pledged his estates to raise a large sum for the cause. The Prince himself sold all his jewels, plate, tapestry, and other furniture, which were of almost regal magnificence. The splendour of his station has been sufficiently depicted. His fortune, his family, his life, his children, all were now ventured, not with the recklessness of a gambler, but with the calm conviction of a statesman.

² Ibid., iv. 234.

¹ Bor, iv. 233, 234.
² Ibid., iv. 234.
³ Confession of the Seigneur de Villars. Vide Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 757.

⁴ Hoofd, v. 163.

A private and most audacious attempt to secure the person of Alva and the possession of Brussels had failed 1 He was soon, however, ealled upon to employ all his energies against the open warfare which was now commenced

According to the plan of the Prince, the provinces were to be attacked simultaneously, in three places, by his heu tenants, while he himself was waiting in the neighbourhood of Cleves, ready for a fourth assault An army of Hugue-nots and refugees was to enter Artois upon the frontier of France, a second under Hoogstraaten, was to operate be tween the Rhine and the Meuse, while Louis of Nassau was to raise the standard of revolt in Friesland 2

The two first adventures were destined to be signally un successful A force under Seigneur de Cocqueville, latest of all, took the field towards the end of June. It entered the bailwick of Hesdin in Artois, was immediately driven across the frontier by the Count de Roeulx, and cut to pieces at St. Valery by Maréchal de Cossè, governor of Picardy This action was upon the 18th July Of the 2,500 men who com posed the expedition, scarce 300 escaped The few Nether landers who were taken prisoners were given to the Spanish

government, and, of course, hanged a

The force under the Seigneur de Villars was earlier under arms, and the sooner defeated This luckless gentleman, who had replaced the Count of Hoogstraaten, crossed the frontier of Juliers, in the neighbourhood of Maestricht, by the 20th April His force, infantry and cavalry, amounted to nearly three thousand men The object of the enterprise was to raise the country, and if possible, to obtain a foot hold by securing an important city. Roermonde was the first point of attack, but the attempts, both by stratagem and by force, to secure the town, were fruitless. The citizens were not ripe for revolt, and refused the army ad mittance. While the invaders were, therefore, endeavouring to fire the gates, they were driven off by the approach of a Spanish force

Meteren 51 Hoofd v 163 164 Mendoza, n. 39 40
 Bor n 233 244 Hoofd v 164, 165. Mendoza, f 39 et u,
 Bor n 238. Hoofd 164. Mendoza, Gachard, Correspondence du Duc d'Albe sur Hrussion du Comte L. de Aussau en F c pp. 10, 11

The Duke, so soon as the invasion was known to him, had acted with great promptness. Don Sancho de Lodroño and Don Sancho de Avila, with five vanderas tof Spanish infaulty, three companies of cavalry, and about three hundred pikemen under Count Eberstein, a force amounting in all to about 1,600 picked troops, had been at once despatched against Villars. The rebel chieftain, abandoning his attempt upon Roermonde, advanced towards Erkelens. Upon the 25th April, between Erkelens and Dalem, the Spaniards came up with him, and gave him battle. Villars lost all his cavalry and two vanderas of his infantry in the encounter. With the remainder of his force, amounting to 1,300 men, he effected his retreat in good order to Dalem. Here he rapidly entrenched himself. At four in the afternoon, Sancho de Lodroño, at the head of 600 infantry, reached the spot. He was unable to restrain the impetuosity of his men, although the cavalry under Avila, prevented by the difficult nature of the narrow path through which the rebels had retreated, had not yet arrived. The enemy were two to one, and were fortified; nevertheless, in half an hour the entrenchments were carried, and almost every man in the patriot army put to the sword. Villars himself, with a handful of soldiers, escaped into the town, but was soon afterwards taken prisoner with all his followers. He sullied the cause in which he was engaged by a base confession of the designs formed by the Prince of Orange-a treachery, however, which did not save him from the scaffold. In the course of this day's work, the Spanish lost twenty men, and the rebels nearly 2,000. This portion of the liberating forces had been thus disastrously defeated on the eve of the entrance of Count Louis into Friesland."

As early as the 22nd April, Alva had been informed, by the lieutenant-governor of that province, that the beggars were mustering in great force in the neighbourhood of Embden. It was evident that an important enterprise was about to be attempted.3 Two days afterwards, Louis of Nassau entered

A vandera in Alva's army amounted, on an average, to 170 men.

² Bor, iv. 234. Hoofd, v. 164. Mendoza, 40-46. Gachard, Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 7, 8. Cabrera, lib. viii. c. i. 483, 484. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 756, 757.

³ Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 13-16.

the provinces, attended by a small body of troops. His banners blazed with patriotic inscriptions. Nine and nunquam, Reapterare and mori, were the watchwords of his desperate adventure: "Freedom for fatherland and conscience" was the device which was to draw thousands to his standard. On the western wolds of Frisia, he surprised the castle of Wedde, a residence of the absent Aremberg, stadholder of the province. Thence he advanced to Appingadam, or Dam, on the tide waters of the Dollart. Here he was met by his younger brother, the gallant Adolphus, whose days were so nearly numbered, who brought with hina small troop of horse. At Wedde, at Dam, and at Slochteren, the standard was set up. At these three points there daily gathered armed bodies of troops, voluntary adventurers, peasants with any rustic weapon which they could find to their hand. Lieutenant-Governor Groesbeck wrote urgently to the Duke, that the beggars were hourly increasing in force; that the leaders perfectly understood their game; that they kept their plans a secret, but were fast seducing the heart of the country.\(^1\)

On the 4th May, Louis issued a summons to the magistracy of Grontingen, ordering them to send a deputation to confer with him at Dam. He was prepared, he said, to show the commission with which he was provided. He had not entered the country on a mere personal adventure, but had received orders to raise a sufficient army. By the help of the eternal God, he was determined, he said, to extirpate the detestable tyranny of those savage persecutors who had shed so much Christian blood. He was resolved to lift up the down-trod privileges, and to protect the fugitive, terrostricken Christians and patriarchs of the country. If the magistrates were disposed to receive him with friendship, it was well. Otherwise, he should, with regret, feel himself obliged to proceed against them as enemies of his Majesty and of the common weal.

As the result of this summons, Louis received a moderate

Hoofd, v. 164, 165. Brandt, i. 477. Meurs, Gul. Aur. iv. 44.
 Bor, 235. Mendoza, 46. Correspondance du Duc d'Alle, 15, 16
 Ibid., 15-17.

Address of Louis Nassau to the Burgomasters and No. Groningen, 4th May, 1568, in Gachard, Co. 21, 22.

men, was partially sheltered by the hill. Both were flanked by musketeers. On the brow of the hill was a large body of lightarmed troops, the enfans perdus of the army. The cavalry, amounting to not more than three hundred men, was placed in front, facing the road along which Aremberg was to arrive.1

That road was bordered by a wood extending nearly to the front of the hill. As Aremberg reached its verge, he brought out his artillery, and opened a fire upon the body of light troops. The hill protected a large part of the enemy's body from this attack. Finding the rebels so strong in numbers and position, Aremberg was disposed only to skirmish. He knew better than did his soldiers the treacherous nature of the ground in front of the enemy. He saw that it was one of those districts where peat had been taken out in large squares for fuel, and where a fallacious and verdant scum upon the surface of deep pools simulated the turf that had been removed. He saw that the battle-ground presented to him by his sagacious enemy was one great sweep of traps and pitfalls.2 Before he could carry the position many men must necessarily be engulfed.

He paused for an instant. He was deficient in cavalry, having only Martinengo's troop, hardly amounting to four hundred men.³ He was sure of Meghem's arrival within twenty-four hours. If, then, he could keep the rebels in check, without allowing them any opportunity to disperse, he should be able, on the morrow, to cut them to pieces, according to the plan agreed upon a fortnight before. But the Count had to contend with a double obstacle. His soldiers were very hot, his enemy very cool. The Spaniards, who had so easily driven a thousand musketeers from behind their windmill, the evening before, who had seen the whole rebel force decamp in hot haste on the very night of their arrival before Dam, supposed themselves in full career of victory. Believing that the name alone of the old legions had stricken terror to the hearts of the beggars, and that no resistance was possible to Spanish arms, they reviled their general for his caution. His reason for delay was theirs for hurry. Why should Meghem's loitering and mutinous troops, arriving at the eleventh hour, share in the triumph and the

(

¹ Mendoza, 48, 49. De Thou, v. 445, 446.
² Bor, iv. 235. ² Mendoza, 49.

spoil? No man knew the country better than Aremberg 1 native of the Netherlands the stadholder of the province Cowardly or heretical motives alone could sway him if he now held them back in the very hour of victory Inflamed beyond endurance by these trunts, feeling his pride of country touched to the quick, and willing to show that a Netherlander would lead wherever Spaniards dated to follow, Aremberg allowed himself to commit the grave error for which he was so deeply to atone Disregarding the dictates of his own experience and the arrangements of his superior. he yielded to the braggart humour of his soldiers, which he had not, like Alva, learned to moderate or to despise

In the meantime, the body of light troops which had re ceived the fire from the musical pieces of Groningen was seen to waver. The artillers was then brought beyond the cover of the wood, and pointed more fully upon the two main squares of the enemy A few shots told Soon after wards the enfans perdus retreated helter skelter, entirely de serting their position. This apparent advantage, which was only a preconcerted stratagem was too much for the fiery Spiniards They rushed mernly forward to attack the stationary squares their general being no longer able to restrum their impetuosity. In a moment the whole van guard had plunged into the morass. In a few minutes more they were all helplessly and hopelessly struggling in the pools, while the musketcers of the enemy poured in a deadly fire upon them, without wetting the soles of their own feet. The pikemen, too, who composed the main body of the larger square, now charged upon all who were extricating themselves from their entanglement, and drove them back again to a muddy death Simultaneously, the lesser patriot squadron, which had so long been sheltered emerged from the cover of the hill, made a detour around its base, enveloped the rear-guard of the Spaniards before they could advance to the succour of their perishing comrades, and broke them to pieces almost instantly. Gonzalo de Braccamonte, the very Spanish colonel who had been for

¹ Mendoza, 49 50. Bor iv 235 236 Hoofd v 165 166

Lustig aangetogen -Br iv 235
 Men loza 50. Hoofd, v 166. Bor, 235 236 Correspondence du Duc d Albe 9 - 97

most in denunciation of Aremberg, for his disposition to delay the contest, was now the first to fly. To his bad conduct was ascribed the loss of the day. The anger of Alva was so high, when he was informed of the incident, that he would have condemned the officer to death but for the intercession of his friends and countrymen.1 The rout was sudden and absolute. The foolhardiness of the Spaniards had precipitated them into the pit which their enemies had dug. The day was lost. Nothing was left for Aremberg but to perish with honour. Placing himself at the head of his handful of cavalry, he dashed into the mêlée. The shock was sustained by young Adolphus of Nassau, at the head of an equal number of riders. Each leader singled out the other. They met as "captains of might" should do, in the very midst of the affray.2 Aremberg, receiving and disregarding a pistol-shot from his adversary, laid Adolphus dead at his feet, with a bullet through his body and a sabre cut on his head. Two troopers in immediate attendance upon the young Count shared the same fate from the same hand. Shortly afterward, the horse of Aremberg, wounded by a musket-ball, fell to the ground. A few devoted followers lifted the charger to his legs and the bleeding rider to his saddle. They endeavoured to bear their wounded general from the scene of action. The horse staggered a few paces and fell dead. Aremberg disengaged himself from his body, and walked a few paces to the edge of a meadow near the Here, wounded in the action, crippled by the disease

¹ This at least is the statement made by the author of the MS, heretofore eited, "Picees concernant les Troubles des Pays Bas," etc. The writer adds, that Alphonse d'Ulloa had taken good eare not to mention the circumstance, as telling too hard upon the Spaniards. It is remarkable, however, that Ulloa does distinctly state that Alva, upon arriving in Amsterdam after the battle of Jemmingen, caused the eaptains and eolonels of the Sardinian regiment to be beheaded, for having been the cause of Aremberg's defeat and death. Braecamonte was the "Maestro de campo" of the Tercio of Sardinia.—Commentaire du Seigneur A. d'Ulloa, i. 57. Mendoza, ii. 28vo.

2 This hotly-contested field, with the striking eatastrophe of Adolphus

and Aremberg, suggests the chivalrous pictures in "Chevy Chase:"

[&]quot;At last these two stout earls did meet, Like captains of great might, Like lions wode, they laid on lode, And made a eruel fight," etc., etc.

which had so long tormented him, and scarcely able to sustain longer the burthen of his armour, he calmly awaited his fate. A troop of the enemy advanced soon afterwards. and Aremberg fell, covered with wounds, fighting like a hero of Homer, single-handed, against a battalion, with a courage worthy a better cause and a better fate The sword by which he received his final death blow was that of the Seigneur de Haultain 1 That officer having just seen his brother slain before his eyes, forgot the respect due to unsuccessful chiralin.

The battle was scarcely finished, when an advancing trumpet was heard The sound caused the victors to pruse in their pursuit, and enabled a remnant of the conquered Spaniards to escape Meghem's force was thought to be advancing That general had indeed arrived, but he was alone He had reached Zundlaren, a village some four leagues from the scene of action, on the noon of that day. Here he had found a letter from Aremberg, requesting him to hasten He had done so Hts troops, however, having come from Coevorden that morning, were unable to accom-

¹ Meteren, f. 52 De Thou, v. 447

² The principal authority followed in the foregoing description of the first victory gained by the rebels in the eighty years war, which had now fairly commenced, is the Spaniard Mendora, who fought through this whole campagn in Fineshald Other historians give a still more picturesque aspect to the mun incident of the battle. According to picturesque aspect to the mun incident of the battle. Profession Miles Britanson

thus and Aremberr fell The story is adopted

io, Cabrera, lib viii the death of Adolphus

to the hand of Aremberg, who in his turn was slain afterward in the melec. Meteren, on the contrary, seeming to think, as well as the Spaniards, that the honour of the respective nations was at stake, on the individual prowess of the champions, prefers to appear ignorant that the initiating process of the change and the mentions the death of this striking single combat had taken place. He mentions the death of dolphus as having occurred in the melec, and ascribes Aremberg's

plish so long a march in addition. The Count, accompanied by a few attendants, reached the neighbourhood of Heiliger-Lee only in time to meet with some of the camp sutlers and other fugitives, from whom he learned the disastrous news of the defeat. Finding that all was lost, he very properly returned to Zuidlaren, from which place he made the best of his way to Groningen. That important city, the key of Friesland, he was thus enabled to secure. The troops which he brought, in addition to the four German vanderas of Schaumburg, already quartered there, were sufficient to protect it against the ill-equipped army of Louis Nassau.1

The patriot leader had accomplished, after all, but a barren victory. He had, to be sure, destroyed a number of Spaniards, amounting, according to the different estimates, to from five hundred to sixteen hundred men.2 He had also broken up a small but veteran army. More than all, he had taught the Netherlanders, by this triumphant termination to a stricken field, that the choice troops of Spain were not invincible. But the moral effect of the victory was the only permanent one. The Count's badly-paid troops could with difficulty be kept together. He had no sufficient artillery to reduce the city whose possession would have proved so important to the cause. Moreover, in common with the Prince of Orange and all his brethren, he had been called to mourn for the young and chivalrous Adolphus, whose lifeblood had stained the laurels of this first patriot victory.3 Having remained, and thus wasted the normal three days upon the battle-field, Louis now sat down before Groningen, fortifying and entrenching himself in a camp within cannonshot of the city.4

On the 23rd we have seen that Aremberg had written, full of confidence, to the Governor-General, promising soon to send him good news of the beggars. On the 26th, Count Meghem wrote that, having spoken with a man who had helped to place Aremberg in his coffin, he could hardly enter-

tain any further doubt as to his fate.5

Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 94-98.

² Ibid., 111. Mendoza only allows 450 Spaniards killed. Compare Meteren, 52, et alios.

4 Hoofd, Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, v. 166. Cabrera, lib. viii. 485-487.

³ Hoofd, v. 166. Bor, iv. 236.

⁸ Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 102.

The wrath of the Duke was even greater than his surprise Like Augustus, he called in vain on the dead commander for his legions, but prepared himself to inflict a more rapid and more terrible vengeance than the Roman's Recog nizing the gravity of his situation, he determined to take the field in person, and to annihilate this insolent chieftain who had dared not only to cope with, but to conquer, his veteran regiments But before he could turn his back upon Brussels, many deeds were to be done His measures now followed each other in breathless succession, fulminating and blasting at every stroke On the 28th May, he issued an edict, banishing, on pain of death, the Prince of Orange, Louis Nassau, Hoogstraaten, Van den Berg, and others, with eon fiscation of all their property 1 At the same time he razed the Culemberg Palace to the ground, and erected a pillar upon its ruins, commemorating the accursed conspiracy which had been engendered within its walls. On the 1st June, eighteen prisoners of distinction, including the two Barons Batenburg, Maximilian Kock, Blois de Treslong, and others, were executed upon the Horse-market, in Brussels In the vigorous language of Hoogstraaten, this horrible tragedy was enacted directly before the windows of that "eruel animal, Noircarmes," who, in company of his friend Berlaymont, and the rest of the Blood Council, looked out upon the shocking spectacle. The heads of the victims were exposed upon stakes, to which also their bodies were fastened Eleven of these victims were afterwards deposited, uncoffined, in unconsecrated ground, the other seven were left unburied to moulder on the gibbet ' On the 2nd June. Villars, the leader in the Daalem rising, suffered on the scrif fold, with three others 2 On the 3rd, Counts Egmont and Horn were brought in a carriage from Ghent to Brussels, guarded by ten companies of infantry and one of eavalry They were then lodged in the "Brood huis" opposite the Town hall on the great square of Brussels. On the 4th.

¹ Bor iv 23S

Meteren, 50. Bor, iv 248 Hoofd, v 167 Groen v Prinst , Archives, pt. 239.

Bor, Hooff uh sur Ber, 15 238, Hoofl, v 167, 168.

Bor. v 215, 239 Hoo'd, v 168. The building is "Maison du Kon

Alva having, as he solemnly declared before God and the world, examined thoroughly the mass of documents appertaining to those two great prosecutions, which had only been closed three days before, pronounced sentence against the illustrious prisoners. These documents of iniquity, signed and sealed by the Duke, were sent to the Blood-Council, where they were read by Secretary Praets.² The signature of Philip was not wanting, for, as already stated, the sentences had been drawn upon blanks signed by the monarch, of which the viceroy had brought a whole trunkful from Spain. The sentence against Egmont declared very briefly that the Duke of Alva, having read all the papers and evidence in the case, had found the Count guilty of high treason. It was proved that Egmont had united with the confederates; that he had been a party to the accursed conspiracy of the Prince of Orange; that he had taken the rebel nobles under his protection, and that he had betrayed the Government and the Holy Catholic Church by his conduct in Flanders. Therefore the Duke condemned him to be executed by the sword on the following day, and decreed that his head should be placed on high in a public place, there to remain until the Duke should otherwise direct. The sentence against Count Horn was similar in language and purport.³

That afternoon the Duke sent for the Bishop of Ypres. The prelate arrived at dusk. As soon as he presented himself, Alva informed him of the sentence which had just been pronounced, and ordered him to convey the intelligence to the prisoners. He further charged him with the duty of shriving the victims, and preparing their souls for death. The Bishop fell on his knees, aghast at the terrible decree. He implored the Governor-General to have mercy upon the

³ Bor, iv. 289.

¹ Bor, Hoofd, *ubi sup*. Meteren, 52, 53.
² Bor, v. 239. "Les procès instruits furent lus et visitez au Conseil des Troubles y assistans journellement le Ducq comme President avec les seigneurs de Berlaymont et de Noircarmes—trop bien le Ducq se fait delivrer par escript leurs opinions secrètes de chacune, la pluralité desquelles inclina à la condemnation."—Renom de France MS., ii. c. 5. The same writer adds that the sentence, drawn up by Hessels, and signed by the Duke, was read two or three days afterward in presence of Berlaymont and Noircarmes; "Par où l'on a présumé, à bonne raison, que la resolution venait d'Espagne."-Ibid.

two unfortunate nobles
If their lives could not be spared. he prayed him at any rate to grant delay. With tears and earnest supplications the prelate endeavoured to avert or to postpone the doom which had been pronounced. It was in vun The sentence, inflexible as destiny, had been long before ordained. Its execution had been but hastened by the temporary triumph of rebellion in Friesland Alva told the Bishop roughly that he had not been summoned to give advice Delay or pardon was alike impossible. He was to act as confessor to the criminals, not as councillor to the viceroy The Bishop, thus rebuked withdrew to accomplish his melancholy mission. Meanwhile, on the same evening, the miserable Countess of Egmont had been appalled by rumours, too vague for belief, too terrible to be slighted She was in the chamber of Countess Aremberg with whom she had come to condole for the death of the Count, when the order for the immediate execution of her own husband was announced to her? She hastened to the presence of the Covernor General The Princess Palatine, whose ancestors had been emperors, remembered only that she was a wife and a mother. She fell at the feet of the man who con trolled the fate of her husband, and implored his mercy in humble and submissive terms The Duke, with calm and almost incredible from, reassured the Countess by the in formation that, on the morrow, her husband was certainly to

was revealed to her-words of doons, which she had mistaken for consolation

An hour before midnight the Bishop of Ypres reached Tgmont's prison. The Count was confined in a chamber on the second story of the Brood huis, the mansion of the cross howman's guild, in that corner of the building which rists on a narrow street running back from the great square. It was aroused from his sleep by the approach of his

Bor, 10 230 Hoofd 168, 169 Strata 1 327, et mu ti alu Brantome, Hommes Illustres, etc., usă v 176.

¹ Hoofit, v 169 who is the only authority for an aneedote which for the honour of humanity, one wishes to think false

Bruxelles et ses Environs, par Alphonse Wauters, 93.

visitor. Unable to speak, but indicating by the expression of his features the occurrence of a great misfortune, the Bishop, soon after his entrance, placed the paper given to him by Alva in Egmont's hands. The unfortunate noble thus suddenly received the information that his deathsentence had been pronounced, and that its execution was fixed for the next morning. He read the paper through without flinching, and expressed astonishment rather than dismay at its tidings.1 Exceedingly sanguine by nature, he had never believed, even after his nine months' imprisonment, in a fatal termination to the difficulties in which he was involved. He was now startled both at the sudden condemnation which had followed his lingering trial, and at the speed with which his death was to fulfil the sentence. He asked the Bishop, with many expressions of amazement, whether pardon was impossible; whether delay at least might not be obtained? The prelate answered by a faithful narrative of the conversation which had just occurred between Alva and himself.² Egmont, thus convinced of his inevitable doom, then observed to his companion, with exquisite courtesy, that, since he was to die, he rendered thanks both to God and to the Duke that his last moments were to be consoled by so excellent a father confessor.3

Afterwards, with a natural burst of indignation, he exclaimed that it was indeed a cruel and unjust sentence. He protested that he had never in his whole life wronged his Majesty; certainly never so deeply as to deserve such a punishment. All that he had done had been with loyal in tentions. The King's true interest had been his constant aim. Nevertheless, if he had fallen into error, he prayed to

(

^{1 &}quot;Met grooter Verwondering dan Versleegenheit."—Hoofd, v. 169.
2 Hoofd, ubi sup.. Bor, iv. 239.
3 Ibid., iv. 239. Hoofd, v. 169.—It is painful to reflect that, not withstanding the kind words exchanged between the Bishop and Egmont upon this melancholy occasion, the prelate expressed to others his entire approbation of the Count's execution. "Ypres considers the punishment of Egmont as very just and necessary for an example," wrote Morillon to Granvelle a week after the murder. "To try the Bishop further," he continued, "I observed that the King was very near giving Egmont the office which he had since bestowed upon Alva; upon which he replied that it would have been our ruin," etc., etc.—Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc. Supplément, 83.

God that his death might wipe away his misdeeds, and that his name might not be dishonoured, nor his children brought His beloved wife and innocent children were to endure misery enough by his death and the confiscation of It was at least due to his long services that they should be spared further suffering \ He then asked his father confessor what advice he had to give touching his present conduct. The Bishop replied by an exhortation, that he should turn himself to God, that he should withdraw his thoughts entirely from all earthly interests, and prepare him self for the world beyond the grave He accepted the advice. and kneeling before the Bishop, confessed himself He then asked to receive the sacrament, which the Bishop adminis tered, after the customary mass Egmont asked what prayer would be most appropriate at the hour of execution. His confessor replied that there was none more befitting than the one which Jesus had taught his disciples-"Our Father. which art in heaven"

Some conversation ensued, in which the Count again expressed his gratitude that his parting soul had been soothed by these pious and friendly offices By a revulsion of feeling, he then bewriled again the sad fate of his wife and of his young children The Bishop entreated him anex to withdraw his mind from such harrowing reflections, and to give himself entirely to God Overwhelmed with grief. Egmont exclaimed with natural and simple pathos-"Alas" how miserable and frail is our nature, that, when we should think of God only, we are unable to shift out the images of wife and children."

Recovering from his emotion, and having yet much time. he sat down and wrote with perfect self possession two letters. one to Philip and one to Alsa. The celebrated letter to the

King was as follows -

"Sire.-I have learned, this evening, the sentence which Your Majesty has been pleased to pronounce upon me. Al though I have never had a thought, and believe myself

Bor, w 240. Hooff v 169 Pieces concernant les Troubles des Part lias, 33210 115 Gerard Collection. Archives of the Hague

Bor, Hoofd ubrant Meteren, 53. Lucces concernant les Troubles,

CHAPTER III.

THE GOVERNOR'S TRIUMPH AND THE INFANTE'S DOOM.

Preparations of the Duke against Count Louis—Precarious situation of Louis in Friesland—Timidity of the inhabitants—Alva in Friesland—Skirmishing near Groningen—Retreat of the patriots—Error committed by Louis—His position at Jemmingen—Mutinous demonstrations of his troops—Louis partially restores order—Attempt to destroy the dykes interrupted by the arrival of Alva's forces—Artful strategy of the Duke—Defeat of Count Louis, and utter destruction of his army—Outrages committed by the Spaniards—Alva at Utrecht—Execution of Vrouw van Diemen—Episode of Don Carlos—Fables concerning him and Queen Isabella—Mystery concerning his death—Secret letters of Philip to the Pope—The one containing the truth of the transaction still concealed in the Vatican—Case against Philip, as related by Mathieu, De Thou, and others—Testimony in the King's favour by the Nuncio, the Venetian envoy, and others—Doubtful state of the question—Anecdotes concerning Don Carlos—His character.

THOSE measures were taken with the precision and promptness which marked the Duke's character when precision and promptness were desirable. There had been a terrible energy in his every step, since the successful foray of Louis Nassau. Having determined to take the field in person with nearly all the Spanish veterans, he had at once acted upon the necessity of making the capital secure, after his back should be turned. It was impossible to leave three thousand choice troops to guard Count Egmont. A less number seemed insufficient to prevent a rescue. He had, therefore, no longer delayed the chastisement which had already been determined, but which the events in the north had precipitated. Thus the only positive result of Louis Nassau's victory was the execution of his imprisoned friends.

The expedition under Aremberg had failed from two causes. The Spanish force had been inadequate, and they had attacked the enemy at a disadvantage. The imprudent attack was the result of the contempt with which they had

.

regarded their antagonist. These errors were not to be repeated Alva ordered Count Meghem, now commanding in the province of Groningen, on no account to hazard hosti lities until the game was sure! He also immediately ordered large reinforcements to move forward to the seat of war The commanders intrusted with this duty were Duke Lric of Brunswick, Chiappin Vitelli Noircarmes and Count de Roeuly The rendezvous for the whole force was Deven ter and here they all arrived on the 10th July On the same day the Duke of Alva himself entered Deventer to take command in person on the evening of the 14th July he reached Rolden a village three leagues distant from Groningen at the head of three terzios of Spanish infantry. thrue companies of light horse and a troop of dragoons His whole force in and about Groningen amounted to fifteen thousand choice troops besides a large but uncertain number of less disciplined soldiers *

Meantime Louis of Nassau, since his victory had accomplished nothing. For this mactivity there was one sufficient cacuse, the total want of funds. His only revenue was the amount of black mail which he was able to levy upon the inhibitants of the province. He repeated his determination to treat them all as enemies unless they furnished him with the means of cypelling their tyrants from the country. He obtained small sums in this manner from time to time. The inhabitants were favourably disposed, but they were timed and despirating. They say no clear way towards the accomplishment of the result concerning which Louis was so confident. They knew that the terrible Alva was already on his way. They felt sure of being philaged by both parties, and of being hanged as rebels besides, as soon as the Governor General should make his apprevance.

Louis had however, issued two formal proclamations for

Correspondance du Duc d Albe 136 Mendoza 56 57 Correspondance du Duc d Albe 154.

two especial contributions. In these documents he had succinctly explained that the houses of all recusants should be forthwith burned about their ears, and in consequence of these peremptory measures, he had obtained some ten thousand florins. Alva ordered counter proclamations to be affixed to church doors and other places, forbidding all persons to contribute to these forced loans of the rebels, on penalty of paying twice as much to the Spaniards, with arbitrary punishment in addition, after his arrival.2 The miserable inhabitants, thus placed between two fires, had nothing for it but to pay one-half of their property to support the rebellion in the first place, with the prospect of giving the other half as a subsidy to tyranny afterwards; while the gibbet stood at the end of the vista to reward their liberality. Such was the horrible position of the peasantry in this civil conflict. The weight of guilt thus accumulated upon the crowned head which conceived, and upon the red right hand which wrought all this misery, what human scales can measure?

With these precarious means of support, the army of Louis of Nassau, as may easily be supposed, was anything but docile. After the victory of Heiliger-Lee there had seemed to his German mercenaries a probability of extensive booty, which grew fainter as the slender fruit of that battle became daily more apparent. The two abbots of Wittewerum and of Heiliger-Lee, who had followed Aremberg's train in order to be witnesses of his victory, had been obliged to pay to the actual conqueror a heavy price for the entertainment to which they had invited themselves, and these sums, together with the amounts pressed from the reluctant estates, and the forced contributions paid by luckless peasants, enabled him to keep his straggling troops together a few weeks longer. Mutiny, however, was constantly breaking out, and by the eloquent expostulations and vague promises of the Count, was with difficulty suppressed.

He had, for a few weeks immediately succeeding the battle, distributed his troops in three different stations. On

¹ Proclamation of Count Louis, dated Dam, 5th June, 1568. Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 124, 125.

² Ibid., 144, 145. ³ Bor, iv. 236. ⁴ Ibid., iv. 236-244, etc. Hoofd, v. 175.

the approach of the Duke, however, he hastily concentrated his whole force at his own strongly forthfied camp, within half cannon shor of Groningen. His army such as it was, numbered from 10,000 to 12,000 men 1 Alva reached Gro ningen early in

marched his tr mediately occuwhich it was east to inflict damage upon the camp. This done, the Duke, with a few attendants, rode forward to reconnoitre the enemy in person. He found him in a well fortified position, having the river on his front, which served as a most to his camp, and with a deep trench three hundred vards by ond, in addition. Two wooden bridges led across the river, each was commanded by a fortified house, in which was a provision of pine torches, ready at a moment's warning, to bet fire to the bridges. Having thus satisfied himself, the Duke rodeback to his army, which had received strict orders not to lift a finger till his return. He then des patched a small force of five hundred musketeers, under Robles, to skirmish with the enem, and, if possible, to draw them from their trenches.

The troops of Louis, however, showed no greediness to engage. On the contrary, it soon became evident that their dispositions were of an opposite tendency. The Count him self, not at that moment trusting his soldiers, who were in an extremely mutinous condition, was desirous of falling back before his formidable antagonist. The Duke, faithful, however, to his life-long principles, had no intentions of precipitating the action in those difficult and swampy regions. The skirmishing, therefore, continued for many hours, an additional force of 1,000 men being detailed from Spanish army The day was very sultry, however, the reluctant, and the whole action languid. At last, evening a large body, tempted beyond their trenches, gaged warmly with the Spaniards. The combat lasted few minutes, the patriots were soon routed, and fled cipitately back to their camp. The panic spread with and the whole army was soon in retreat. On in

Hoofd v 174. According to Green van Prinsterer, only \$,000 against 17 000 foot and 3 000 horse, in. 26₃.
 Mendora, 59. Correspondance du Duc d'Alue, 154.

had, however, set fire to the bridges, and thus secured an advantage at the outset of the chase. The Spaniards were no longer to be held. Vitelli obtained permission to follow with 2,000 additional troops. The fifteen hundred who had already been engaged, charged furiously upon their retreating foes. Some dashed across the blazing bridges, with their garments and their very beards on fire. Others sprang into the river. Neither fire nor water could check the fierce pursuit. The cavalry dismounting, drove their horses into the stream, and clinging to their tails, pricked the horses forward with their lances. Having thus been dragged across, they joined their comrades in the mad chase along the narrow dykes, and through the swampy and almost impassable country where the rebels were seeking shelter. approach of night, too soon advancing, at last put an end to the hunt. The Duke with difficulty recalled his men, and compelled them to restrain their eagerness until the morrow. Three hundred of the patriots were left dead upon the field, besides at least an equal number who perished in the river and canals. The army of Louis was entirely routed, and the Duke considered it virtually destroyed. He wrote to the state-council that he should pursue them the next day, but doubted whether he should find anybody to talk with him. In this the Governor-General soon found himself delightfully disappointed.2

Five days later, the Duke arrived at Reyden, on the Ems. Owing to the unfavourable disposition of the country people, who were willing to protect the fugitives by false information to their pursuers, he was still in doubt as to the position then occupied by the enemy.3 He had been fearful that they would be found at this very village of Reyden. It was a fatal error on the part of Count Louis that they were not.4 Had he made a stand at this point, he might have held out a long time. The bridge which here crossed the river would have afforded him a retreat into Germany at any moment, and the place was easily to be defended in front.⁵ Thus he

¹ Mendoza, 61.

Mendoza, 51.

Mendoza, 59-63. Alva's Letter to the State Council. Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 154, 155. Compare Bor, iv. 244; Hoofd, v. 174, 175.

Mendoza, 63.

Mendoza, 63.

Mendoza, Hoofd, ubi sup.

^{175.} Ibid., 63, 64. Hoofd, v. 174.

might have maintained lumself against his fierce but wary foe, while his brother Orange, who was at Strasburg watching the progress of events, was executing his own long planned expedition into the heart of the Netherlands With Alva thus occupied in Friesland, the results of such an invasion might have been prodigious. It was, however, not on the cards for that campugn The mutinous disposition of the mercenaries under his command' had filled Louis with doubt and disgust Bold and sanguine but always too fiery and impatient, he saw not much possibility of paying his troops any longer with promises Perhaps he was not un willing to place them in a position where they would be obliged to fight or to perish. At any rate, such was their present situation Instead of halting at Reyden, he had made his stand at Jemmingen, about four leagues distant from that place, and a little further down the river? Alva discovered this important fact soon after his arrival at Reyden, and could not conceal his delight. Already exulting at the error made by his adversary, in neglecting the important position which he now occupied himself, he was doubly delighted at learning the nature of the place which he had in preference selected. He saw that Louis had completely en trapped himself

Jemmingen was a small town on the left bank of the Lms Fhe stream hirt, very broad and deep, is rather a tide inlet than a rivel, being but a very few miles from the Dollart. This circular bay, or ocean chasm, the result of the violent inundation of the 14th century, surrounds, with the river, a narrow pennisula. In the corner of this pennisula, as in the bottom of a sack, Louis had posted his army. His infanty, as usual was drawn up in two large squares, and still contained ten thousand men. The rear rested upon the village, the river was upon his left, his meagre force of cavalry upon the right. In front were two very deep trenches. The narrow road, which formed the only entrinee to his camp was guarded by a rivelin on each side, and by five pieces of animers.

The Duke having reconnoitred the

¹ Bor is 236 244. Hoofd v 175

¹ Ibid , v 174 175 Bor iv 244.

² Mendoza 65 69.

back, satisfied that no escape was possible. The river was too deep and too wide for swimming or wading, and there were but very few boats. Louis was shut up between twelve thousand Spanish veterans and the river Ems. The rebel army, although not insufficient in point of numbers, was in a state of disorganization. They were furious for money and reluctant to fight. They broke out into open mutiny upon the very verge of battle, and swore that they would instantly disband, if the gold, which, as they believed, had been recently brought into the camp, were not immediately distributed among them.1 Such was the state of things on the eventful morning of the 21st July. All the expostulations of Count Louis seemed powerless. His eloquence and his patience, both inferior to his valour, were soon exhausted. He peremptorily refused the money for which they clamoured, giving the most cogent of all reasons, an empty coffer. demonstrated plainly that they were in that moment to make their election, whether to win a victory or to submit to a massacre. Neither flight nor surrender was possible. They knew how much quarter they could expect from the lances of the Spaniards or the waters of the Dollart. Their only chance of salvation lay in their own swords. The instinct of self-preservation, thus invoked, exerted a little of its natural effect.2

Meantime, a work which had been too long neglected, was then, if possible, to be performed. In that watery territory, the sea was only held in check by artificial means. In a very short time, by the demolition of a few dykes and the opening of a few sluices, the whole country through which the Spaniards had to pass could be laid under water. Believing it yet possible to enlist the ocean in his defence, Louis, having partially reduced his soldiers to obedience, ordered a strong detachment upon this important service. Seizing a spade, he commenced the work himself, and then returned to set his army in battle array. Two or three tidegates had been opened, two or three bridges had been demolished, when Alva, riding in advance of his army, appeared within a mile or two of Jemmingen. It was then

¹ Bor, iv. 244, 245. Hoofd, v. 175.

Neteren, 54. ² Hoofd, v. 175, 176.

³ Meteren, 54.

⁴ Mendoza, 67. Correspondance du Duc d'Albe. Hoofd, v. 175.

eight o clock in the morning The patnots redoubled their cfforts By ten o clock the waters were already knee high, and in some places as deep as to the waist At that hour, the advanced guard of the Spuniards arrived 1 ifteen hun dred musketeers were immediately ordered forward by the Duke They were preceded by a company of mounted carabineers attended by a small band of voluntiers of dis tinction This little band threw themselves at once upon the troops engaged in destroying the dykes. The rebels fied at the first onset and the Spaniards closed the gates ' Leding the full importance of the moment, Count Louis ordered a large force of musketeers to recover the position and to complete the work of mundation. It was too late. The little band of Spaniards held the post with consum Charge after charge volley after volley from mate tenacity the overwhelming force brought against them failed to loosen the fierce grip with which they held this key to the whole situation Before they could be driven from the dykes, their comrides arrived when all their antagonists at once made a hurried retreat to their camp *

Very much the same tactics were now employed by the Duke us in the engrgement near Selwaert Abbey. He was resolved that this affair, also, should be a hunt not a battle, but forestwith that it was to be a more successful one. There was no loophole of escape so that after a little successful briting the imprisoned victims would be forced to spring from their lurking place, to perish upon his spears. On his march from Reyden that morning he had taken eart to occup every farmhouse every building of whatever description along the road with his troops. He had left a strong guird on the bindge at Reyden and had thus closed earfully every arenue. The same fifteen hundred musketters were now advanced further towards the camp. This small force, powerfully but secretly sustained was to feel the enemy to skirmish with limin and to draw him as soon as possible out of his trendes.

Men fora, 66 67

¹ Mendora 6- 68. Correspondance du Due d'Albe 15- 158
2 Mendora who was himself one of the Sparian band which held the
like states the number of rebels if us repulsed by less than
Spariards at a coo, all musicleers.—67, 68.

gagements between them and the troops sent out by Count Louis grew more earnest. Finding so insignificant a force opposed to them, the mutinous rebels took courage. The work waxed hot. Lodrono and Romero, commanders of the musketeers, becoming alarmed, sent to the Duke for reinforcements. He sent back word in reply, that if they were not enough to damage the enemy, they could, at least, hold their own for the present. So much he had a right to expect of Spanish soldiers.1 At any rate, he should send no reinforcements. Again they were more warmly pressed, again their messenger returned with the same reply. A third time they send the most urgent entreaties for succour. Duke was still inexorable.2

Meantime the result of this scientific angling approached. By noon the rebels, not being able to see how large a portion of the Spanish army had arrived, began to think the affair not so serious. Count Louis sent out a reconnoitring party upon the river in a few boats. They returned without having been able to discover any large force. It seemed probable, therefore, that the inundation had been more successful in stopping their advance than had been supposed.3 Louis, always too rash, inflamed his men with temporary Determined to cut their way out by one vigorous movement, the whole army at last marched forth from their entrenchments, with drums beating, colours flying; but already the concealed reinforcements of their enemies were on the spot. The patriots met with a warmer reception than they had expected. Their courage evaporated. Hardly had they advanced three hundred yards, when the whole body wavered and then retreated precipitately towards the encampment,4 having scarcely exchanged a shot with the enemy. Count Louis, in a frenzy of rage and despair, flew from rank to rank, in vain endeavouring to rally his terrorstricken troops. It was hopeless. The battery which guarded the road was entirely deserted. He rushed to the cannon himself, and fired them all with his own hand.5 It was their first and last discharge. His single arm, however

² Ibid. ¹ Mendoza, 69.

Hoofd, v. 175, 176. Mendoza, 70.
 Mendoza, 70. Hoofd, v. 176.
 Bor, iv. 245. Hoofd, v. 176.

hold, could not turn the tide of battle, and he was swent backwards with his coward troops. In a moment afterwards, Don Lope de Ligueroa, who led the van of the Spaniards. dashed upon the battery, and secured it, together with the rivelins. Their own artillers was turned against the rebels, and the road was soon swept. The Spaniards in large numbers now rushed through the trenches in pursuit of the retreating foe. No resistance was offered, nor quarter given An impossible escape was all which was attempted. It was not a battle, but a massacre Many of the beggirs in their flight threw down their arms, all had forgotten their use Their antagonists butchered them in droves, while those who escaped the sword were hurled into the river Seion Spaniards were killed, and seen thousand rebels? The swift ebb tide swept the hats of the perishing wretches in such numbers down the stream, that the people at Emden knew the result of the battle in an incredibly short period of time. The skirmishing had lasted from ten o'clock till one," but the butchers continued much longer It took time to slaughter even unresisting victims Large numbers obtained refuge for the night upon an island in the river. At low water next day the Spaniards waded to them, and slew every man Many found concealment in hovels, swamps, and thickets, so that the whole of the following day was occupied in ferreting out and despatching them There was so much to be done, that there was work enough for all "Not a soldier," says, with great simplicity, a Spanish historian who fought in the battle, "not a soldier, nor even a lad, who wished to share in the victory, but could find somebody to wound, to kill, to burn, or to drown ' The wounding, killing, burning, drown ing, lasted two days, and very few escaped. The lindward pursuit extended for three or four leagues around, so that the roads and pastures were covered with bodies, with corslets,

¹ Mendoza, 70.

² Letter of Alva to the Council of State Correspondance du Duc d'Alle, 158. The same letter is pul tabed in Box, is 245, 246. All with a life of the patriot ade, and the number of Spaniards slam is not estimated at nore than eight even by the patriotic Metern, 55 Compare 1245

[Herritz, xv 606, Hood, y 176, and Ment 245]

Menlo.a 71

Menlika, 71

^{· /}h/, 72.

and other weapons. Count Louis himself stripped off his clothes, and made his escape, when all was over, by swimming across the Ems.1 With the paltry remnant of his troops he

again took refuge in Germany.

The Spanish army, two days afterwards, marched back to Groningen. The page which records their victorious campaign is foul with outrage and red with blood. None of the horrors which accompany the passage of hostile troops through a defenceless country were omitted. Maids and matrons were ravished in multitudes; old men butchered in cold blood. As Alva returned, with the rear-guard of his army, the whole sky was red with a constant conflagration; the very earth seemed changed to ashes.2 Every peasant's hovel, every farm-house, every village upon the road had been burned to the ground. So gross and so extensive had been the outrage, that the commander-in-chief felt it due to his dignity to hang some of his own soldiers who had most distinguished themselves in this work.³ Thus ended the campaign of Count Louis in Friesland. Thus signally and terribly had the Duke of Alva vindicated the supremacy of Spanish discipline and of his own military skill.

On his return to Groningen, the estates were summoned, and received a severe lecture for their suspicious demeanour in regard to the rebellion.4 In order more effectually to control both province and city, the Governor-General ordered the construction of a strong fortress,5 which was soon begun but never completed. Having thus furnished himself with a key to this important and doubtful region, he returned by way of Amsterdam to Utrecht. There he was met by his son Frederic with strong reinforcements. The Duke reviewed his whole army, and found himself at the head of 30,000 infantry and 7,000 cavalry.7 Having fully subdued the province, he had no occupation for such a force, but he improved the opportunity by cutting off the head of an old woman in

Correspondance du Duc d'Albe, 158; or "in a boat," Bor, iv. 245. Meteren, 55; or "partly by swimming and partly in a boat," Mendoza, 72. Compare Hoofd, v. 176; De Thou, v. 458-462, etc.,

² Bor, iv. 245. Mendoza, 73. ³ *Ibid.*⁴ Bor, iv. 246. Hoofd, v. 176, 177. ⁵ Bor,
⁵ De Thou, v. 462. Vie du Duc d'Albe, ii. 323. 3 Ibid. ⁵ Bor, iv. 246; v. 260.

De Thou, v. 462; but compare Mendoza, 76, 77.

Utrecht The Vrouw van Diemen, eighteen months pre-The crime had, in fact, been committed by her son in law, who dwelt under her roof, and who had him self, without her participation, extended this dangerous hos pitality to a heretic, but the old lady, although a devout Catholic, was rich Her execution would strike a wholesome terror into the hearts of her neighbours. The confiscation of her estates would bring a handsome sum into the govern which could destroy an army of twelve thousand rubels at a tlow could inflict as signal punishment on the small delin quencies of obscure individuals. The old lady, who was rist eighty four years of age, was placed in a chur upon the scaffold. She met her death with heroism, and treated her murderers with contempt "I understand very well, she nbscreed, why my death is considered necessary is fat and must be killed. To the executioner she expressed a hope that his sword was sufficiently sharp "as he was likely to find her old neck very tough. With this grisly parndy upon the dying words of Anne Boleyn the couragious old Lentlewoman submitted to her fate 1

"The tragedy of Don Carlos does not structly belong to our subject, which is the ris, of the Netherland commonwalth—not the decline of the Spanish monarchy, nor the life of Philip the Second The thread is but slender which connects the unhappy jouing Prince with the fortunes of the northern republic. He was said, no doubt with truth, to destruct the government of Handers. He was also supposed to be in secret correspondence with the leaders of the revolt in the provinces. He appeared, however, to possess very little of their confidence. His name is only once mentioned by William of Oringe, who said in a letter that "the Prince of Spain had lately eaten system pounds of fruit, including four pounds of grapes at a single sitting and had become is in consequence." The result was sufficiently natural, be-

¹ Bran lt 1 480. Hoofd
2 Bran lt Hut der I eformate D 1 480. Feaels West = Hoofl v 177

Containe le Tacit, un 12.

it nowhere appears that the royal youth, born to consume the fruits of the earth so largely, had ever given the Netherlanders any other proof of his capacity to govern them. There is no doubt that he was a most uncomfortable personage at home, both to himself and to others, and that he hated his father very cordially. He was extremely incensed at the nomination of Alva to the Netherlands, because he had hoped that either the King would go thither or entrust the mission to him, in either of which events he should be rid for a time of the paternal authority, or at least of the paternal presence. It seems to be well ascertained that Carlos nourished towards his father a hatred which might lead to criminal attempts, but there is no proof that such attempts were ever made. As to the amours of the Prince and the Queen, they had never any existence save in the imagination of poets, who have chosen to find a source of sentimental sorrow for the Infante in the arbitrary substitution of his father for himself in the marriage contract with the daughter of Henry the Second. As Carlos was but twelve or thirteen years of age when thus deprived of a bride whom he had never seen, the foundation for a passionate regret was but slight. There is no proof whatever, nor any reason to surmise, that any love passages ever existed between Don Carlos and his step-mother.

As to the process and death of the Prince, the mystery has not yet been removed, and the field is still open to conjecture. It seems a thankless task to grope in the dark after the truth at a variety of sources, when the truth really exists in tangible shape if profane hands could be laid upon it. The secret is buried in the bosom of the Vatican. Philip wrote two letters on the subject to Pius V. The contents of the first (21st January, 1568) are known. He informed the pontiff that he had been obliged to imprison his son, and promised that he would, in the conduct of the affair, omit nothing which could be expected of a father and of a just and prudent king. The second letter, in which he narrated, or is supposed to have narrated, the whole course of the tragic proceedings, down to the death and burial of the Prince, has never yet been made public. There are hopes

¹ De Thou, v. 436, liv. xliii.

that this secret missive, after three centuries of darkness,

may soon see the light 1

As Philip generally told the truth to the Pope, it is probable that the secret, when once revealed, will contain the veritable solution of the mystery. Till that moment arrives, i seems idle to attempt fathoming the mitter. Neverthe 1ss, it may be well briefly to state the case as it stands. As gainst the King, it rests upon no impregnable, but certainly upon respectable authority. The Prince of Orange, in his Kimous Apology, calls Philip the murderer of his wife and of his son, and says that there was proof of the facts in Trance. It calludes to the violent death of Carlos almost as fit were at indisputable truth. "As for Don Carlos," he says, "was he not our future sovereign? And if the father could allege aguinst his son fit cause for death, was it not rather for us to judge him than for three or four monks or inquisitots of Stant?"

The historian, P. Matthicu, relates that Philip assembled his council of conscience, that they recommended merey, that hereupon Philip grav the matter to the inquisition, by which tribunal Carlos was declared a hereite on account of his connection with Protestants, and for his attempt against his father's life was condemned to death, and that the sen-

legume, mere de deux filles vraies hentieres d'Espaigne "-Afologie, 34, 159. The part of this accuration relative to the Queen is entirely disproved by the letters of the French envos Fourquevaulx Fide Von Raumer, Gesch Furopas, in 129 132, and Hist Briefe, 1, 113.

and he he Coak at these

157. Mais il a en dispense. De qui du pape du Rome qui est un Dieu en terre. Certes c'est ce que je croi car le Dieu du ciel nu

tence was executed by four slaves, two holding the arms, one the feet, while the fourth strangled him.

De Thou gives the following account of the transaction, having derived many of his details from the oral communications of Louis de Foix.²

Philip imagined that his son was about to escape from Spain, and to make his way to the Netherlands. The King also believed himself in danger of assassination from Carlos his chief evidence being that the Prince always carried pistoli in the pockets of his loose breeches. As Carlos wished always to be alone at night without any domestic in his chamber, De Foix had arranged for him a set of pulleys, by means of which he could open or shut his door without rising from his bed. He always slept with two pistols and two drawn swords under his pillow, and had two loaded arquebusses in a wardrobe close at hand. These remarkable precautions would seem rather to indicate a profound fear of being himself assassinated; but they were nevertheless supposed to justify Philip's suspicions, that the Infante was meditating parricide. On Christmas eve, however (1567),

¹ Hist. de France et des choses mémorables advenucs aux provinces étrangères durant sept années de paix (Paris, 1606), 1598-1604. Compare the admirable article by the historian Ranke; "Zur Geschichte des Don Carlos." (Aus dem 46ten Bande der Wiener Jahrbücher der Litteratur besonders abgedruckt). Wien, 1829. Carl Gerold.

² It is surprising that the illustrious historian Rankc, to whose pamphlet on this subject we are under deep obligations, should undervalue the testimony of this personage. He calls him, "a ccrtain Foix, who had known the Prince and had arranged the lock of his door," adding, that "the evidence of a man belonging only to an inferior class of society is of course not conclusive." ("Das Zeugniss eines Menschen der nur einem untergeordneten Kreise der Gesellschaft angehörte reicht wie sich versteht nicht aus.") Certainly one would suppose the man, from this contemptuous notice, a mere locksmith. Even had he been but a mechanic, his testimony would seem to us much more valuable in such an age of dissimulation than if he had been a prime minister, a cardinal, or a king; always supposing that he testified to things within his knowledge. Louis de Foix was no mcchanic, however, but a celebrated engineer, a native of Paris, the architect of the palace and monastery of the Escorial, and the inventor of the machinery by which the water of the Tagus was carried to the highest parts of the city of Toledo. On his return to France, he distinguished himself by which is a swift in the harbour at Bayonne, and by other works of public and the swift is the swift in the s is hardly fair to depreciate the statements of such a man upon the ground of his inferiority in social position.

Don Carlos told his confessor that he had determined to kill a man. The priest, in consequence, refused to admit him to the communion. The Prince demanded, at least, a wafer which was not consecrated in order that he might seem to the people to be participating in the sacrament The confessor declined the proposal, and, immediately re-pairing to the King narrated the whole story. Philip exclaimed that he was lumself the man whom the Prince in tended to kill, but that measures should be forthwith taken to prevent such a design. The monarch then consulted the Holy Office of the inquisition and the resolution was taken to arrest his son. De Foix was compelled to alter the pulleys of the door to the Prince's chamber in such a manner that it could be opened without the usual noise, which was almost sure to awaken him At midnight, recordingly, Count Lerma entered the room so stealthily that the arms were all removed from the Prince's pillow and the wardrobe without awakening the sleeper. Philip, Ruy Gomez, the Duke de apartment Carlos still slept so profoundly that it was necessars for Lerma to shake him violently by the arm before he could be aroused. Starting from his sleep in the dead of night, and sceing his fither thus accompanied, before his bed the Prince cried out that he was a dead man and carnestly besought the bystanders to make an end of him at once Philip assured him, however, that he was not come to kill him, but to chastise him paternally, and to recall him to his duty. He then read him a serious lecture, caused him to rise from his bed, took away his servants, and placed him under guard. He was made to array himself in mourn ing habiliments, and to sleep on a truckle bed. The Prince was in despair. He soon made various attempts upon his own life. He threw himself into the fire, but was rescued by his guards, with his clothes all in flames. He passed several days without taking any food, and then are so many patties of minced ment that he nearly died of indigestion He was also said to have attempted to choke himself with a diamond and to have been presented by his guard, to have filled his bed with ice, to have sat in cold draughts to have gone eleven days without food as one would think, sufficiently !!

seeing his son thus desperate, consulted once more with the Holy Office, and came to the decision that it was better to condemn him legitimately to death than to permit him to die by his own hand. In order, however, to save appearances, the order was secretly carried into execution. Don Carlos was made to swallow poison in a bowl of broth, of which he died in a few hours. This was at the commencement of his twenty-third year. The death was concealed for several months, and was not made public till after Alva's victory at Jenningen.

Such was the account drawn up by De Thou from the oral communications of De Foix, and from other sources not indicated. Certainly, such a narrative is far from being entitled to implicit credence. The historian was a contemporary, but he was not in Spain, and the engineer's testimony is, of course, not entitled to much consideration on the subject of the process and the execution (if there were an execution); although conclusive as to matters which had been within his personal knowledge. For the rest, all that it can be said to establish is the existence of the general rumour, that Carlos came to his death by foul means and in consequence of advice given by the inquisition.

On the other hand, in all the letters written at the period by persons in Madrid most likely, from their position, to know the truth, not a syllable has been found in confirmation of the violent death said to have been suffered by Carlon. Secretary Erasso, the papal nuncio Castagna, the Venetian envoy Cavalli, all express a conviction that the death of the Prince had been brought about by his own extravagant conduct and mental excitement; by alternations of starving and voracious eating, by throwing himself into the fire, by icing his bed, and by similar acts of desperation. Nearly every writer alludes to the incident of the refusal of the priest to admit Carlos to communion upon the ground of his confessed

¹ De Thou, v., liv. xliii. 433-437.
² "In allen diesen Schreiben," says Ranke, "so verschiedener Menschen habe ich niemals auch nur eine leise Andeutung von einem schriftlichen oder mündlichen Spruche, nirgends auch nur eine geringe Spur von einer gewaltsamen Herbeiführung dieses Todes gefunden. Sie wissen vielmehr sämtlich nur von einem sehr erklärlichen Verlaufe der Krankheit, auf welche ein naturliches Verscheiden folgte."—Zur Geschichte, etc.

deadly hatred to an individual whom all supposed to be the King It was also universally believed that Carlos meant to kill his fither. The nuncio asked Spinosa (then President of Castile) if this report were true "If nothing more were to be ferred," answered the priest, "the King would protect himself by other measures, but the matter was worse, if worse could be "1 The King, however, summoned all the foreign diflomatic body, and assured them that the story was false? After his arrest, the Prince, according to Castagna, attempted various means of suicide, abstraining, at last, many days from oursing, upon his death

megyrist of Philip the Second, speaks of the death of Carlos as a natural one, but

leaves a dark kind of mystery about the symptoms of his He states, that the Prince was tried and con demned by a commission or junta, consisting of Spinosa, Ruy Gomez, and the Licentiate Virviesca, but that he was carried off by an illness, the nature of which he does not describe 4

I lorent found nothing in the records of the inquisition to prove that the Holy Office had ever condemned the Prince or instituted any process against him. He states that he was condemned by a commission, but that he died of a sickness which supervened It must be confessed that the illness was a convenient one, and that such diseases are very apt to attack individuals whom tyrants are disposed to remove from their path, while desirous, at the same time, to save appearances It would certainly be presumptuous to accept implicitly the narrative of De I hou, which is literally followed by Hoofd," and by many modern writers On the other hand, it would be an exaggeration of historical scepticism to absolve Philip from the murder of his son, solely upon negative testimony. The people about court did not believe in the crime. They saw no proofs of it Of course they saw none Philip

¹ Lanke Zur Geschichte, etc. 2 Ibrd

^{3 &}quot;I ero che prima semi re pareva che nel suo parlar dicesse cose vane e di poco fon l'amento et allora principio a d'scorrere gravemente e di hu mio prudente - Zur Gesch e le, etc., 26

^{*} Calvera. Felipe el Pra lerte fila vin. 3 Select Hist , 179 180.

would take good care that there should be none if he had made up his mind that the death of the Prince should be considered a natural one. An à priori argument, which omits the character of the suspected culprit, and the extraordinary circumstances of time and place, is not satisfactory. Philip thoroughly understood the business of secret midnight murder. We shall soon have occasion to relate the elaborate and ingenious method by which the assassination of Montigny was accomplished and kept a profound secret from the whole world, until the letters of the royal assassin, after three centuries' repose, were exhumed, and the foul mystery revealed. Philip was capable of any crime. Moreover, in his letter to his aunt, Queen Catharine of Portugal, he distinctly declares himself, like Abraham, prepared to go all lengths in obedience to the Lord. "I have chosen in this matter," he said, "to make the sacrifice to God of my own flesh and blood, and to prefer His service and the universal welfare to all other human considerations." Whenever the letter to Pius V. sees the light, it will appear whether the sacrifice which the monarch thus made to his God proceeded beyond the imprisonment and condemnation of his son, or was completed by the actual immolation of the victim.

With regard to the Prince himself, it is very certain that, if he had lived, the realms of the Spanish crown would have numbered one tyrant more. Carlos from his earliest youth, was remarkable for the ferocity of his character. The Emperor Charles was highly pleased with him, then about fourteen years of age, upon their first interview after the abdication. He flattered himself that the lad had inherited his own martial genius together with his name. Carlos took much interest in his grandfather's account of his various battles, but when the flight from Innspruck was narrated, he repeated many times, with much vehemence, that he never would have fled; to which position he adhered, not-withstanding all the arguments of the Emperor, and very

And not the Empress, wife of Maximilian II., as stated by Cabrera, who publishes the letter of January 21, 1568 (l. vii. c. xxii. 475). Ranke has corrected this error.—Zur Geschichte des Don Carlos, etc.

² "Mas en fin yo e querido hazer en esta parte sacrificio a Dios de mi propria carne i sangre, i preserir su servicio i el benesicio i bien universal à las otras consideraciones umanas," etc., etc.—Letter of Philip, apud Cabrera, vii. xxii. 475. V. lib. viii. 405-501.

much to his amusement. The young Prince was always fond of soldiers, and histened eagerly to discourses of war. He was in the habit also of recording the names of any military persons who, according to custom, frequently made offers of thur services to the heir apparent, and of causing them to take a solemn oath to keep their engingments. No other indications of warlke talent, however, have been preserved concerning him "He was crafty, ambitious, cruel, violent," says the envoy Surano, "a hater of buffoons, a lover of soldiers." It is the property of t

in the habit and of amusing himsett with uncir dying contraining. It also frequently took pleasure in roasting them alive. He once received a present of a very large snake from some person who seemed able young Prince.

bit its master's fing.,

retaliated by biting off its head "

He was excessively angry at the suggestion that the prince who has expected to spring from his father's marriage with the English Queen, would one day reign over the Netherlands, and swore he would challenge him to mortal combat in order to prevent such an infingement of his rights. His father and grandfuther were both highly discreted with this manifestation of spirit," but it was not decreed that the world should witness the execution of these fraternal intentions against the babe which was never to be born.

Lerocity, in short, seems to have been the leading characteristic of the unhappy Carlos His preceptor, a man of

^{# &}quot; C animoso, accorto, crudele, ami atroso, inimicissimo di suffoni, amicissimo di sol lati." - Suriani MS

Strada, vin. 313.

Dimentra di haver an animo fiero, et tra li effetti che si raccon tavano uno e che alle volte che da la caccia li veniva portato lepre o

[&]quot; "Con somma al'egretta in'eso. -Ital.

learning and merit, who was called "the honourable John," tried to mitigate this excessive ardour of temperament by a course of Cicero de Officiis, which he read to him daily. Neither the eloquence of Tully, however, nor the precepts of the honourable John, made the least impression upon this very savage nature. As he grew older he did not grow wiser nor more gentle. He was prematurely and grossly licentious. All the money which, as a boy he was allowed, he spent upon women of low character, and when he was penniless, he gave them his chains, his medals, even the clothes from his back. He took pleasure in affronting respectable females when he met them in the streets, insulting them by the coarsest language and gestures. Being cruel, cunning, fierce, and licentious, he seemed to combine many of the worst qualities of a lunatic. That he probably was one is the best defence which can be offered for his conduct. In attempting to offer violence to a female, while he was at the university of Alcalà, he fell down a stone staircase, from which cause he was laid up for a long time with a severely wounded head, and was supposed to have injured his hrain.

The traits of ferocity recorded of him during his short life are so numerous that humanity can hardly desire that it should have been prolonged. A few drops of water having once fallen upon his head, from a window, as he passed through the street, he gave peremptory orders to his guard to burn the house to the ground, and to put every one of its inhabitants to the sword. The soldiers went forthwith to execute the order, but, more humane than their master, returned with the excuse that the holy sacrament of the Viaticum had that moment been carried into the house. This appeal to the superstition of the Prince successfully suspended the execution of the crime which his incon-

^{1 &}quot;Il precettore suo è nominato l'honorato Giovanni, che e di quelli belli costumi che si possano desiderar in alcun altro spagnuolo."-Radovaro MS.

² Badovaro MS.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Brantôme (usâ), ii. 117.

⁵ Hoofd, v. 179 Compare Strada, i. 213. See also "Relacion de lo sucedido en la enfermedad del Principe, nuestro Señor, por el Doctor Olivares, medico de su camara."—Papiers d'Etat de Granvelle, vi. 587, 599.

cevable malignity had contemplated ¹ On another occa sion, a nobleman who slept near his chamber, failed to answer his bell on the instant Springing upon his dilatory attendant, as soon as he made his appearance, the Prince seized him in his arms and was about to throw him from the window, when the cries of the unfortunate chamberlain attracted attention, and procured a rescue ²

The Cardinal Espinoza had once accidentally detained at his palace an actor who was to perform a favourite part by express command of Don Carlos Furious at this detention, the Prince took the priest by the throat as soon as he presented himself at the palace, and plucking his diager from its sheath, swore, by the soul of his father, that he would take his fire on the spot. The grand anguistic fell on his knees and begged for mercy, but it is probable that the

entrance of the King alone saved his life

There was often something ludicrous mingled with the atrocious in these ungovernable explosions of with Don Pedro Manuel, his chamberlain, had once, by his command, ordered a pair of boots to be made for the Prince When brought home, they were, unfortunately, too tight The Prince, after vainly endeavouring to pull them on, fell into a blazing passion. He swore that it was the fault of Don Pedro, who always wore tight boots himself, but he at the same time protested that his father was really at the bottom of the affair. He gave the young hobleman a box on the ear for thus conspiring with the King against his comfort, and then ordered the boots to be chopped into luttle pieces, stewed, and seasoned. Then sending for the culprit shoe maker he ordered him to ear his own boots, this converted into a pottage, and with this punishment, the unfortunate mechanic, who had thought his life forfeited, was sufficiently glad to comply 4

Even the pussant Alva could not escape his violence. Like all the men in whom his father reposed confidence, the Duke was odious to the berr apparent. Don Carlos detested him with the whole force of his little soul. He hated him as only a virtuous person deserved to be hated by such

¹ Cabrera, lib vii c xxii p 470 ² Ibid ³ Cabrera, ubi sur

⁴ Cabrera, 111 470 Brantome, art Philippe II , 11 115

a ruffian. The heir apparent had taken the Netherlands under his patronage. He had even formed the design of repairing secretly to the provinces, and could not, therefore, disguise his wrath at the appointment of the Duke. doubtful whether the country would have benefited by the gratification of his wishes. It is possible that the pranks of so malignant an ape might have been even more mischievous than the concentrated and vigorous tyranny of an Alva. When the new Captain-General called, before his departure. to pay his respects to the Infante, the Duke seemed, to his surprise, to have suddenly entered the den of a wild beast. Don Carlos sprang upon him with a howl of fury, brandishing a dagger in his hand. He uttered reproaches at having been defrauded of the Netherland government. He swore that Alva should never accomplish his mission, nor leave his presence alive. He was proceeding to make good the threat with his poniard, when the Duke closed with him. A violent struggle succeeded. Both rolled together on the ground, the Prince biting and striking like a demoniac, the Duke defending himself as well as he was able, without attempting his adversary's life. Before the combat was decided, the approach of many persons put an end to the disgraceful scene.1 As decent a veil as possible was thrown over the transaction, and the Duke departed on his mission. Before the end of the year, the Prince was in the prison whence he never came forth alive.

The figure of Don Carlos was as misshapen as his mind. His head was disproportionately large, his limbs were rickety, one shoulder was higher, one leg longer, than the other. With features resembling those of his father, but with a swarthy instead of a fair complexion, with an expression of countenance both fierce and foolish, and with a character such as we have sketched it, upon the evidence of those who

¹ Cabrera, lib. vii. c. xiii. 442, 443.

² "Ha la testa di grandezza sproportionata al corpo, di pelo nero et di debole complessione."—Badovaro MS.

[&]quot;Se bene e simile al padre di faccia e pero dissimil di costuni."—Suriano MS.

[&]quot;Carolus, præter colorem et capillum, ceterum corpore mendosus: quippe humero elatior et libià alterà longior eral, nec minus dehonestamenlum ab indole feroci et contumaci."—Strada, x. 509.

knew him well, it is indeed strange that he should ever have been transformed by the magic of poetry into a romantic hero. As cruel and cumming as his father, as mad as his great grandmother, he has left a name, which not even his dark and mysterious fate can render interesting executioner whose industry had been so untiring. The sentence which was affixed to his breast, as he suffered, stated that he had been guilty of much malpractice; that he had executed many persons without a warrant, and had suffered many persons, for a bribe, to escape their doom.¹ The reader can judge which of the two clauses constituted the most sufficient reason.

During all these triumphs of Alva, the Prince of Orange had not lost his self-possession. One after another, each of his bold, skilfully-conceived, and carefully prepared plans had failed. Villers had been entirely discomfited at Dalhem, Cocqueville had been cut to pieces in Picardy, and now the valiant and experienced Louis had met with an entire overthrow in Friesland. The brief success of the patriots at Heiliger-Lee had been washed out in the bloodtorrents of Jemmingen. Tyranny was more triumphant, the provinces more timidly crouching, than ever. The friends on whom William of Orange relied in Germany, never enthusiastic in his cause, although many of them true-hearted and liberal, now grew cold and anxious. For months long, his most faithful and affectionate allies, such men as the Elector of Hesse and the Duke of Wirtemberg, as well/as the less trustworthy Augustus of Saxony, had earnestly expressed their opinion that, under the circumstances, his best course was to sit still and watch the course of events.

It was known that the Emperor had written an urgent letter to Philip on the subject of his policy in the Netkerlands in general, and concerning the position of Orange in particular. All persons, from the Emperor down to the pettiest potentate seemed now of opinion that the Prince had better pause; that he was, indeed, bound to wait the issue of that remonstrance.² "Your highness must sit still," said Landgrave William. "Your highness must sit still," said Augustus of Saxony. "You must move neither hand nor foot in the cause of the perishing provinces," said the Emperor. "Not a soldier—horse, foot, or dragoon—shall be levied within the Empire. If you violate the peace of the

¹ Bor, v. 269, 270. Hoofd, v. 191. ² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 786. Archives et Correspondance, iii. 130-136, 144, 145, 214-219.

realm, and embroil us with our excellent brother and cousin Philip, it is at your own peni You have nothing to do but to keep quiet and await his answer to our letter "But the Prince knew how much effect his sitting still would produce upon the cause of liberty and religion. He knew how much effect the Emperor's letter was like to have upon the heart of Philip. He knew that the more impenetrable the darkness now gathering over that land of doom which he had devoted his life to defend, the more urgently was he forbidden to turn his face away from it in its affliction.

It was about this time that a deep change came over his mind Hitherto, although nominally attached to the com munion of the ancient Church, his course of life and habits of mind had not led him to deal very earnestly with things beyond the world The severe duties, the grave character of the cause to which his days were henceforth to be devoted. had already led him to a closer inspection of the essential at tributes of Christianity He was now enrolled for life as a soldier of the Reformation 3 The Reformation was hence forth his fatherland, the sphere of his duty and his affection The religious Reformers became his brethren, whether in France. Germany, the Netherlands, or England Yet his mind had taken a higher flight than that of the most eminent Reformers His goal was not a new doctrine, but religious liberty In an age when to think was a crime, and when bigotry and a persecuting spirit characterized Romanists and Lutherans, Calvinists and Zwinglians, he had dared to an nounce freedom of conscience as the great object for which noble natures should strive In an age when toleration was a vice, he had the manhood to cultivate it as a virtue. His parting advice to the Reformers of the Netherlands, when he left them for a season in the spring of 1567, was to sink all lesser differences in religious union Those of the Augs burg Confession, and those of the Calvanistic Church, in

Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, in 1 19 Archives et Correspondance, in 140, et squ

The Prince went unit the Reformed worship step by step, and it was not until the 23rd of October, 1573, that he publicly attended communon at a Calvinust meeting, but where is not Van Wyn op Wagenaer, 11 73, and Van der Wall.

there of a operate as incapable of comminging as oil and at t, were, in his judgment, capable of friendly amalgameters. The appealed eloquently to the good and influential of the first to unite in one common cause against oppression. Ly as his toyoning daily more and more the cause of the purified Church, and becoming daily more alive to the corruption of Rome, be was yet willing to tolerate all forms of we hip, and to leave rea on to combat error.

Without a perturb of cant or fanaticism, he had become a de ply telepion, man. Hitherto he had been only a man of the world and a state man, but from this fints forth he began calculy to pely upon God's providence in all the emergencies or her eventful life. His letters written to his most confidentral friends, to be read only by them gives, and which have tion gazed upon by no other eyes; until after the lapse of nearly three centuries, abundantly, prove his sincere and simple trust. This sentiment was 'not assumed for effect to delude others, but cherished as a correct support for himself. His religion was not a cloak to this designs, but a consolation in his disasters. In his letter of instruction to his most confidential agent, John Barins, while he declared himself frankly in favour of the Problemant principles, he expressed his extreme repugnance to the persecution of Catholics. "Should we obtain power over any city or cities," he wrote, "let the communities of papistly be as much respected and protected as possible. Let whem be overcome, not by violence, but with gentle-mindledness and virtuous treatment." After the terrible disafter at Jemmingen, he had written to Louis, consoling him, in the most affectionate language, for the unfortunate result of his campaign. Not a word of repreach escaped from him, hilthough his brother had conducted the operations in Friesland, after the battle of Heiliger-Lee, in a manner quite contralry to his own advice. He had counselled against a battle, and fixed foretold a defeat; but after the battle had been fought and a crushing defeat sustained, his language breathed only unwavering submission to the will of God, and continued confidence in his own

¹ Wagenaer, Vaderl. Hist., vi. 227, 228. Hoofd, iv. 132, 133.

² "Sacht moedigheyt ende deuchtsamkeit."—Archives, etc., iii. 106-200.

³ Archives et Correspondance, etc., 257-261.

"You may be well assured, my brother," he wrote, "that I have never felt anything more keenly than the piti able misfortune which has happened to you, for many reasons which you can easily imagine Moreover, it hinders us much in the levy which we are making, and has greatly chilled the hearts of those who otherwise would have been ready to give us assistance Nevertheless, since it has thus pleased God, it is necessary to have patience and to lose not courage, conforming ourselves to His divine will, as for my part I have determined ceeding onv Sact 15

ti anguillus when the

storm was wildest and the night darkest He drew his con solations and refreshed his courage at the never failing foun

tains of Divine mercy
"I go to morrow,' he wrote to the unworthy Anna of
Saxony, "but when I shall return or when I shall see you, I cannot, on my honour, tell you with certainty I have re solved to place myself in the hands of the Almighty, that he mry guide me whither it is His good pleasure that I should go I see well enough that I am destined to pass this life in misery and labour, with which I am well content, since if thus pleases the Ommpotent, for I know that I have merited still greater chastisement I only implore Him graciously to send me strength to endure with patience "2

In May, 1568, the Emperor Maximilian had formally issued a requisition to the Prince of Orange to lay down his arms, and to desist from all levies and machinations against the King of Spain and the peace of the realm mons he was commanded to obey on pain of forfeiting all rights, fiefs, privileges and endowments bestowed by imperial hands on himself or his predecessors, and of incurring the heaviest disgrace, punishment, and penalties of the

Empire 3

To this document the Prince replied in August, having paid in the meantime but little heed to its precepts. Now that the Emperor, who at first was benignant, had begun to

Archives et Correspondance, etc., m 276

² Archives etc., de la Marson d'Orange Nassau, 111 3 See the letter in Gachard, Correspondance de

m,15

frown on his undertaking, he did not slacken in his own endeavours to set his army on foot. One by one those among the princes of the Empire who had been most staunch in his cause, and were still most friendly to his person, grew colder as tyranny became stronger; but the ardour of the Prince was not more chilled by their despair than by the overthrow at Jemmingen, which had been its cause. In August, he answered the letter of the Emperor, respectfully but warmly. He still denounced the tyranny of Alva and the arts of Granvelle with that vigorous eloquence which was always at his command, while, as usual, he maintained a show of almost exaggerated respect for their monarch. It was not to be presumed, he said, that his Majesty, "a king debonair and bountiful," had ever intended such cruelties as those which had been rapidly retraced in the letter, but it was certain that the Duke of Alva had committed them all of his own authority. He trusted, moreover, that the Emperor, after he had read the "Justification" which the Prince had recently published, would appreciate the reason for his taking up He hoped that his Majesty would now consider the resistance just, Christian, and conformable to the public He expressed the belief that rather than interpose any hindrance, his Majesty would thenceforth rather render assistance "to the poor and desolate Christians," even as it was his Majesty's office and authority to be the last refuge of the injured.1

The "Justification against the false blame of his calumniators by the Prince of Orange," to which the Prince thus referred, has been mentioned in a previous chapter. This remarkable paper had been drawn up at the advice of his friends, Landgrave William and Elector Augustus,² but it was not the only document which the Prince caused to be published at this important epoch. He issued a formal declaration of war against the Duke of Alva; he addressed a solemn and eloquent warning or proclamation to all the inhabitants of the Netherlands. These documents are extremely important and interesting. Their phraseology shows

¹ See the letter in Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit.,

² Archives, etc., de la Maison d'Orange, iii. 183-186. ³ The Declaration is published in Bor, iv. 253, 254.

the intentions and the spirit by which the Prince was actuated on first engaging in the struggle Without the Prince and his efforts at this juncture, there would probably have never been a free Netherland commonwealth. It is certain, likewise, that without an enthusiastic passion for civil and religious liberty throughout the masses of the Netherland people, there would have been no successful effort on the part of the Prince He knew his countrymen, while they, from highest to humblest, recognized in him their saviour There was, however, no pretence of a revolutionary move ment. The Prince came to maintain, not to overthrow The freedom which had been enjoyed in the provinces until the accession of the Burgundian dynasty, it was his purpose to restore The attitude which he now assumed was a peculiar one in history This defender of a people's cause set up no revolutionary standard. In all his documents he paid apparent reverence to the authority of the King. By a fiction, which was not unphilosophical, he assumed that the monarch was incapable of the crimes which he charged upon the Viceroy Thus he did not assume the character of a rebel in arms against his prince, but in his own capacity of sovereign he levied troops and waged war against a satrap whom he chose to consider false to his master's orders. In the interest of Philip, assumed to be identical with the wel fare of his people, he took up arms against the tyrant who was sacrificing both This mask of loyalty would never save his head from the block, as he well knew, but some spirits, lofty as his own, might perhaps be influenced by a noble

pality stand boldly forth to do battle with the most powerful monarch in the world. At his own expense, and by almost superhuman exertions, he had assembled nearly thirty thousand men. He now boldly proclaimed to the world, and especially to the inhabitants of the provinces his motives, his purposes, and his hopes

"We, by Gods grace Prince of Orange," said his declaration of 31st August, 1568, "salute all"

Majesty To few people is it unknown have for a long time sought to govern

their pleasure. Abusing his Majesty's goodness, they have persuaded him to decree the introduction of the inquisition into the Netherlands. They well understood, that in case the Netherlanders could be made to tolerate its exercise, they would lose all protection to their liberty; that if they opposed its introduction, they would open those rich provinces as a vast field of plunder. We had hoped that his Majesty, taking the matter to heart, would have spared his hereditary provinces from such utter ruin. We have found our hopes futile. We are unable, by reason of our loyal service due to his Majesty, and of our true compassion for the faithful lieges, to look with tranquillity any longer at such murders, robberies, outrages, and agony. We are, moreover, certain that his Majesty has been badly informed upon Netherland matters. We take up arms, therefore, to oppose the violent tyranny of the Spaniards, by the help of the merciful God, who is the enemy of all blood-thirstiness. Cheerfully inclined to wager our life and all our worldly wealth on the cause, we have now, God be thanked, an excellent army of cavalry, infantry, and artillery, raised all at our own expense. We summon all loyal subjects of the Netherlands to come and help us. Let them take to heart the uttermost need of the country, the danger of perpetual slavery for themselves and their children, and of the entire overthrow of the Evangelical religion. Only when Alva's blood-thirstiness shall have been at last overpowered, can the provinces hope to re-cover their pure administration of justice, and a prosperous condition for their commonwealth."1

In the "warning" or proclamation to all the inhabitants of the Netherlands, the prince expressed similar sentiments. He announced his intention of expelling the Spaniards for ever from the country. To accomplish the mighty undertaking, money was necessary. He accordingly called on his countrymen to contribute, the rich out of their abundance, the poor even out of their poverty, to the furtherance of the cause. To do this, while it was yet time, he solemnly warned them "before God, the fatherland, and the world." After the title of this paper were cited the 28th, 29th, and 30th verses of the tenth chapter of Proverbs. The favourite motto

of the Prince, "pro lege, rege, grege," was also affixed to the document 1

These appeals had, however, but little effect. Of three hundred thousand crowns, promised on behalf of leading nobles and merchants of the Netherlands by Marcus Perez, but ten or twelve thousand came to hand 2 The appeals to the gentlemen who had signed the Compromise, and to many others who had, in times past, been favourable to the liberal party, were powerless. A poor Anabaptist preacher collected a small sum from a refugee congregation on the outskirts of Holland, and brought it, at the penl of his life, into the Prince's camp It came from people, he said, whose will was better than the gift. They never wished to be repaid, he said, except by kindness, when the cause of reform should be triumphant in the Netherlands The Prince signed a receipt for the money, expressing himself touched by this sympathy from these poor outcasts. In the course of time other contributions from similar sources, principally collected by dissenting preachers, starving and persecuted church com munities, were received. The poverty stricken exiles con tributed far more, in proportion, for the establishment of civil and religious liberty, than the wealthy merchants or the haughty nobles

Late in September, the Prince mustered his army in the province of Treves, near the monastery of Romersdorf His force amounted to nearly thirty thousand men, of whom nine thousand were cavalry. Lumey, Count de la Marck, now joined him at the head of a picked band of troopers, a bold, ferocious partisan, descended from the celebrated Wild Boar of Ardennes Like Civilis, the ancient Batavian hero, he had sworn to leave hair and beard unshorn till the liberation of the country was achieved, or at least till the death of Egmont, whose blood relation he was, had been avenged a It is pro

The "Waarschouwing" is published in full in the Bycoegsel van

Authentik Stuk, tot P. Hor, Hist, 121 123
² Bor, 1v 251, 252. Hoofd, v 183
³ Banath, Hist. der Schwanze, 1 526. Letter of P. W. Boomgonvilt. to C P Hoofd, 7th August, 1606.

Brandt, 1 516 5 Bor, 1 312 Hoofd, 183 - Compare Strada, vii 338, P

Wagenaer, vi 286 Grot Ann , 1 32, Meteren, ii Bor, iv 256 Strada, liv vn 338 Wagenaer,

bable that the fierce conduct of this chieftain, and particularly the cruelties exercised upon monks and papists to by his troops, dishonoured the cause more than their valour could advance it. But in those stormy times such rude but incisive instruments were scarcely to be neglected, and the name of Lumey was to be for ever associated with the earliest and most important triumphs of the liberal cause.

It was fated, however, that but few laurels should be won by the patriots in this campaign. The Prince crossed the Rhine at Saint Feit, a village belonging to himself.2 He descended along the banks as far as the neighbourhood of Cologne. Then, after hovering in apparent uncertainty about the territories of Juliers and Limburg, he suddenly, on a bright moonlight night, crossed the Meuse with his whole army, in the neighbourhood of Stochem.3 The operation was brilliantly effected. A compact body of cavalry, according to the plan which had been more than once adopted by Julius Cæsar, was placed in the midst of the current, under which shelter the whole army successfully forded the river.4 The Meuse was more shallow than usual, but the water was as high as the soldiers' necks. This feat was accomplished on the night and morning of the 4th and 5th of October. It was considered so bold an achievement that its fame spread far and wide. The Spaniards began to tremble at the prowess of a Prince whom they had affected to despise. The very fact of the passage was flatly contradicted. An unfortunate burgher at Amsterdam was scourged at the whipping-post, because he mentioned it as a matter of common report.5 The Duke of Alva refused to credit the tale when it was announced to him. "Is the army of the Prince of Orange a flock of wild geese," he asked, "that it can fly over rivers like the Meuse?" Nevertheless it was true. The outlawed, exiled Prince stood once more on the borders of Brabant, with an army of disciplined troops at his back. His

¹ Bor, iv. 256. Hoofd, v. 183.
² Bor, iv. 256. Wagenaer, Vaderl. Hist., vi. 286. Meteren, 55.
³ "Relation de l'Expédition du Prince d'Orange en 1568," by the Secretary of State, Courteville, who accompanied the Duke of Alva during the campaign; in Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 319-337.

⁴ Hoofd, v. 185.

Meteren, f. 56.
6 Ibid. Strada, liv. vii. 340. ⁵ Hoofd, v. 185.

banners bore patriotic inscriptions "Pro Lege, Rege, Grege," was emblazoned upon some A pelican tearing her breast to nourish her young with her life blood was the pathetic emblem of others." It was his determination to force or entice the Duke of Aha into a general engagement He was desirous to wipe out the disgrace of Jemmingen Could he plant his victorious standard thus in the very heart of the equity, he felt that thousands would rall, around it The country would rise almost to a man, could he achieve a victory over the tyrant, flushed as he was with victory, and sated with blood

With beamers flying, drams beating, trumpets sounding, with all the pomp and defiance which an already victorious general could assume, Orange marched into Brabant, and took up a position within six thousand paces of Alva's en campment. His plan was at every hazard to dare or to decoy his adversary into the chances of a stricken field. The Go vemor was entrenched at a place called Keiserslager, which Julius Cesar had once occupied. The city of Maestricht was in his immediate neighbourhood, which was thus completely under his protection, while it furnished him with supplies. The Prince sent to the Duke a herald, who was to propose that all prisoners who might be taken in the coming campaign should be exchanged instead of being executed. The herald, booted and spurred, even as he had dismounted from his horse, was instantly hanged. This was the significant answer to the mission of mercy. Alva held no parley with rebels before a battle, nor gave quarter afterwards.

In the meantime, the Duke had carefully studied the whole position of affairs, and had arrived at his conclusion. He was determined not to fight. It was obvious that the Prince would offer battle eagerly, ostentatiously, frequently, but the Governor was resolved never to accept the combat. Once taken, his resolution was unafterable. He recognized

² Bor, 1v 255 ffootd, v 184 ² Bor, 1v 255 Meteren, 56 Hoofd, 1v 185

the important difference between his own attitude at present, and that in which he had found himself during the past summer in Friesland. There a battle had been necessary, now it was more expedient to overcome his enemy by delay. In Friesland, the rebels had just achieved a victory over the choice troops of Spain. Here they were suffering from the stigma of a crushing defeat. Then, the army of Louis Nassau was swelling daily by recruits, who poured in from all the country round. Now, neither peasant nor noble dared lift a finger for the Prince. The army of Louis had been sustained by the one which his brother was known to be preparing. If their movements had not been checked, a junction would have been effected. The armed revolt would then have assumed so formidable an aspect, that rebellion would seem, even for the timid, a safer choice than loyalty. The army of the Prince, on the contrary, was now the last hope of the patriots. The three by which it had been preceded had been successively and signally vanquished.1

Friesland, again, was on the outskirts of the country. defeat sustained by the government there did not necessarily imperil the possession of the provinces. Brabant, on the contrary, was the heart of the Netherlands. Should the Prince achieve a decisive triumph then and there, he would be master of the nation's fate. The Viceroy knew himself to be odious, and he reigned by terror. The Prince was the object of the people's idolatry, and they would rally round him if they dared. A victory gained by the liberator over the tyrant would destroy the terrible talisman of invincibility by which Alva governed. The Duke had sufficiently demonstrated his audacity in the tremendous chastisement which he had inflicted upon the rebels under Louis. could now afford to play that scientific game of which he was so profound a master, without risking any loss of respect or authority. He was no enthusiast. Although he doubtless felt sufficiently confident of overcoming the Prince in a pitched battle, he had not sufficient relish for the joys of contest to be willing to risk even a remote possibility of defeat. His force, although composed of veterans and of the best musketeers and pikemen in Europe, was still some-

Relation du Secrétaire Courteville. Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 323-326. V. de Vynckt, ii. 113, 114. Bor, iv. 256, 257. Hoofd, v. 186.

what inferior in numbers to that of his adversary Against the twenty thousand foot and eight thousand horse of Orange, he could oppose only fifteen or sixteen thousand foot and fifty five hundred riders 1 Moreover the advantage which he had possessed in Friesland, a country only favourable to infantry, in which he had been stronger than his opponent, was now transferred to his new enemy On the plains of Brabant the Prince's superiority in cavalry was sure to tell The season of the year, too, was an important element in the calculation. The winter alone would soon disperse the bands of German mercenaries, whose expenses Orange was not able to support, even while in active service With unpaid wages and disappointed hopes of plunder, the rebel army would disappear in a few weeks as totally as if defeated in the open field In brief, Orange by a victory would gain new life and strength, while his defeat could no more than anticipate, by a few weeks, the destruction of his army, already inevitable Alva, on the contrary, might lose the mastery of the Netherlands, if unfortunate, and would gain no solid advantage if triumphant. The Prince had everything to hope, the Duke everything to fear, from the result of a general action *

The plan, thus deliberately resolved upon, was accomplished with faultless accuracy. As a work of art, the present campaign of Alva against Orange was a more consummate masterpiece than the more brilliant and dashing expedition into Firesland. The Duke had resolved to harg upon his adversary's skirts, to follow him move by move to check him at every turn, to harass him in a hundred ways, to foil all his enterprises, to parry all his strokes, and finally to drive him out of the country, after a totally barren campaign, when, as he felt certain, his ill paid hirelings would vanish in all directions and leave their patriot Prince a helpless and penniless adventure. The scheme thus sagacously conceived, his adversary, with all his efforts was unable to circumvent.

The campaign lasted little more than a month Twenty

¹ Strada lib vii 33⁸ Mendoza, f 77 V d Vyncki, u 113 — Compare Hoofd, v 186 Meteren, 56 Bentisoglio, lib v 77 78 ² Bor, ii 236 Hoofd V d Vyncki Courteville Meteren

nine times the Prince changed his encampment, and at every remove the Duke was still behind him, as close and seemingly as impalpable as his shadow. Thrice they were within cannon-shot of each other, twice without a single trench or rampart between them.² The country people refused the Prince supplies, for they trembled at the vengeance of the Governor. Alva had caused the irons to be removed from all the mills, so that not a bushel of corn could be ground in the whole province.3 The country thus afforded but little forage for the thirty thousand soldiers of the Prince. The troops, already discontented, were clamorous for pay and plunder. During one mutinous demonstration, the Prince's sword was shot from his side, and it was with difficulty that a general outbreak was suppressed.4 The soldiery were maddened and tantalized by the tactics of Alva. They found themselves constantly in the presence of an enemy, who seemed to court a battle at one moment and to vanish like a phantom at the next. They felt the winter approaching, and became daily more dissatisfied with the irritating hardships to which they were exposed. Upon the night of the 5th and 6th of October the Prince had crossed the Meuse at Stochem.⁵ Thence he had proceeded to Tongres, followed closely by the enemy's force, who encamped in the immediate neighbourhood. From Tongres he had moved to Saint Trond, still pursued and still baffled in the same cautious manner. The skirmishing at the outposts was incessant, but the main body was withdrawn as soon as there seemed a chance of its becoming involved.

From Saint Trond, in the neighbourhood of which he had remained several days, he advanced in a southerly direction towards Jodoigne. Count de Genlis, with a reinforcement of French Huguenots, for which the Prince had been waiting, had penetrated through the Ardennes, crossed the Meuse at Charlemont, and was now intending a junction

V. d. Vynckt, ii. 114. Strada, lib. vii. 346.
 Hoofd, v. 187. Letter of Duke of Alva to the Council of State from Cateau Cambresis, 22nd November, 1568, in Bor, iv. 257. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 808.

Bor, iv. 256. Hoofd, v. 186.
 Hoofd, v. 185. Courteville, 323.—Compare Mendoza, f. 79. Wagenaer, vi. 288.

with him at Waveren 1 The river Geta flowed between The Prince stationed a considerable force upon a hill near the stream to protect the passage, and then pro ceeded leisurely to send his army across the river Count Hoogstraaten, with the rear guard, consisting of about three thousand men, were alone left upon the hither bank, in order to provoke or to tempt the enemy, who, as usual, was encamped very near Alva refused to attack the main army, but rapidly detached his son, Don Frederic, with a force of four thousand foot and three thousand horse, to cut off the rear guard The movement was effected in a masterly manner, the hill was taken, the three thousand troops which had not passed the river were cut to pieces, and Vitelli hastily de spatched a gentleman named Barberini to implore the Duke

that his sagely conceived plans could not be comprehended even by his son and by his favourite officers, answered the enger messenger with peremptory violence Vitelli," he cried "Is he, or am I, to command in this cam paign? Tell him not to suffer a single man to cross the river Warn him against sending any more envoys to advise a battle, for should you or any other man dare to bring me another such message, I swear to you, by the head of the King, that you go not hence alive "5"

With this decisive answer the messenger had nothing for it but to gallop back with all haste, in order to participate in what might be left of the butchery of Count Hoogstraaten's force, and to prevent Vitelli and Don Frederic in their ill timed ardour, from crossing the river. This was properly effected, while in the meantime the whole rear guard of the patriots had been slaughtered A hundred or two, the last who remained, had made their escape from the field, and had The Spaniards

and with lifted ng consumed in

the flames or of springing out upon their spears. Thus en trapped, some chose the one course.

A few,

88

¹ Relation de Courteville, 327 329

² Strada, lib vii. 344.

to escape the fury of the fire and the brutality of the Spaniards, stabbed themselves with their own swords. Others embraced. and then killed each other, the enemies from below looking on, as at a theatrical exhibition; now hissing and now applauding, as the death struggles were more or less to their taste.' In a few minutes all the fugitives were dead. Nearly three thousand of the patriots were slain in this combat, including those burned or butchered after the battle was over.2 The Sieur de Louverwal was taken prisoner and soon afterwards beheaded in Brussels; but the greatest misfortune sustained by the liberal party upon this occasion was the death of Antony de Lalaing, Count of Hoogstraaten. This brave and generous nobleman, the tried friend of the Prince of Orange, and his colleague during the memorable scenes at Antwerp, was wounded in the foot during the action, by an accidental discharge of his own pistol. The injury, although apparently slight, caused his death in a few days.3 There seemed a strange coincidence in his good and evil fortunes. A casual wound in the hand from his own pistol while he was on his way to Brussels, to greet Alva upon his first arrival, had saved him from the scaffold. And now in his first pitched battle with the Duke, this seemingly triffing injury in the foot was destined to terminate his existence. Another peculiar circumstance had marked the event. At a gay supper in the course of this campaign, Hoogstraaten had teased Count Louis, in a rough, soldierly way, with his disaster at Jemmingen. He had affected to believe that the retreat upon that occasion had been unnecessary. "We have been now many days in the Netherlands," said he, "and we have seen nothing of the Spaniards but their backs." "And when the Duke does break loose," replied Louis, somewhat nettled, "I warrant you will see their faces soon enough, and remember them for the rest of your life." 4 The half-jesting remark was thus destined to become a gloomy prophecy.

This was the only important action during the campaign. Its perfect success did not warp Alva's purpose, and, notwithstanding the murmurs of many of his officers, he remained

Strada, lib. vii. 345.
 Mendoza, 88-92. Bor, iv. 256, 257. Relation de Courteville, etc.,

^{329-331.} Hoofd, v. 187. Mendoza, 88-92.

⁴ Ibid., 92.

firm in his resolution. After the termination of the battle on the Geta, and the Duke's obstinate refusal to pursue his ad vantage, the Baron de Chevreau dashed his pistol to the ground, in his presence, exclaiming that the Duke would never fight' The Governor smiled at the young man's chagnin, seemed even to approve his enthusiasm but reminded him that it was the business of an officer to fight, of a general to conquer If the victory were bloodless, so much the better for all

This action was fought on the 20th of October A few days afterwards the Prince made his junction with Genlis at Waveren, a place about three leagues from Louvain and from Brussels This auxiliary force was, however, insignificant There were only five hundred cavalry and three thousand foot, but so many women and children, that it seemed rather an emigrating colony than an invading army . They arrived If they had come earlier it would have been of little consequence, for it had been written that no laurels were to be gathered in that campaign. The fraternal spirit which existed between the Reformers in all countries was all which could be manifested upon the occasion The Prince was frustrated in his hopes of a general battle, still more bitterly disappointed by the supmeness of the country Not a voice was raised to welcome the deliverer. Not a single city opened its gates. All was crouching, silent, abject. The rising, which perhaps would have been universal had a bril hant victory been obtained, was, by the masterly tactics of Alva, rendered an almost inconcervable idea. The mutinous demonstrations in the Prince's camp became incessant, the soldiers were discontented and wears. What the Duke had foretold was coming to pass, for the Prince's army was already dissolving

Genlis and the other French officers were desirous that the Prince should abandon the Netherlands for the present, and come to the rescue of the Huguenots, who had again renewed the religious war under Condé and Coligny 5 The German soldiers, however, would listen to no such proposal They had enlisted to fight the Duke of Alva in the Netherlands, and

¹ Hoofd, v 187 Mendoza, 90. 2 111d

Relation de Courteville, etc., 332, 333 * Ibid., 331 Bor, iv 256 257 Archives et Correspondance, in 303 310

would not hear of making war against Charles IX. in France.1 The Prince was obliged to countermarch towards the Rhine. He recrossed the Geta, somewhat to Alva's astonishment,2 and proceeded in the direction of the Meuse. The autumn rains, however, had much swollen that river since his passage at the beginning of the month, so that it could no longer be forded. He approached the city of Liege, and summoned their Bishop, as he had done on his entrance into the country, to grant a free passage to his troops. The Bishop, who stood in awe of Alva, and who had accepted his protection, again refused.3 The Prince had no time to parley. He was again obliged to countermarch, and took his way along the high road to France, still watched and closely pursued by Alva, between whose troops and his own daily skirmishes took place. At Le Quesnoy, the Prince gained a trifling advantage over the Spaniards; at Cateau Cambresis he also obtained a slight and easy victory; but by the 17th of November the Duke of Alva had entered Cateau Cambresis, and the Prince had crossed the frontier of France.4

The Maréchal de Cossé, who was stationed on the boundary of France and Flanders, now harassed the Prince by very similar tactics to those of Alva.5 He was, however, too weak to inflict any serious damage, although strong enough to create perpetual annoyance. He also sent a secretary to the Prince, with a formal prohibition, in the name of Charles IX., against his entering the French territory with his troops.6

Besides these negotiations, conducted by Secretary Favelles on the part of Maréchal de Cossé, the King, who was excessively alarmed, also despatched the Maréchal Gaspar de Schomberg on the same service. That envoy accordingly addressed to the Prince a formal remonstrance in the name of his sovereign. Charles IX., it was represented, found it very strange that the Prince should thus enter the French

¹ Bor, uhi sup. Archives et Correspondance, uhi sup.

Courteville, Relation. etc., 333.
 Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, iii. 19-34, and

Courteville, Relation, etc., 333, et seq. Bor, iv. 256, 257. Mendoza, 92-98.

⁵ Bor, iv. 257. Hoofd, v. 188*. De Thou, v. 467-472. Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., iii. 313, 314.

territory The Ling was not aware that he had ever given him the least cause for hostile proceedings, could not there fore take it in good part that the Prince should thus enter France with a 'large and puissant army,' because no po tentate, however humble, could tolerate such a proceeding, much less a great and powerful monarch Orange was there fore summoned to declare his intentions, but was at the same time informed that if he merely desired "to pass amiably, through the country, and would give assurance, and request permission to that effect, under his hand and seal, his Majesty would take all necessary measures to secure that amiable passage

The Prince replied by a reference to the statements which he had already made to Marechal de Cosse He averred that he had not entered France with evil intent, but rither with a desire to render very humble service to his Majesty, so far as he could do so with a clear conscience

Touching the Kings inability to remember having given any occasion to hostile proceedings on the part of the Prince, he replied that he would pass that matter by Although he could adduce many, various, and strong reasons for violent measures, he was not so devoid of understanding as not to recognize the futility of attempting anything by his own per sonal means, against so great and powerful a king in com

parison with whom he was "but a petty companion

"Since the true religion,' continued Orange, 'is a public and general affair, which ought to be preferred to all private matters, since the Prince, as a true Christian, is held by his honour and conscience to procure, with all his strength, its advancement and establishment in every place whatever, since, on the other hand, according to the edict published in September last hy his Majesty, attempts have been made to force in their consciences all those who are of the Christian religion and since it has been determined to exterminate the pure word of God, and the entire exercise thereof, and to permit no other religion than the Roman Catholic, a thing very prejudicial to the neighbouring nations where there is a free exercise of the Christian religion, therefore the Prince would put no faith in the assertions of his Majesty,

¹ Pieces concernant les Troubles des Pays 95 Archives of the Hague, MS, 360, 361

that it was not his Majesty's intentions to force the consciences of any one."

Having given this very deliberate and succinct contradiction to the statements of the French King, the Prince proceeded to express his sympathy for the oppressed Christians everywhere. He protested that he would give them all the aid, comfort, counsel, and assistance that he was able to give them. He asserted his conviction that the men who professed "the religion" demanded nothing else than the glory of God and the advancement of His word, while in all matters of civil polity they were ready to render obedience to his Majesty. He added that all his doings were governed by a Christian and affectionate regard for the King and his subjects, whom his Majesty must be desirous of preserving from extreme ruin. He averred, moreover, that if he should perceive any indication that those of the religion were pursuing any other object than liberty of conscience and security for life and property, he would not only withdraw his assistance from them, but would use the whole strength of his army to exterminate them. In conclusion, he begged the King to believe that the work which the Prince had undertaken was a Christian work, and that his intentions were good and friendly towards his Majesty.1

It was, however, in vain that the Prince endeavoured to induce his army to try the fortunes of the civil war in France. They had enlisted for the Netherlands, the campaign was over, and they insisted upon being led back to Germany. Schomberg, secretly instructed by the King of France, was active in fomenting the discontent, and the Prince was forced to yield. He led his army through Champagne and Lorraine to Strasburg, where they were disbanded. All the money which the Prince had been able to collect was paid them. He pawned all his camp equipage, his plate, his furniture. What he could not pay in money he made up in promises, sacredly to be fulfilled when he should be restored to his possessions. He even solemnly engaged,

This very eloquently-written latter was dated Cissonne, December 3rd, 1568. It has never been published. It is in the Collection of MSS, last cited (Pieces concernant, etc.), Hague Archives.

² Meteren, 56. ⁴ Bor, iv. 257. Hoofd, v. 188. ³ De Thou, Hoofd. ⁵ Hoofd, v. 188.

should he return from France alive, and be still unable to pay their arrears of wages, to surrender his person to them as a hostage for his debt 1

Thus trumphantly for Alva, thus miserably for Orange, ended the campaign. Thus hopelessly vinished the army to which so many proud hopes had attached themselves. Eight thousand men had been slain in paltry encounters, thirty thousand were dispersed, not easily to be again collected. All the funds which the Prince could command had been wasted without producing a result. For the present, nothing seemed to afford a ground of hope for the Netherlands, but the war of freedom had been renewed in France. A band of twelve hundred mounted men at arms were willing to follow the fortunes of the Prince. The three brothers recordingly, William, Louis, and Henry—a lad of eightneen, who had aban doned his studies at the university to obey the chivalrous in stincts of his race—set forth early in the following spring to ion the banner of Conde.

Cardinal Granvelle, who had never taken his eyes or thoughts from the provinces during his residence at Rome, now expressed himself with evultation. He had predicted, with cold malice, the immediate results of the campaign, and was singuine enough to beheve the contest over, and the Prince for ever crushed. In his letters to Philip he had taken due notice of the compliments paid to him by Orange in his Justification, in his Declaration, and in his letter to the Emperor. He had declined to make any answer to the charges, in order to enrage the Prince the more. He had expressed the opinion, however, that this publication of writings was not the business of brave soldiers, but of cowards. He made the same reflection upon the alleged intigues by Orange to procure an embassy on his own behalf from the Emperor to Philip—a mission which was

Archives etc in 323 Meteren 57 Correspondance de Philippe II, n

sure to end in smoke, while it would cost the Prince all credit, not only in Germany but the Netherlands.1 He felt sure, he said, of the results of the impending campaign. The Duke of Alva was a man upon whose administrative prudence and military skill his sovereign could implicitly rely, nor was there a person in the ranks of the rebels capable of conducting an enterprise of such moment.2 Least of all had the Prince of Orange sufficient brains for carrying on such weighty affairs, according to the opinion which he had formed of him during their long intercourse in former days.3

When the campaign had been decided, and the Prince had again become an exile, Granvelle observed that it was now proved how incompetent he and all his companions were to contend in military skill with the Duke of Alva.4 With a cold sneer at motives which he assumed, as a matter of course, to be purely selfish, he said that the Prince had not taken the proper road to recover his property, and that he would now be much embarrassed to satisfy his creditors.5 Thus must those ever fall, he moralized, who would fly higher than they ought; adding, that henceforth the Prince would have enough to do in taking care of madame his wife, if she did not change soon in humour and character.⁶

Meantime the Duke of Alva, having despatched from Cateau Cambresis a brief account of the victorious termination of the campaign, returned in triumph to Brussels." He had certainly amply vindicated his claim to be considered the first warrior of the age. By his lieutenants he had symmarily and rapidly destroyed two of the armies sent against him; he had annihilated in person the third, by a brilliantly successful battle, in which he had lost seven men, and his enemies seven thousand; and he had now, by consummate strategy, foiled the fourth and last under the idolized champion of the Netherlands, and this so decisively that, without losing a man, he had destroyed eight thousand rebels, and scattered to the four winds the remaining twenty thousand. Such signal results might well make even a meeker nature

² Ibid., ii. 792. ⁶ Ibid. ¹ Correspondance de Philippe II. ii., 795.
² Ibid.
³ Ibid.
⁴ Ibid., ii. 812.
⁵ Ibid.
⁷ Bor, iv. 257. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 808.

proud Such vast and fortunate efforts to fix for ever an impregnable military tyranny upon a constitutional country, might cause a more modest despot to exult. It was not wonderful that the haughty, and now apparently omnipotent Alva, should almost assume the god On his return to Brussels he instituted a succession of triumphant festivals 1 The people were called upon to rejoice and to be exceed ing glad, to strew flowers in his path, to sing Hosannas in his praise who came to them covered with the blood of those who had striven in their defence. The holiday was duly called forth, houses, where funeral hatchments for murdered inmates had been perpetually suspended, were decked with garlands, the bells, which had hardly once omitted their daily knell for the victims of an incredible cruelty, now rang their merriest peals and in the very square where so lately Egmont and Horn, besides many other less distinguished martyrs, had suffered an ignominious death, a gay tourna ment was held, day after day, with all the insolent pomp which could make the exhibition most galling

But even these demonstrations of hilanty were not suffi cient The conqueror and tamer of the Netherlands felt that a more personal and palpable defication was neces sary for his pride When Germanicus had achieved his last triumph over the ancient freedom of those generous races whose descendants, but lately in possession of a better or ganized liberty, Alva had been sent by the second and the worse Tiberius to insult and to crush, the valiant but modest Roman erected his trophy upon the plains of Idistavisus, "The army of Tiberius Cæsar having subdued the nations between the Rhine and the Elbe, dedicate this monument to Mars, to Jupiter, and to Augustus" So ran the inscription of Germanicus, without a word of allusion to his own name The Duke of Alva, on his return from the battle-fields of Brabant and Friesland, reared a colossal statue of himself, and upon its pedestal caused these lines to be engraved "To Ferdinand Alvarez de Toledo, Duke of Alva, Governor of the Netherlands under Philip the Second, for having ex tinguished sedition, chastised rebellion, restored religion. secured justice, established peace, to the King's most faithful

Bor, 1 257

minister this monument is erected."1 The statue was colossal, and was placed in the citadel of Antwerp. Its bronze was furnished by the cannon captured at Jemmingen.2 It represented the Duke trampling upon a prostrate figure with two heads, four arms, and one body. The two heads were interpreted by some to represent Egmont and Horn, by others, the two Nassaus, William and Louis. Others saw in them an allegorical presentment of the nobles and commons of the Netherlands, or perhaps an impersonation of the Compromise and the Request. Besides the chief inscription on the pedestal, were sculptured various bas-reliefs; and the spectator, whose admiration for the Governor-General was not satinted with the colossal statue itself, was at liberty to find a fresh personification of the hero, either in a torchbearing angel or a gentle shepherd. The work, which had considerable merit, was executed by an artist named Jacob Jongeling. It remained to astonish and disgust the Netherlanders until it was thrown down and demolished by Alva's successor, Requesens.3

It has already been observed that many princes of the Empire had, at first warmly, and afterwards, as the storm darkened around him, with less earnestness, encouraged the efforts of Orange. They had, both privately and officially, urged the subject upon the attention of the Emperor, and had solicited his intercession with Philip. It was not an interposition to save the Prince from chastisement, however the artful pen of Granvelle might distort the facts. It was an address in behalf of religious liberty for the Netherlands, made by those who had achieved it in their own persons, and who were at last enjoying immunity from persecution. It was an appeal which they who made it were bound to make, for the Netherland commissioners had assisted at the consultations by which the Peace of Passau had been wrung from the reluctant hand of Charles.⁴

These applications, however, to the Emperor, and through

ť

¹ Bor. iv. 257, 258. Meteren, 61. De Thou, v. 471-473, who saw it after it was overthrown, and who was "as much struck by the beauty of the work as by the insane pride of him who ordered it to be made."

² Bor, iv. 257. Meteren, 61. ³ Bor, iv. 257, 258. Meteren, 61. De Thou, v. 471, 473. Bentivoglio, lib. v. 186.

⁴ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 791.

him to the King of Spain, had been, as we have seen, accompanied by perpetual advice to the Prince of Orange, that he should "sit still" The Emperor had espoused his cause with apparent frankness, so far as friendly mediation went, but in the meantime had peremptorily commanded him to refrain from levying war upon Alva, an injunction which the Prince had as peremptorily declined to obey The Emperor had even sent special envoys to the Duke and to the Prince. to induce them to lay down their arms, but without effect Orange knew which cause was the more generous to his op pressed country, to take up arms, now that hope had been converted into despair by the funous tyranny of Alva, or to "sit still" and await the result of the protocols about to be exchanged between king and kaiser. His arms had been unsuccessful indeed, but had he attended the issue of this sluggish diplomacy, it would have been even worse for the cause of freedom The sympathy of his best friends, at first fervent, then lukewarm, had, as disasters thickened around him, grown at last stone-cold From the grave, too, of Queen Isabella arose the most importunate phantom in his The King of Spain was a widower again, and the Emperor among his sixteen children had more than one marriageable daughter To the titles of "beloved cousin and brother in law," with which Philip had always been greeted in the imperial proclamations, the nearer and dearer one of son in law was prospectively added

The ties of wedlock were sacred in the traditions of the Habsburg house, but still the intervention was nominally made As early as August 1568, the Emperor's minister at Madrid had addressed a memorial to the King 2 He had spoken in warm and strong language of the fate of Egmont and Horn, and had reminded Philip that the executions which were constantly taking place in the provinces were steadily advancing the Prince of Orange's cause 22nd September, 1568, the six electors had addressed a formal memorial to the Emperor 3 They thanked him for his previous interposition in favour of the Netherlands, painted in lively colours the cruelty of Alva, and denounced the un

Instructions for the Archduke Charles. Correspondance de Philippe II , ir 797

Correspondance de Philippe II , ii. 726

² Ibid is

heard-of rigour with which he had massacred, not only many illustrious seigniors, but people of every degree. Notwithstanding the repeated assurances given by the King to the contrary, they reminded the Emperer, that the inquisition as well as the Council of Trent, had now been established in the Netherlands in full vigour.\(^1\) They maintained that the provinces had been excluded from the Augsburg religious peace, to which their claim was perfect. Nether Germany was entitled to the same privileges as Upper Germany. They begged the Emperor to make manifest his sentiments and their own. It was fitting that his Catholic Majesty should be aware that the princes of the Empire were united for the conservation of fatherland and of tranquillity. To this end they placed in the Emperor's hands their estates, their fortunes, and their lives.

Such was the language of that important appeal to the Emperor in behalf of oppressed millions in the Netherlands, an appeal which Granvelle had coldly characterized as an intrigue contrived by Orange to bring about his own restoration to favour!²

The Emperor, in answer, assured the electoral envoys that he had taken the affair to heart, and had resolved to despatch his own brother, the Archduke Charles, on a special mission to Spain.³

Accordingly, on the 21st October, 1568, the Emperor presented his brother with an ample letter of instructions. He was to recall to Philip's memory the frequent exhortations made by the Emperor concerning the policy pursued in the Netherlands. He was to mention the urgent interpellations made to him by the electors and princes of the Empire in their recent embassy, he was to state that the Emperor had recently deputed commissioners to the Prince of Orange and the Duke of Alva, in order to bring about, if possible, a suspension of arms. He was to represent that the great number of men raised by the Prince of Orange in Germany, showed the powerful support which he had found in the country. Under such circumstances he was to show that it had been impossible for the Emperor to decree the ban

(

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 791.

³ Ibid., ii. 793.

² *Ibid.*, ii. 795.

⁴ Ibid., ii. 797.

against him, as the Duke of Alva had demanded Archduke was to request the King's consent to the recon ciliation of Orange, on honourable conditions He was to demand the substitution of clemency in the government of the Netherlands for severity, and to insist on the recall of the foreign soldiery from the Netherlands 1

Furnished with this very warm and stringent letter, the Archduke arrived in Madrid on the 10th December, 15682 A few days later he presented the King with a copy of the instruction, those brave words upon which the Prince of Orange was expected to rely instead of his own brave heart and the stout arms of his followers Philip having examined the letter, expressed his astonishment that such propositions should be made to him, and by the agency, too, of such a personage as the Archduke He had already addressed a letter to the Emperor, expressing his dissatisfaction at the step now taken 'He had been disturbed at the honour thus done to the Prince of Orange, and at this interference with his own rights a It was, in his opinion, an unheard of pro ceeding thus to address a monarch of his quality upon matters in which he could accept the law from no man promised, however, that a written answer should be given to the letter of instructions

On the 20th of January, 1569, that answer was placed in the hands of the Archduke * It was intimated that the paper was a public one, fit to be laid by the Emperor before the electors, but that the King had also caused a confidential one to be prepared, in which his motives and private griefs were indicated to Maximilian

In the more public document, Philip observed that he had never considered himself obliged to justify his conduct, in his own affairs, to others He thought, however, that his example of severity would have been received with approba tion by princes whose subjects he had thus taught obedience He could not admit that, on account of the treaties which constituted the Netherlands a circle of the Empire, he was obliged to observe within their limits the ordinances of the

Correspondance de Philippe II , n. 797

² Ibid , in. 835 See the letter in the Correspondance, etc., 807
Correspondance de Philippe II , ii 818

Ibid. Ibid , 819

So far the public letter, of which the Archduke was fur nished with a copy, both in Spanish and in Latin. The private memorandum was intended for the Emperor's eyes alone and those of his envoy In this paper the King expressed himself with more warmth and in more decided language 1 He was astonished, he said, that the Prince of Orange, in levying an army for the purpose of invading the states of his natural sovereign, should have received so much aid and comfort in Germany It seemed incredible that this could not have been prevented by imperial authority He had been pained that commissioners had been sent to the Prince He regretted such a demonstration in his favour as had now been made by the mission of the Archduke to That which, however, had caused the king the deepest sorrow was, that his Impenal Majesty should wish to persuade him in religious matters to proceed with mildness The Emperor ought to be aware that no human considera tion, no regard for his realms, nothing in the world which could be represented or risked, would cause him to swerve by a single hair's breadth from his path in the matter of religion? This path was the same throughout all his king doms He had ever trod in it faithfully, and he meant to keep in it perpetually He would admit neither counsel nor persuasion to the contrary, and should take it ill if counsel or persuasion should be offered. He could not but con sider the terms of the instructions given to the Archduke as exceeding the limits of amicable suggestion. They in effect amounted to a menace, and he was astonished that a menace should be employed, because, with princes constituted like himself, such means could have but little success 3

On the 23rd of January, 7569, the Archduke presented the King with a spirited reply to the public letter. It was couched in the spirit of the instructions, and therefore need not be analyzed at length. He did not believe that his Imperial Majesty would admit any justification of the course pursued in the Netherlands. The estates of the Empire would never allow Philip's reasoning concerning the connection of those countries with the Empire, nor that they were independent, except in the particular articles expressed

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , ¹¹ 819 ² Ibid

in the treaty of Augsburg. In 1555, when Charles the Fifth and King Ferdinand had settled the religious peace, they had been assisted by envoys from the Netherlands. The princes of the Empire held the ground, therefore, that the religious peace, which alone had saved a vestige of Romanism in Germany, should of right extend to the provinces. As to the Prince of Orange, the Archduke would have preferred to say nothing more, but the orders of the Emperor did not allow him to be silent. It was now necessary to put an end to this state of things in Lower Germany. The princes of the Empire were becoming exasperated. He recalled the dangers of the Smalcaldian war—the imminent peril in which the Emperor had been placed by the act of a single elector. They who believed that Flanders could be governed in the same manner as Italy and Spain were greatly mistaken, and Charles the Fifth had always recognized that error.¹

This was the sum and substance of the Archduke's mission to Madrid, so far as its immediate objects were concerned. In the course, however, of the interview between this personage and Philip, the King took occasion to administer a rebuke to his Imperial Majesty for his general negligence in religious matters. It was a matter which lay at his heart, he said, that the Emperor, although, as he doubted not, a Christian and Catholic prince, was from policy unaccustomed to make those exterior demonstrations which matters of faith required. He therefore begged the Archduke to urge this matter upon the attention of his Imperial Majesty.²

The Emperor, despite this solemn mission, had become more than indifferent before his envoy had reached Madrid. For this indifference there were more reasons than one. When the instructions had been drawn up, the death of the Queen of Spain had not been known in Vienna.³ The Archduke had even been charged to inform Philip of the approaching marriages of the two Archduchesses—that of Anne with the King of France, and that of Isabella with the King of Portugal. A few days later, however, the envoy received letters from the Emperor, authorizing him to offer to the bereaved Philip the hand of the Archduchess Anne.⁴

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 820.

² Ibid., ii. 835. ³ Ibid.

⁴ Ibid. According to Cabrera, the Archduke learned the news of

The King replied to the Archduke, when this proposition was made, that if he had regard only to his personal satis faction, he should remain as he was As, however, he had now no son, he was glad that the proposition had been made, and would see how the affair could be arranged with France.

Thus the ill success of Orange in Brabant, so dishearten into the German princes most inclined to his cause, and still more the widowhood of Philip, had brought a change over the views of Maximilian. On the 17th of January, 1569, three days before his ambasador had entered upon his negotiations, he had accordingly addressed an autograph letter to his Catholic Mijesty. In this epistle, by a few cold lines, he entirely annihilated any possible effect which might have been produced by the apparent earnestness of his interposition in favour of the Netherlands. He informed the King that the Archduke had been sent, not to ver him, but to convince him of his friendship. He assured Philip that he should be satisfied a tith his reposts, whater it might be He entreated only that it might be driwn up in such terms that the princes and electors to whom it must be shown might not be inspired with suspicion.

The Archduke left Madnd on the 4th of March, 1769 He retired, well pleased with the results of his mission, not because its ostensible objects had been accomplished, for those had signally failed, but because the King had made him a present of one hundred thousand ducats, and had pro-

Queen Isabella s death on his journey to Madrid Felipe II, lib viii

Herrera (hb xv 707) erroneously states that the Archdule was at the outset, charged with these two commissions by the Emperor,

1014

mised to espouse the Archduchess Anne. On the 26th of May, 1569, the Emperor addressed a final reply to Philip, in which he expressly approved the King's justification of his conduct. It was founded, he thought, in reason and equity. Nevertheless, it could hardly be shown, as it was, to the princes and electors, and he had therefore modified many points which he thought might prove offensive.

Thus ended "in smoke," as Granvelle had foretold, the famous mission of Archduke Charles. The Holy Roman Emperor withdrew from his pompous intervention, abashed by a rebuke, but consoled by a promise. If it were good to be guardian of religious freedom in Upper and Nether Germany, it was better to be father-in-law to the King of Spain and both the Indies. Hence the lame and abrupt conclusion.

Cardinal Granvelle had been very serviceable in this juncture. He had written to Philip to assure him that, in his opinion, the Netherlands had no claim, under the transaction of Augsburg, to require the observance within their territory of the decrees of the Empire. He added, that Charles the Fifth had only agreed to the treaty of Passau to save his brother Ferdinand from ruin; that he had only consented to it as Emperor, and had neither directly nor indirectly included the Netherlands within its provisions. He stated, moreover, that the Emperor had revoked the treaty by an aet which was never published, in consequence of the earnest solicitations of Ferdinand.

It has been seen that the King had used this opinion of Granvelle in the response presented to the Archduke. Although he did not condescend to an argument, he had laid down the fact as if it were indisputable. He was still more delighted to find that Charles had revoked the treaty of Passau, and eagerly wrote to Granvelle to inquire where the secret instrument was to be found. The Cardinal replied that it was probably among his papers at Brussels, but that he doubted whether it would be possible to find it in

6 Ibid., ii. 842.

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 835.

² Ibid., ii. 874. ⁴ Ibid., ii. 800. Gachard's Introduction to tom. i. clxxxvii.

⁴ *Ibid.*, ii. 800. Gachard's Introduction to to: ⁵ Correspondence de Philippe II., ii. 800.

hts absence. Whether such a document ever existed, it is difficult to say. To perpetrate such a fraud would have been worthy of Charles, to fable its perpetration not unworthy of the Cardinal. In either case, the transaction was sufficiently high handed and exceedingly disgraceful

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , u 860

CHAPTER V.

A TENTH PENNY AND A MODEL MURDER.

Quarrel between Alva and Queen Elizabeth of England-Spanish funds seized by the English government-Non-intercourse between England and the Netherlands-Stringent measures against heresy-Continued persecution-Individual cases-Present of hat and sword to Alva from the Pope-Determination of the Governor-General to establish a system of arbitrary taxation in the provinces—Assembly of estates at Brussels-Alva's decrees laid before them-The hundredth. tentli, and fifth pence-Opposition of Viglius to the project-Estates of various provinces give a reluctant consent-Determined resistance of Utrecht-The city and province eited before the Blood-Council-Sentence of confiscation and disfranchisement against both-Appeal to the King-Difficulty of collecting the new tax-Commutation for two years -Projects for a pardon-general-Growing disfavour of the Duke-His desire to resign his post-Secret hostility between the Governor and Viglius-Altered sentiments of the President-Opinions expressed by Granvelle—The pardon pompously proclaimed by the Duke at Antwerp -Character of the amnesty - Dissatisfaction of the people with the act-Complaints of Alva to the King-Fortunes and fate of Baron Montigny in Spain-II is confinement at Segovia-His attempt to escape-Its failure—His mock trial—His wife's appeal to Philip—His condemnation -Ilis secret assassination determined upon-Its details, as carefully prescribed and superintended by the King-Terrible inundation throughout the Netherlands-Immense destruction of life and property in Friesland-Lowestein Castle taken by De Ruyter, by stratagem-Reeapture of the place by the Spaniards-Desperate resistance and death of De Ruyter.

I T was very soon after the Duke's return to Brussels that a quarrel between himself and the Queen of England took place. Certain vessels, bearing roving commissions from the Prince of Condé, had chased into the ports of England some merchantmen coming from Spain with supplies in specie for the Spanish army in the Netherlands. The trading ships remained in harbour, not daring to leave for their destination, while the privateers remained in a neighbouring port ready to pounce upon them should they put to

sea The commanders of the merchant fleet complained to the Spanish ambassador in London The envoy laid the case before the Queen The Queen promised redress, and, almost as soon as the promise had been made, seized upon all the specie in the vessels, amounting to about eight hundred thousand dollars, and appropriated the whole to her own benefit 1 The pretext for this proceeding was twofold In the first place, she assured the ambassador that she had the first place, she assured the amoustager that she had taken the money into her possession in order that it might be kept safe for her royal brother of Spain. In the second place, she affirmed that the money did not belong to the Spainsh government at all, but that it was the property of certain Genoese merchants, from whom, as she had a right to do, she had borrowed it for a short period. Both these positions could hardly be correct, but either furnished an excellent reason for appropriating the funds to her own use. The Duke of Alva being very much in want of money,

was funous when informed of the circumstance He imme diately despatched Councillor d Assonleville with other com missioners on a special embassy to the Queen of England 3 His envoys were refused an audience, and the Duke was taxed with presumption in venturing, as if he had been a sovereign, to send a legation to a crowned head. No satis faction was given to Alva, but a secret commissioner was despatched to Spain to discuss the subject there The wrath of Alva was not appeased by this contemptuous treatment Chagrined at the loss of his funds, and stung to the quick by a rebuke which his arrogance had merited, he resorted to a high handed measure He issued a proclamation command ing the personal arrest of every Englishman within the territor, of the Netherlands, and the seizure of every article of property which could be found belonging to individuals of that nation 5 The Queen retaliated by measures of the same seventy against Netherlanders in England. The Duke followed up his blow by a proclamation (of March 31, 1569), in which the grievance was detailed, and strict non intercourse with England enjoined. While the Queen and the

Meteren, 57 2 Bor, Meteren, ubs sup Meteren, 57, 58. ¹ Bor, s 272 273 Bor, v 272, 273 1014, v 5 See the proclamation in Bor, v 277 279

Bor, Meteren, ubs sup

They were condemned to the flames, and as they were of the ecclesiastical profession, it was necessary before execution that their personal sanctity should be removed. Accordingly, on the 27th May, attired in the gorgeous robes of high mass, they were brought before the Bishop of Bois le Duc. The prelate, with a pair of scissors, cut a lock of hair from each of their heads. He then scraped their crowns and the tips of their fingers with a little silver knife very gently, and without inflicting the least injury. The mystic oil of consecration was thus supposed to be sufficiently removed. The prelate then proceeded to disrobe the victims, saying to each one is he did so, "Eximo tibi vestem justitiae, quem volens abjecisti;" to which the oldest pastor, Arent Dirkzoon, stoutly replied, "imo vestem injustitiæ." The bishop having thus completed the solemn farce of desecration, delivered the prisoners to the Blood-Council, begging that they might be handled very gently. Three days afterwards they were all executed at the stake, having, however, received the indulgence of being strangled before being thrown into the flames.¹

It was precisely at this moment, while the agents of the Duke's government were thus zealously enforcing his decrees, that a special messenger arrived from the Pope, bringing as a present to Alva a jewelled hat and sword.2 It was a gift rarely conferred by the Church, and never save upon the highest dignitaries, or upon those who had merited her most signal rewards by the most shining exploits in her defence.3 The Duke was requested, in the autograph letter from his Holiness which accompanied the presents, "to remember, when he put the hat upon his head, that he was guarded with it as with a helmet of righteousness, and with the shield of God's help, indicating the heavenly crown which was ready for all princes who support the Holy Church and the Roman Catholic faith." 4 The motto on the sword ran as follows, "Accipe sanctum gladium, munus a Deo in quo dejicies adversarios populi mei Israel." 5

The Viceroy of Philip thus stimulated to persevere in his master's precepts by the Vicegerent of Christ, was not likely

¹ Bor, v. 312, 313. Hoofd, v. 199, 200. 6 ² Bor, v. 270. Strada, lib. vii. 347.

³ Strada, lib. vii. 347, 348. Bor, v. 270, 271.

⁵ Mendoza, 100.

to swerve from his path, nor to finich from his work. It was beyond the power of man's ingenuity to add any fresh fer tures of horror to the religious persecution under which the provinces were groaning but a new attack could be made upon the poor remains of their wealth.

The Duke had been dissatisfied with the results of his financril arrangements. The confiscation of banished and murdered heretics had not proved the inexhaustible mine he had boasted. The stream of gold which was to flow peren mally into the Spanish coffers, soon ceased to flow at all. This was inevitable. Confiscations must, of necessity, offer but a precarious supply to any treasury. It was only the frenzy of an Alva which could imagine it possible to derive a permanent revenue from such a source. It was, however, not to be expected that this min, whose tyranny amounted to insantly, could comprehend the intimate connection be tween the interest of a people and those of its rulers, and he was determined to exhibit, by still more fierce and ludicrous experiments, how easily a great soldier may become a very pathry financier.

His scheme was nothing more than the substitution of an arbitrary system of taxation by the Crown for the legal and constitutional right of the provinces to tax themselves was not a very original thought, but it was certainly a hold For although a country so prostrate might suffer the imposition of any fresh amount of tyranny, yet it was doubtful whether she had sufficient strength remaining to bear the weight after it had been imposed. It was certain, moreover, that the new system would create a more general outcry than any which had been elicited even by the religious persecution There were many inhabitants who were earnest and sincere Catholics, and who therefore considered themselves safe from the hangman's hands, while there were none who could hope to escape the gripe of the new tax gatherers Yet the Governor was not the man to be daunted by the probable unpopularity of the measure Courage he possessed in more than mortal proportion. He seemed to have set himself to the task of ascertaining the exact capacity of the country for wretched ness He was resolved accurately to gauge its width and its depth, to know how much of physical and moral misery might be accumulated within its limits, before

full to overflowing. Every man, woman, and child in the country had been solemnly condemned to death; and arbitrary executions, in pursuance of that sentence, had been daily taking place. Millions of property had been confiscated, while the most fortunate and industrious, as well as the bravest of the Netherlanders, were wandering penniless in distant lands. Still the blows, however recklessly distributed, had not struck every head. The inhabitants had been decimated, not annihilated, and the productive energy of the country, which for centuries had possessed so much vitality, was even yet not totally extinct. In the wreck of their social happiness, in the utter overthrow of their political freedom, they had still preserved the shadow, at least, of one great bulwark against despotism. The King could impose no

The "Joyeuse Entrée" of Brabant, as well as the constitutions of Flanders, Holland, Utrecht, and all the other provinces, expressly prescribed the manner in which the requisite funds for government should be raised. The sovereign or his stadholder was to appear before the estates in person, and make his request for money. It was for the estates, after consultation with their constituents, to decide whether or not this petition (Bede) should be granted, and should a single branch decline compliance, the monarch was to wait with patience for a more favourable moment." Such had been the regular practice in the Netherlands, nor had the reigning houses often had occasion to accuse the estates of parsimony. It was, however, not wonderful that the Duke of Alva should be impatient at the continued existence of this provincial privilege. A country of condemned criminals, a nation whose universal neck might at any moment be laid upon the block without ceremony, seemed hardly fit to hold the purse-strings, and to dispense alms to its monarch. The Viceroy was impatient at this arrogant vestige of constitutional liberty. Moreover, although he had taken from the Netherlanders nearly all the attributes of freemen, he was unwilling that they should enjoy the principal privilege of slaves, that of being fed and guarded at their master's expense. He

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. v. S2. See also Introduction to this work. ² *Ibid.*—See also Kluit, Hist. der Holl. Staatsregering, and Viglii Comment. rerum actarum super imp. Dec. Den., c. vi.

had therefore summoned a general assembly of the provincial estates in Brussels, and on the 20th of March, 1569, had caused the following decrees to be laid before them 1

A tax of the hundredth penny, or one per cent, was laid upon all property, real and personal, to be collected instantly. This impost, however, was not perpetual, but only to be paid once, unless, of course, it should suit the same arbitrary power by which it was assessed to require it a second time

A tay of the twentieth penny, or five per cent, was laid upon every transfer of real estate. This imposition was

perpetual

Thirdly, a tax of the tenth penny, or ten per cent, was assessed upon every article of merchandise or personal property to be paid as often as it should be sold. This tax was likewise

to be perpetual ²
The consternation in the assembly when these enormous propositions were heard, can be easily imagined. People may differ about religious dogmas. In the most bigoted persecutions there will always be many who, from conscientious although misguided motives, heartily espouse the cause of the bigot. Moreover, although resistance to tyranny in matters of fath is always the most ardent of struggles, and is supported by the most sublime principle in our nature, yet all men are not of the sterner stuff of which martyrs are fashioned. In questions relating to the world above, many may be seduced from their convictions by interest, or forced into apostray by violence. Human nature is often malleable or fusible, where religious interests are concerned, but in affairs material and financial opposition to tyranny is ant to be unanimous.

trary and prodigious system of taxation, struck home to every fireside. No individual, however adroit or time-serving, could parry the blow by which all were crushed.

It was most unanswerably maintained in the assembly, that this tenth and twentieth penny would utterly destroy the trade and the minufactures of the country. The hundredth

¹ Bor v 279, 280 ² Ibid ³ Bor v 283 28, Viglii, Comm Dec. Denarii, s. v

penny, or the one per cent. assessment on all property throughout the land, although a severe subsidy, might be borne with for once. To pay, however, a twentieth part of the full value of a house to the government as often as the house was sold, was a most intolerable imposition. A house might be sold twenty times in a year, and in the course, therefore, of the year be confiscated in its whole value. It amounted either to a prohibition of all transfers of real estate, or to an eventual surrender of its price.

As to the tenth penny upon articles of merchandise, to be paid by the vendor at every sale, the scheme was monstrous. All trade and manufactures must, of necessity, expire, at the very first attempt to put it in execution.¹ Quick transfers and unfettered movements being the nerves and muscles of commerce, it was impossible for it long to survive the paralysis of such a tax. The impost could never be collected, and would only produce an entire prostration of industry. It could by no possibility enrich the government.²

¹ Bor, v. 283-285. Viglii, Comm. Dec. Denarii, s. v.

² While occupied with his attempts to enforce this tax, the Duke established a commission to inquire into the value of the manufacturing industry of the provinces. In the year 1570, the aggregate annual value of manufactured articles was calculated at forty-five millions of florins (44,864,883 fl.). From this estimate, however, Luxemburg, Gueldres, Zeland, and the provinces beyond the Meuse, were excluded.

•	-			-				
	The	retu	rns fo	the o	thers	were	thus stated:-	
Bral	oant						11,197,416	floring
Flan	ders		•				10,407,891	,,
Vale	ncieni	nes	•		•	•	5,223,980	,,
Tou			•	•		•	2,369,200	· ,,
Holl	and		•	•			2,029,148	,,
	e, Dou	ay, a	and O	rehies	•	•	8,883,698	,,
Hair		•			٠	•	1,982,540	"
Mali	nes		•		•	•	262,880	,,
Utre	cht	•	•		•	•	734,900	"
Ove	yssel		•	•	•	•	1,610,260	"
Nam	ur			•	•	•	454,980	,,
Fries	sland	•	•			•	196,200	,,
Arto	is			•	•	•	1,718,790	,,,

—Renom de France, MS., ii. c. x. Upon this flourishing state of the manufacturing interest, notwithstanding the oppression to which the country had so long been subjected, the Duke indulged in golden dreams. "Oires le Ducq considerant par cé calcul l'importance du dixième denier, chatouillé doucement de l'espérance ou de l'imagination du prouffit, pressa fort en l'année 1570 les états sur le toeme denier.—Ibid.

The King could not derive wealth from the ruin of his subjects, yet to establish such a system was the stern and absurd determination of the Governor General. To the keen and vivid representations of Viglius, who repeatedly exhibited all that was oppressive and all that was impossible in the tax, he answered simply that it was nothing more nor less than the Spanish "alcabala," and that he derived 50,000 ducats yearly from its imposition in his own city of Alba.

Viglius was upon this occasion in opposition to the Duke It is but justice to state that the learned jurisconsult man fully and repeatedly confronted the wrath of his superior in many a funous discussion in council upon the subject He had never attempted to oppose the religious persecution, but he was roused at last by the threatened destruction of all the material interests of the land. He confronted the tyrant with courage, sustained perhaps by the knowledge that the proposed plan was not the King's, but the Governor's He knew that it was openly ridiculed in Madrid, and that Philip, although he would probably never denounce it in terms, was certainly not eager for its execution The Presi dent enlarged upon the difference which existed between the condition of a sparsely peopled country of herdsmen and labourers in Spain, and the densely thronged and bustling ducats yearly from the alcabala in Alva, he could only offer him his congratulations, but could not help assuring him that the tax would prove an impossibility in the provinces. To his argument that the impost would fall with seventy not upon the highest nor the lowest classes of society, neither upon the great nobility and clergy nor on the rustic population, but on the merchants and manufacturers, it was answered by the President that it was not desirable to rob Saint Peter's altar in order to build one to Saint Paul 1 It might have been simpler to suggest that the consumer would pay the tax, supposing it were ever paid at all, but the axiom was not so familiar three centures ago as now

Meantime, the report of the deputies to the assembly on

Viglu, Comm Dec Denaru s. 6
V d Vynckt, Dl n 118

Night Comm Dec Den , s 7, 10. " Ibid., s. 9.

their return to their constituents had created intense excitement and alarm. Petition after petition, report after report, poured in upon the government. There was a cry of despair, and almost of defiance, which had not been elicited by former agonies. To induce, however, a more favourable disposition on the part of the Duke, the hundredth penny, once for all, was conceded by the estates.² The tenth and twentieth occasioned severe and protracted struggles, until the various assemblies of the patrimonial provinces, one after another, exhausted, frightened, and hoping that no serious effort would be made to collect the tax, consented, under certain restrictions, to its imposition.2 The principal conditions were a protest against the legality of the proceeding, and the provision that the consent of no province should be valid until that of all had been obtained.3 Holland, too, was induced to give in its adhesion, although the city of Amsterdam long withheld its consent; but the city and province of Utrecht were inexorable.4 They offered a handsome sum in commutation, increasing the sum first proposed from 70,000 to 200,000 florins, but they resolutely refused to be saddled with this permanent tax. Their stout resistance was destined to cost them dear. In the course of a few months Alva, finding them still resolute in their refusal, quartered the regiment of Lombardy upon them, and employed other coercive measures to bring them to reason.5 The rude, insolent, unpaid, and therefore insubordinate soldiery were billeted in every house in the city, so that the insults which the population were made to suffer by the intrusion of these ruffians at their firesides would soon, it was thought, compel the assent of the province to the tax.6 It was not so, however. The city and the province remained staunch in their opposition. Accordingly, at the close of the year (15th December, 1569) the estates were summoned to appear within fourteen days before the Blood-Council." At the appointed time the procureur-general was ready with an act of accusation, accompanied, as was usually the case, with a simultaneous sentence of condemnation. The indictment revived and recapitulated all previous offences com-

¹ Bor, v. 286.

⁴ Ibid., v. 286, 287.

⁶ Ibid.

^{&#}x27; Ibid. 2 Ibid.

⁵ *Ibid.*, v. 288. ⁷ Hoofd, v. 196. Bor, v. 291.

mitted in the city and the province, particularly during the troubles of 1566, and at the epoch of the treaty with Duchess Margaret The inhabitants and the magistrates, both in their individual and public capacities, were condemned for heresy, rebellion, and misprision. The city and province were accordingly pronounced guilty of high treason, were deprived of all their charters, laws, privileges, freedom, and customs, and were declared to have forfested all their property, real and personal, together with all tolls, rents, excises, and imposts, the whole being confiscated to the benefit of his Majesty

The immediate execution of the sentence was, however, suspended, to allow the estates opportunity to reply enormous mass of pleadings, rephes, repheations, rejoinders. and apostilles was the result, which few eyes were destined to read, and least of all those to whom they were nominally addressed 2 They were of benefit to none save in the shape of fees which they engendered to the gentlemen of the robe It was six months, however, before the case was closed As there was no blood to be shed, a summary process was not considered necessary. At last, on the 14th July, the voluminous pile of documents was placed before Vargas. It was the first time he had laid eyes upon them, and they were, moreover, written in a language of which he did not under stand a word 2 Such, however, was his capacity for affairs, that a glance only at the outside of the case enabled him to form his decision Within half an hour afterwards, booted and spurred, he was saying mass in the church of Saint Gudule, on his way to pronounce sentence at Antwerp That judgment was rendered the same day, and confirmed the preceding act of condemnation Vargas went to his task as cheerfully as if it had been murder The act of out lawry and beggary was fulminated against the city and pro vince, and a handsome amount of misery for others, and of plunder for himself, was the result of his promptness

¹ See all the documents in Bor, v. 151, et 2eq.
² Bor, v. 290 319 Compare Hoofd, v. 194 196., Wagenaer, Vaderl Hist., vi. 293 304., Vapa. Comm. Dec. Den., Assista
³ Translations, however, were appended which had only been com.

pleted that morning -Bor, v 319 Hoofd, Wagenaer, ubs sur 4 Bor, 1 319

Many thousand citizens were ruined, many millions of pro-

perty confiscated.

Thus was Utrecht deprived of all its ancient liberties, as a punishment for having dared to maintain them. The clergy, too, of the province, having invoked the bull "In Canâ Domini," by which clerical property was declared exempt from taxation, had excited the wrath of the Duke. To wield so slight a bulrush against the man who had just been girded with the consecrated and jewelled sword of the Pope, was indeed but a feeble attempt at defence. Alva treated the Cana Domini with contempt, but he imprisoned the printer who had dared to republish it at this juncture. Finding, moreover, that it had been put in press by the orders of no less a person than Secretary La Torre, he threw that officer also into prison, besides suspending him from his functions for a year.2

The estates of the province and the magistracy of the city appealed to his Majesty from the decision of the Duke. The case did not directly concern the interests of religion, for although the heretical troubles of 1566 furnished the nominal motives of the condemnation, the resistance to the tenth and twentieth penny was the real crime for which they were suffering. The King, therefore, although far from clement, was not extremely rigorous. He refused the object of the appeal, but he did not put the envoys to death by whom it was brought to Madrid. This would have certainly been the case in matters strictly religious, or even had the commissioners arrived two years before, but even Philip believed, perhaps, that for the moment almost enough innocent blood had been shed. At any rate he suffered the legates from Utrecht to return,3 not with their petition granted, but at least with their heads upon their shoulders. Early in the following year, the provinces still remaining under martial law, all the Utrecht charters were taken into the possession of government, and deposited in the castle of Vredenberg.4 It was not till after the departure of Alva that they were restored, according to royal command, by the new governor, Requesens.5

¹ Bor, v. 287. Hoofd, v. 195.

³ Bor, v. 326-328, et seq. ⁵ Ibid., vi. 360, 361.

² Ibid.

⁴ Ibid., vi. 357-361.

By the middle of the year 1569, Alva wrote to the King, with great cheerfulness of tone, announcing that the estates of the provinces had all consented to the tax. He con gratulated his Majesty upon the fact that this income might thenceforth be enjoyed in perpetuity, and that it would bring at least two millions yearly into his coffers, over and above the expenses of government. The hundredth penny, as he calculated, would amount to at least five millions.

He was, however, very premature in his triumph, for the estates were not long in withdrawing a concession which had either been wrung from them by violence or filched from them by misrepresentation. Taking the ground that the assent of all had been stipulated before that of any one should be esteemed valid, every province now refused to enforce or to permit the collection of the tenth or the twentieth penny within their limits. Dire were the threatenings and the wrath of the Viceroy, painfully protracted the renewed negotiations with the estates. At last, a compromise was effected, and the final struggle postponed. Late in the summer it was agreed that the provinces should pay two millions yearly for the two following years, the term to expire in the month of August, 1571. Till that period, therefore, there was comparative repose upon the subject?

The question of a general pardon had been agitated for more than a year, both in Brussels and Madnid Viglius, who knew his countrymen better than the Vicero; knew them, had written frequently to his friend Hopper, on the propriety of at once proclaiming an amnesty? There had also been many conferences between himself and the Duke of Alva, and he had furnished more than one draught for the proposed measure? The President knew full well that the point had been reached beyond which the force of tyranny could go no further. All additional pressure, he felt sure, could only produce reaction, the effect of which might be to drive the Spaniards from the Netherlands. There mught then be another game to play. The heads of those

1 A DE DE DE TE C 2 3 4 Mid , 110

who had so assiduously served the government throughout its terrible career might, in their turn, be brought to the block, and their estates be made to enrich the treasury. Moreover, there were symptoms that Alva's favour was on the wane. The King had not been struck with the merits of the new financial measures, and had expressed much anxiety lest the trade of the country should suffer.1 The Duke was known to be desirous of his recall. His health was broken, he felt that he was bitterly detested throughout the country, and he was certain that his enemies at Madrid were fast undermining his credit. He seemed also to have a dim suspicion that his mission was accomplished in the Netherlands; that as much blood had been shed at present as the land could easily absorb. He wrote urgently and even piteously to Philip, on the subject of his return. "Were your Majesty only pleased to take me from this country," he said, "I should esteem it as great a favour as if your Majesty had given me life." He swore "by the soul of the Duchess," that he "would rather be cut into little pieces" than retire from his post were his presence necessary, but he expressed the opinion that through his exertions affairs had been placed in such train that they were sure to roll on smoothly to the end of time. "At present, and for the future," he wrote, "your Majesty is and will be more strictly obeyed than any of your predecessors;" adding, with insane self-complacency, "and all this has been accomplished without violence." He also assured his Majesty as to the prosperous condition of financial affairs. His 'tax was to work wonders. He had conversed with capitalists who had offered him four millions yearly for the tenth penny, but he had refused, because he estimated the product at a much higher figure.5 The hundredth penny could not be rated lower than five millions. It was obvious, therefore, that instead of remitting funds to the provinces, his Majesty would, for the future, derive from them a steady and enormous income.6 Moreover, he assured the King that there was at present no one to inspire anxiety from within or without. The only great noble of note in the country was the Duke of Aerschot, who was devoted to his Majesty, and who,

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 896. 2 Ibid., ii. 908. 3 Ibid., ii. 951. 4 Ibid. 5 Ibid., ii. 970. 1bid.

moreover, "amounted to very little," as the King well knew ' As for the Prince of Orange, he would have business enough in keeping out of the clutches of his creditors. They had nothing to fear from Germany England would do nothing as long as Germany was quiet, and France was sunk too low to be feared at all a

Such being the sentiments of the Duke, the King was already considering the propriety of appointing his successor All this was known to the President He felt instinctively that more clemency was to be expected from that successor, whoever he might be and he was satisfied, therefore, that he would at least not be injuring his own position by inclin ing at this late hour to the side of mercy. His opposition to the tenth and twentieth penny had already established a breach between himself and the viceroy, but he felt secretly comforted by the reflection that the King was probably on the same side with himself Alva still spoke of him, to be sure, both in public and private with approbation, taking occasion to commend him frequently, in his private letters, as a servant upright and zealous, as a living register, without whose universal knowledge of things and persons he should whose universal knowledge of timings and persons he should hardly know which way to turn. The President, however, was growing weary of his own sycophancy. He begged his finend Joachim to take his part, if his excellency should write unfavourably about his conduct to the King. He seemed to have changed his views of the man concerning whose "prudence and gentleness" he could once turn so muyer prudence and genuences he could once turn so many fine periods. He even expressed some anvest lest doubts should begin to be entertained as to the perfect elemency of the King's character. "Here is so much confiscation and bloodshed going on," said he, "that some taint of cruelty or a vance may chance to be next the robe of his." Majesty" He also confessed that he had occasionally read majesty." He also contessed man he had occasionally read in history of greater beinging than was non exercised against the poor Netherlanders. Had the learned Frisian arrived at these humane conclusions at a somewhat earlier day, it might perhaps have been better for himself and for his fatherland. Had he served his country as faithfully as he

[&]quot; \ ale tan poco como \ M sabe -Correspondance de Pluhffe II , " 951 ##1 3 Ibid.

had served Time, and Philip, and Alva, his lands would not have been so broad, nor his dignities so numerous, but he would not have been obliged, in his old age, to exclaim, with whimsical petulance, that "the faithful servant is always a perpetual ass."1

It was now certain than an act of amnesty was in contemplation by the King. Viglius had furnished several plans, which, however, had been so much disfigured by the numerous exceptions suggested by Alva, that the President could scarce recognize his work. Granvelle, too, had frequently urged the pardon on the attention of Philip.2 The Cardinal was too astute not to perceive that the time had arrived when a continued severity could only defeat its own work. He felt that the country could not be rendered more abject, the spirit of patriotism more apparently extinct. A show of clemency, which would now cost nothing, and would mean nothing, might be more effective than this profuse and wanton bloodshed.

He saw plainly that the brutality of Alva had already overshot the mark. Too politic, however, openly to reprove so powerful a functionary, he continued to speak of him and of his administration to Philip in terms of exalted eulogy. was a "sage seignior," a prudent governor, one on whom his Majesty could entirely repose. He was a man of long experience, trained all his life to affairs, and perfectly capable of giving a good account of everything to which he turned his hands.3 He admitted, however, to other correspondents, that the administration of the sage seignior, on whom his Majesty could so implicitly rely, had at last "brought the provinces into a deplorable condition."

Four different forms of pardon had been sent from Madrid, towards the close of 1569.5 From these four the Duke was to select one, and carefully destroy the other three. not, however, till July of the following year that the choice was made, and the viceroy in readiness to announce the pardon. On the 14th of that month a great festival was held

[&]quot;Fidus sérvus perpetuus asinus," ¹ Epist. ad Joach. Hopp., 62-82. etc., etc.

² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 815.

³ Ibid., ii. 792, 809, 844, etc., etc. ⁴ Ibid., ii. 832. Letter to Treasurer Schetz. ⁵ *Ibid.*, ii. 914.

at Antwerp, for the purpose of solemnly proclaiming the long expected amnesty 1 In the morning the Duke, accompanied by a brilliant staff, and by a long procession of clergy in their gorgeous robes, paraded through the streets of the commercial capital, to offer up prayers and hear mass in the cathedral The Bishop of Arras then began a sermon upon the blessings of mercy, with a running commentary upon the royal clemency about to be exhibited In the very outset, however, of his discourse, he was seized with convulsions, which required his removal from the pulpit, an incident which was not considered of felicitous augury. In the after noon, the Duke with his suite appeared upon the square in front of the Town House Here a large scaffolding or theatre had been erected The platform and the steps which led to it were covered with scarlet cloth A throne, covered with cloth of gold, was arranged in the most elevated position for the Duke ' On the steps immediately below him were placed two of the most beautiful women in Antwerp, clad in allegorical garments to represent righteous ness and peace The staircase and platform were lined with officers, the square was beset with troops, and filled to its utmost verge with an expectant crowd of citizens Toward the close of a summer's afternoon, the Duke, wearing the famous hat and sword of the Pope, took his seat on the throne with all the airs of royalty. After a few preliminary ceremonies, a civil functionary, standing between two heralds, then recited the long-expected act of grace. His reading, however, was so indistinct that few save the soldiers in the immediate vicinity of the platform could hear a word of the document 6

This effect was, perhaps, intentional Certainly but little enthusiasm could be expected from the crowd, had the text of the amnesty been heard It consisted of three parts-a recitation of the wrongs committed, a statement of the terms of pardon, and a long list of exceptions All the sins of omission and commission, the heresy, the public preaching,

Bor, v 319, Hoofd, v 201

² Strada, de Bell Belgre, bb vn 353 354 3 Bor, v 319 Hoofd v 201 Stradv lib. vn 354 4 Bor, v 319 Hoofd, v 201 Stradv lib. vn 354 5 Strada, lib. vn 354

the image-breaking, the compromise, the confederacy, the rebellion, were painted in lively colours. Pardon, however, was offered to all those who had not rendered themselves liable to positive impeachment, in case they should make their peace with the Church before the expiration of two months, and by confession and repentance obtain their absolution.1 The exceptions, however, occupied the greater part of the document. When the general act of condemnation had been fulminated by which all Netherlanders were sentenced to death, the exceptions had been very few, and all the individuals mentioned by name.2 In the act of pardon, the exceptions comprehended so many classes of inhabitants, that it was impossible for any individual to escape a place in some one of the categories, whenever it should please the government to take his life. Expressly excluded from the benefit of the act were all ministers, teachers, dogmatizers, and all who had favoured and harboured such dogmatizers and preachers; all those in the least degree implicated in the image-breaking; all who had ever been individually suspected of heresy or schism; all who had ever signed or favoured the compromise or the petition to the Regent; all those who had taken up arms, contributed money, distributed tracts; all those in any manner chargeable with misprision, or who had failed to denounce those guilty of heresy. All persons, however, who were included in any of these classes of exceptions might report themselves within six months, when, upon confession of their crime, they might hope for a favourable consideration of their case.3

Such, in brief, and stripped of its verbiage, was this amnesty for which the Netherlands had so long been hoping. By its provisions, not a man or woman was pardoned who had ever committed a fault. The innocent alone were forgiven. Even they were not sure of mercy unless they should obtain full absolution from the Pope. More certainly than ever would the accustomed rigour be dealt to all who had committed any of those positive acts for which so many had already lost their heads. The clause by which a possibility of pardon was hinted to such criminals, provided they would confess and surrender, was justly regarded as a trap. No

¹ See the document in Bor, v. 320, 321.

² Bor, v. 320, 321.

one was deceived by it No man, after the experience of the last three years, would voluntarily thrust his head into the lion's mouth, in order to fix it more firmly upon his shoulders No man who had effected his escape was likely to play in former against himself, in hope of obtaining a pardon from which all but the most sincere and zealous Catholics were in reality excepted

The murmur and discontent were universal therefore, as soon as the terms of the act became known. Alva wrote to the King, to be sure, "that the people were entirely satisfied, save only the demagogues, who could tolerate no single ex-ception from the amnesty, '' but he could neither deceive his sovereign nor himself by such statements Certainly, Philip was totally disappointed in the effect which he had an ticipited from the measure He had thought "it would stop the mouths of many people " On the contrary, every mouth in the Netherlands became vociferous to denounce the hypocrisy by which a new act of condemnation had been promulgated under the name of a pardon Viglius who had drawn up an instrument of much ampler clemency, was far from satisfied with the measure which had been adopted "Certainly,' he wrote to his confidant, "a more benignant measure was to be expected from so merciful a Prince After four years have past, to reserve for punishment and for exe cution all those who during the turnult did not through weakness of mind, render as much service to government as brave men might have offered, is altogether unexampled ""

Alva could not long affect to believe in the people's satis faction He soon wrote to the King acknowledging that the impression produced by the pardon was far from favourable He attributed much evil effect to the severe censure which was openly pronounced upon the act by members of the government, both in Spain and the Netherlands ' He com plained that Hopper had written to Viglius, that "the most

Correspondance de Philippe II, u 965 - "Con gran contenta

юсћа а Cor

Correspondance de Phihppe II , n 980.

severe of the four forms of pardon transmitted had been selected;" the fact being that the most lenient one had been adopted.' If this were so, whose imagination is powerful enough to portray the three which had been burned, and which, although more severe than the fierce document promulgated, were still entitled acts of pardon? The Duke spoke bitterly of the manner in which influential persons in Madrid had openly abominated the cruel form of amnesty which had been decreed.2 His authority in the Netherlands was already sufficiently weakened, he said, and such censure upon his actions from head-quarters did not tend to improve it. "In truth," he added, almost pathetically, "it is not wonderful that the whole nation should be ill-disposed towards me, for I certainly have done nothing to make them love me. At the same time, such language transmitted from Madrid does not increase their tenderness." 3

In short, viewed as a measure by which government, without disarming itself of its terrible powers, was to pacify the popular mind, the amnesty was a failure. Viewed as a net, by which fresh victims should be enticed to entangle them. selves, who had already made their way into the distant atmosphere of liberty, it was equally unsuccessful. A few very obscure individuals made their appearance to claim the benefit of the act, before the six months had expired. With these it was thought expedient to deal gently, but no one was deceived by such clemency. As the common people expressed themselves, the net was not spread on that occasion for finches.4

The wits of the Netherlands, seeking relief from their wretched condition in a still more wretched quibble, transposed two letters of the word Pardona, and re-baptized the new measure Pandora. The conceit was not without meaning. The amnesty, descending from supernal regions, had been ushered into the presence of mortals as a messenger

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1007. ² "Los Españoles en el consejo abominaron de tal forma de perdon." Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 885.

³ *Ibid.*, ii. 1007.

^{4 &}quot;Zynde terstondt het zeggen, dat men dit fiet niet voor de vinken maar voor grooter vooghelen gespreyt had."—Hoofd, v. 202. See also Bor, v. 321. 5 Ibid.

laden with heavenly gifts The casket, when opened, had diffused curses instead of blessings There, however, the classical analogy ended, for it would have puzzled all the pedants of Louvain to discover Hope lurking, under any disguise, within the clauses of the pardon

Very soon after the promulgation of this celebrated act. the new bride of Philip, Anne of Austria, passed through the Netherlands, on her way to Madrid During her brief stay in Brussels, she granted an interview to the Dowager Countess of Horn ' That unhappy lady, having seen her eldest son, the head of her illustrious house, so recently pensh on the scaffold, wished to make a last effort in behalf of the remaining one, then closely confined in the prison of Segovia The Archduchess solemnly promised that his release should be the first boon which she would request of her royal bridegroom, and the bereaved Countess retired almost with a hope 2

A short digression must here be allowed to nurrate the remaining fortunes of that son, the ill starred Seigneur de Montigny His mission to Madrid, in company of the Marquis Berghen, has been related in a previous volume The last and most melancholy scene in the life of his fellow envoy has been described in a recent chapter. After that omnous event, Montigny became most anxious to effect his retreat from Spain. He had been separated more than a but he felt himself under the most rigid although secret inspection. It was utterly impossible for him to obtain leave inspection. It was utterly impossible for him to oblain leave to return, or to take his departure without permission. On one occasion, having left the city accidentally for a ride on horseback to an adjoining village, he found himself sur rounded by an unexpected escort of forty troopers. Still, however, the king retained a smiling mien. To Montigny's repeated and urgent requests for dismissal, Philip graciously urged his desire for a continuance of his visit. He was requested to remain in order to accompany his sovereign upon that journey to the Netherlands which would not be much longer delay gd. In his impatience anything seemed preferable to the state of suspense in which he was made to

¹ Hoofd, v 172

^{*} Ibid , v 172, 173 Meterer 3 Meteren, m 54

He eagerly offered, if he were accused or suspecte of crime, to surrender himself to imprisonment if he on 274 could be brought to trial. Soon after Alva's arrival in t linger. Netherlands, the first part of this offer was accepted. sooner were the arrests of Egmont and Horn known Madrid, than Montigny was deprived of his liberty, closely confined in the alcazar of Segovia. mained imprisoned for eight or nine months in a high to with no attendant save a young page, Arthur de Mu who had accompanied him from the Netherlands.3 men-at-arms were expressly employed to watch over his to prevent his escape.

One day towards the middle of July, 15 via. July some of them in Flemish attire... One day towards the inflemish attire, ise sho from grims, some of them in Flemish attire, ise sho from grims, some of them in They were chantinger roys with-streets of Segovia. They were chantinger roys withstreets of Segovia. They monotonous nost winty the on such occasions, a low, monotonous nost winty the tigny, who happened to be listening, shortwas state tigny, who happened to his fatherland. His succession, was state tigny, who happened to be listening. ugny, who happened the language of his fatherland. His successful shortwas sine the language of his fatherland. His successful shortwas sine the language of his fatherland. His successful shortwas sine the language of his fatherland. The pretended is when, upon paying closer attention, he pretended is terrible meaning of the song. The pretended having no other means of communication with the f were singing for his information the tragic fates brother, Count Horn, and of his friend, Count Mingled with the strain were warnings of his own a ing doom, if he were not able to effect his escape should be too late. Thus by this friendly masqueral Montigny learn the fate of his brother, which otherw that land of terrible secrecy, might have been con from him for ever.4

The hint as to his own preservation was upon st The hint as to his own preservation was upon stream and he at once set about a plan of er He succeinant he at once set about a and he at once set about a plan of eight soldiers in gaining over to his interests the eight soldiers in gaining over to his interests the eight soldiers. whom he was guarded, and heus enabled to comit nicate with many of his own:nts without the prist walls. His major-domo hadusly been permitted furnish his master's table witlions dressed by his ow cook. A correspondence waarried on by means of letters concealed within the l' bread sent daily to the prisoner. In the same wavere provided for sawing f. 54. ren, iii. 54. Hoofd, v. 172.

¹ Meteren, f. 53, 54. 4 Hoofd, v. 172.

through his window bars 1 A very delicate ladder of ropes, by which he was to effect his escape into the court below, was also transmitted The plan had been completely arranged. A certuin Pole employed in the enterprise was to be at Hernani with horses in readiness to convey them to San Sebastian ^a There a sloop had been engaged, and was waiting their arrival Montigny accordingly, in a letter enclosed within a loaf of bread—the last, as he hoped, which he should break in prison—was instructed, after cutting off his beard and otherwise disguising his person, to execute his pian and join his confederates at Hernani Unfortunately, the major domo of Montigny was in love Upon the eve of Reparture from Spain, his farewell interview with his mistress as so much protracted that the care of sending the bread s left to another The substitute managed so unskilfully hat the loaf was brought to the commandant of the castle. Ind not to the prisoner The commandant broke the bread, uscovered the letter, and became master of the whole plot "Il persons engaged in the enterprise were immediately con demned to death, and the Spanish soldier executed without lay The others being considered, on account of their hyalty to their master as deserving a commutation of munishment, were sent to the galleys The major domo, hose ill timed gallantry had thus cost Montigny his liberty, "ceived two hundred lashes in addition All, however, were ventually released from imprisonment *

The unfortunate gentleman was now kept in still closer confinement in his lonely tower. As all his adherents had been disposed of, he could no longer entertain a hope of escape. In the autumn of this year (1568) it was thought expedient by Alva to bring his case formally before the Blood Council. Montigny had committed no crime, but he was one of that band of popular nobles whose deaths had been long decreed. Letters were accordingly sent to Spain, capovering certain functionaires there to institute that pre liminary examination, which, as usual, was to be the only that youchsafed. A long list of interrogatones was addressed to him on February 7th, 1560, in his prison at Segonia. A

Meteren m 54 Hoofd v 172

Correspondance de Philippe II , n 775 Hoofd, Meteren, nbi sup

³ Ibid.

CHAPTER VI.

LONG LIVE THE BEGGARS!

Orange and Count Louis in France—Peace with the Huguenots— Coligny's memoir, presented by request to Charles IX., on the subject of invading the Netherlands-Seeret correspondence of Orange organized by Paul Buys-Privateering commissions issued by the Frince-Regulations prescribed by him for the fleets thus created-Impoverished condition of the Prince-IIIs fortitude-IIIs personal sacrifices and privations -His generosity-Renewed contest between the Duke and the estates on the subject of the tenth and twentieth pence-Violent disputes in the council-Firm opposition of Viglius-Edict commanding the immediate eollection of the tax-Popular tumults-Viglius denounced by Alva-The Duke's fierce complaints to the King-Secret schemes of Philip against Queen Elizabeth of England-The Ridolfi plot to murder Elizabeth countenanced by Philip and Pius V .- The King's orders to Alva to further the plan-The Duke's remonstrances-Explosion of the plot-Obstinacy of Philip-Renewed complaints of Alva as to the imprudent service required of him-Other attempts of Philip to murder Elizabeth-Don John of Austria in the Levant-Battle of Lepanto-Slothfulness of Selim-Appointment of Medina Cœli-Incessant wrangling in Brussels upon the tax-Persevering efforts of Orange-Contempt of Alva for the Prince-Proposed sentence of ignominy against his name-Sonoy's mission to Germany-Remarkable papers issued by the Prince-The "harangue"-Intense hatred for Alva entertained by the highest as well as lower orders-Visit of Francis de Alava to Brussels—His unfavourable report to the King—Querulous language of the Duke-Deputation to Spain-Universal revolt against the tax-Ferocity of Alva—Execution of eighteen tradesmen secretly ordered— Interrupted by the capture of Brill-Beggars of the sea-The younger Wild Boar of Ardennes-Reconciliation between the English government and that of Alva-The Netherland privateersmen ordered out of English ports-De la Marck's fleet before Brill-The town summoned to surrender—Commissioners sent out to the fleet—Flight of the magistrates and townspeople—Capture of the place—Indignation of Alva-Popular exultation in Brussels-Puns and caricatures-Bossu ordered to recover the town of Brill-His defeat-His perfidious entrance into Rotterdam—Massacre in that city—Flushing revolutionized—Unsuccessful attempt of Governor de Bourgogne to recall the citizens to their obedience-Expedition under Treslong from Brill to assist the town of Flushing-Murder of Pacheco by the patriots-'t Zeraerts appointed Governor of Walcheren by Orange.

WHILE such had been the domestic events of the Netherlands during the years 1569 and 1570, the Prince of Orange, although again a wanderer, had never

allowed himself to despair After disbanding his troops at Strasburg, and after making the best arrangements possible under the circumstances for the eventual payment of their wages, he had joined the army which the Duke of Deux Ponts had been raising in Germany to assist the cause of the Huguenots in France

Meantime the battle of Jarnac had been fought, the whole Huguenot army had been routed by the royal forces under the nominal command of Anjou, and the body of Condé, tied to the back of a she ass had been paraded through the streets of Jarnac in dension 2 Affairs had already grown almost as black for the cause of freedom in France as in the provinces Shortly afterwards William of Orange, with a band of twelve hundred horsemen, joined the banners of Coligny His two brothers accompanied him? Henry, the stripling, had left the university to follow the fortunes of the Prince The indomitable Louis, after seven thousand of his army had been slain, had swum naked across the Ems, exclaiming "that his courage, thank God, was as fresh and lively as ever," and had lost not a moment in renewing his hostile schemes against the Spanish government. In the meantime he had joined the Huguenots in France The battle of Moncontour had succeeded, Count Peter Mansfeld, with five thousand troops sent by Alva, fighting on the side of the Royalists, and Louis Nassau on that of the Huguenots, atoning, by the steadiness and skill with which he covered the retreat, for his intemperate courage, which had precipitated the action, and perhaps been the main cause of Coligny's overthrow. The Prince of Orange, who had been peremptorily called to the Netherlands in the beginning of the autumn, was not present at the battle Disguised as a peasant, with but five attendants, and at great peril, he had crossed the enemy's lines, traversed France, and arrived in German, before the winter Count Louis remained with the Huguenots So necessary did he seem to their cause,

¹ Bor v 269 Archives et Correspondance, in. 316 ² De Thou t v in with 570 573 2 16rd , 5° v ⁴ Groen v Prinst , Archives et Correspondance,

De Thou, hy xlva t v 638, 639 Groen v Prinst., Archives et C t v liv xlvi. 6-7 Bor, v 269.

and so dear had he become to their armies, that during the severe illness of Coligny in the course of the following summer all eyes were turned upon him as the inevitable successor of that great man, the only remaining pillar of freedom in France.

Coligny recovered. The deadly peace between the Huguenots and the court succeeded. The Admiral, despite his sagacity and his suspicions, embarked with his whole party upon that smooth and treacherous current which led to the catastrophe of Saint Bartholomew. To occupy his attention, a formal engagement was made by the government to send succour to the Netherlands. The Admiral was to lead the auxiliaries which were to be despatched across the frontier to overthrow the tyrannical government of Alva. Long and anxious were the colloquies held between Coligny and the Royalists.2 The monarch requested a detailed opinion, in writing, from the Admiral, on the most advisable plan for invading the Netherlands. The result was the preparation of the celebrated memoir, under Coligny's directions, by young De Mornay, Seigneur de Plessis. The document was certainly not a paper of the highest order. It did not appeal to the loftier instincts which kings or common mortals might be supposed to possess. It recalled, with exultation, the fact that the only natural and healthy existence of the French was in a state of war-that France, if not occupied with foreign campaigns, could not be prevented from plunging its sword into its own vitals. It indulged in refreshing reminiscences of those halcyon days, not long gone by, when France, enjoying perfect tranquillity within its own borders, was calmly and regularly carrying on its long wars beyond the frontier.3

In spite of this savage spirit, the paper was nevertheless a sagacious one; but the request for the memoir and the many interviews on the subject of the invasion, were only intended to deceive. They were but the curtain which concealed the preparations for the dark tragedy which was about to be enacted. Equally deceived, and more sanguine than ever, Louis Nassau during this period was indefatigable in his attempts to gain friends for his cause. He had repeated

¹ De Thou, t. vi. liv. xlvii. 32-36. ² Ibid., 280. ³ Ibid., t. vi. liv. li. 342-357.

audiences of the King, to whose court he had come in disguise. He made a strong impression upon Elizabeth's envoy at the French Court, Sir Francis Walsingham. It is probable, however, that in the Count's impetuosity to carry his point, he allowed more plausibility to be given to certain projects for subdividing the Netherlands than his brother would ever have sanctioned.

Meantime in the autumn of 1569, Orange had again reached Germany Paul Buys pensionary of I eyden had kept him constantly informed of the state of affairs in the

had, moreover, issued commissions, in his capacity of sove reign to various scafaring persons who were empowered to cruise against Spanish commerce 4

The 'beggars of the sea, as these privateersmen designated themselves, soon acquired as terrible a name as the wild beggars, or the forest beggars 'but the Prince having had many conversations with Admiral Coligny on the important benefits to be derived from the system had faulthully set himself to effect a reformation of its abuses after his return from France The Seigneur de Dolhain, twho, like many

icted as Admiral for the

accounts of his various expeditions, and was now deprived of his command in consequence. Gillain de Fiennes, Seigneur de Lumbres, was appointed to succeed him. At the same time strict orders were issued by Orange, forbidding all hos tile measures against the Emperor or any of the princes of the Empire, against Sweden Denmark, England, or against any potentates who were protectors of the true Christian religion. The Duke of Alta and his adherents were designated as the only lasful antaconsts. The Prince, moreover,

¹ De Thou, t vi 279 280 ² Groen v Frinst, Archives et Correspondance in 404 405 Vem of Walsingham 143.

³ Bor, v 280 ** Bod, v 289 Hooft, v 197
⁵ Bor v 289 Hooft v 198. 289.

⁷ Ibid , v 333 334. Archives et C

gave minute instructions as to the discipline to be observed in his fleet. The articles of war were to be strictly enforced. Each commander was to maintain a minister on board his ship, who was to preach God's word, and to preserve Christian piety among the crew.1 No one was to exercise any command in the fleet save native Netherlanders, unless thereto expressly commissioned by the Prince of Orange. All prizes were to be divided and distributed by a prescribed rule. No persons were to be received on board, either as sailors or soldiers, save "folk of good name and fame." No man who had ever been punished of justice was to be admitted.² Such were the principal features of the organization of that infant navy, which, in course of this and the following centuries was to achieve so many triumphs, and to which a powerful and adventurous mercantile marine had already led the way. "Of their ships," said Cardinal Bentivoglio, "the Hollanders make houses, of their houses schools. Here they are born, here educated, here they learn their profes-Their sailors, flying from one pole to the other, practising their art wherever the sun displays itself to mortals, become so skilful that they can scarcely be equalled, certainly not surpassed, by any nation in the civilized world."3

The Prince, however, had never been in so forlorn a condition as on his return front France. "Orange is plainly perishing," said one of the friends of the cause. Not only had he no funds to organize new levies, but he was daily exposed to the most clamorously-urged claims, growing out of the army which he had been recently obliged to disband. It had been originally reported in the Netherlands that he had fallen in the battle of Moncontour. "If he have really been taken off," wrote Viglius, hardly daring to credit the great news, "we shall all of us have less cause to tremble." After his actual return, however, lean and beggared, with neither money nor credit, a mere threatening shadow without substance or power, he seemed to justify the

¹ Bor, v. 324, 325, 326. Hoofd, v. 198.

Bor, v. 324.
 Bentivoglio, Guerra di Fiandra, lib. v. 89.

^{4 &}quot;Orangius plane periit."—Languet. ad Caner., 101.

⁵ Viglii Epist. ad Joach. Hopp., 79.

sarcasm of Grunvelle "Vana sine wirbus ira," quoted the Cardinal, and of a venty it seemed that not a man was likely to stir in Germany on his behalf, now that so deep a gloom had descended upon his cause. The obscure and the oppressed throughout the provinces and Germany still freely contributed out of their weakness and their poverty, and taxed themselves beyond their means to assist enterprises for the relief of the Netherlands. The great ones of the earth, however, those on whom the Prince had relied those to whom he had given his heart, dukes, princes, and electors, in this fatal change of his fortunes, "fell away like water."

Still his spint was unbroken. He wrote to his brother.

Still his spint was unbroken. He wrote to his brother John that he was quite willing to go to Frankfort in order to give himself up as a hostage to his troops for the payment of their arrears. At the same time he begged his brother to move hear and earth to raise at least one hundred thousand thiders. If he could only furnish them with a month's pay, the soldiers would perhaps be for a time contented. He gave directions also concerning the disposition of what remained of his plate and furniture, the greater part of it having been already sold and expended in the cause. He thought it would, on the whole, be better to have the remained sold, piece by piece, at the fair. More money would be raised by that course than by a more wholesale arrangement.

He was now obliged to attend personally to the most minute matters of domestic economy. The man who had been the mate of emperors, who was himself a sovereign, who had lived his life long in pomp and luxury, surrounded by countiess nobles, priges, men at arms, and menials, now calmly accepted the position of an outlaw and an exile. He cheer fully fulfilled tasks which had formerly devolved upon his grooms and valets. There was an almost pathetic simplicity in the homely details of an existence which, for the moment,

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , n 743

³ Hoofd, v. 199. Bor, v. 312—See also Aha's fierce complaints that the people, who refue class enth and twentheth pence, contributed voluntarily, fur greater sums to support the schemes of the Prince of Orange—Correspondance & Philippe II, n. passim Archives et Correspondance, nr. passim
³ Archives et Correspondance, nr. 355, 356.

Archives et Correspondance de la Maison d'

^{, 360.}

nounced to the King the triumphant establishment, in per petuity, of the lucrative tax So far from all the estates having given their consent, as he had maintained, and as he had written to Philip, it now appeared that not one of those bodies considered itself bound beyond its quota for the two years This was formally stated in the council by Berlay mont and other members. The wrath of the Duke blazed forth at this announcement. He berated Berlaymont for maintaining, or for allowing it to be maintained, that the consent of the orders had ever been doubtful. He protested that they had as unequivocally agreed to the perpetual im position of the tax as he to its commutation during two He declared, however, that he was sick of quotas The tax should now be collected forthwith, and Treasurer Schetz was ordered to take his measures accordingly *

At a conference on the 20th May, the Duke asked Vighus for his opinion The President made a long reply, taking the ground that the consent of the orders had been only conditional, and appealing to such members of the finance council as were present to confirm his assertion. It was con firmed by all. The Duke, in a passion, swore that those who dared maintain such a statement should be chastised a Viglius replied that it had always been the custom for coun cillors to declare their opinion, and that they had never before been threatened with such consequences If such, however, were his excellency's sentiments, councillors had better stay at home, hold their tongues, and so avoid chastise ment. The Duke, controlling himself a little, apologized for this allusion to chastisement, a menace which he dis claimed having intended with reference to councillors whom he had always commended to the King, and of whom his Mujesty had so high an opinion At a subsequent meeting the Duke took Viglius aside, and assured him that he was quite of his oun way of thinking. For certain reasons, however, he expressed himself as unwilling that the rest of the council should be an are of the change in his viens. He wished, he said, to dissemble. The astate President, for a moment, could not imagine the Governor's drift He afterwards per cented that the object of this little piece of deception had

¹ Viglii Comm Dec. Den , s. xxvii

lest the tax should be collected on his merchandise. The Duke confiscated his debt, as the mercer had foreseen, but this being a pecuniary sacrifice, seemed preferable to acquiescence in a measure so vague and so boundless that it might easily absorb the whole property of the country

No man saluted the Governor as he passed through the streets ² Hardly an attempt was made by the people to dis guise their abhorrence of his person Alva, on his side, gave daily exhibitions of ungovernable fury. At a council held on 25th September, 1571, he stated that the King had ordered the immediate enforcement of the edict. Viglius observed that there were many objections to its form He also stoutly denied that the estates had ever given their consent. Also fiercely asked the President if he had not him self once maintained that the consent had been granted? Viglius replied that he had never made such an assertion He had mentioned the conditions and the implied promises on the part of government, by which a partial consent had been extorted. He never could have said that the consent had been accorded, for he had never believed that it could be obtained. He had not proceeded far in his argument when he was interrupted by the Duke—"But you said so, you said so, you said you," cried the exasperated Governor, in a towening passion, repeating many times this flat contra-diction to the President's statements. Viginus firmly stood his ground. Also loudly denounced him for the little respect he had manifested for his authority. He had hitherto done the President good offices, he said, with his Majesty, but certainly should not feel justified in concealing his recent and very unhandsome conduct.

utter in council that which comported with his own sentiments and his Majesty's interests. He had done this heretofore in presence of emperors, kings, queens, and regents, and the had not taken offence. He did not, at this hour, tremble

¹ Letter of Comte de Bergh to Prince of Orange in Archives et Correspondance de la Maison d'Orange Nass., in. 409

³ Vigla Comm etc., s. xlv xlvL

for his grey head, and hoped his Majesty would grant him a hearing before condemnation. The firm attitude of the President increased the irritation of the Viceroy. Observing that he knew the proper means of enforcing his authority—he dismissed the meeting.²

Immediately afterwards, he received the visits of his son. Don Frederic, of Vargas, and other familiars. To these he recounted the scene which had taken place, raving the while so ferociously against Viglius as to induce the supposition that something serious was intended against him. The report flew from mouth to mouth. The affair became the town talk, so that, in the words of the President, it was soon discussed by every barber and old woman in Brussels.2 His friends became alarmed for his safety, while, at the same time, the citizens rejoiced that their cause had found so powerful an advocate. Nothing, however, came of these threats and these explosions. On the contrary, shortly aft... wards the Duke gave orders that the tenth penny should be remitted upon four great articles—corn, meat, wine, and beer.4 It was also not to be levied upon raw materials used in manufactures.⁵ Certainly, these were very important concessions. Still the constitutional objections remained. Alva could not be made to understand why the alcabala, which was raised without difficulty in the little town of Alva, should encounter such fierce opposition in the Netherlands. estates, he informed the King, made a great deal of trouble. They withheld their consent at command of their satrap. The motive which influenced the leading men was not the interest of factories or fisheries, but the fear that for the future they might not be able to dictate the law to their sovereign. The people of that country, he observed, had still the same character which had been described by Julius Cæsar.6

The Duke, however, did not find much sympathy at Madrid. Courtiers and councillors had long derided his schemes. As for the King, his mind was occupied with more interesting matters. Philip lived but to enforce what he chose to consider the will of God. While the Duke was fighting this battle with the Netherland constitutionalists, his master had

¹ Viglii Comm., etc., s. xlvii.

³ Ibid., s. 1.
⁴ Ibid., s. vi. See Bor, v. 345-348.
⁵ Ibid.
⁶ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1063.

engaged at home in a secret but most comprehensive scheme This was a plot to assassmate Queen Elizabeth of England, and to liberate Mary Queen of Scots, who was to be placed on the throne in her stead This project, in which was of course involved the reduction of England under the dominion of the ancient Church, could not but prove attractive to It included a conspiracy against a friendly sove reign, immense service to the Church, and a murder Thus, although the Moorish revolt within the heart of his kingdom had hardly been terminated-although his legions and his navies were at that instant engaged in a contest of no ordinary importance with the Turkish empire-although the Nether lands, still maintaining their hostility and their hatred, required the flower of the Spanish army to compel their sub mission, he did not hesitate to accept the dark adventure which was

One R

been sent Norfolk

him to Philip as a loose, prating creature, utterly unfit to be entrusted with affairs of importance Philip, however, thin, ing more of the plot than of his fellow actors, welcomed the agent of the conspiracy to Madrid, listened to his disclosures attentively, and, without absolutely committing himself by direct promises, dismissed him with many expressions of en couragement.

On the 12th of July, 1571, Philip wrote to the Duke of with Roberto Ridolfi a of the Oueen of Scot

her liberation If th

Spanish monarch were willing to assist the Duke of Norfolk and his friends, it would be easy to put upon Mary's head the crown of England She was then to intermarry with Norfolk. The kingdom of England was again to acknow ledge the authority of Ferrywhere restored

execution of the plan

As Queen Elizabeth would at that season quit London for

2 ford , 11. 1038

^{1 &}quot;Un gran parlanchin. —Correspondance de P 11 il 10. note, and 1035

the country, an opportunity would be easily found for seizing and murdering her. Pius V., to whom Ridolfi had opened the whole matter, highly approved the scheme, and warmly urged Philip's co-operation. Poor and ruined as he was himself, the Pope protested that he was ready to sell his chalices, and even his own vestments, to provide funds for the cause.1 Philip had replied that few words were necessary to persuade him. His desire to see the enterprise succeed was extreme, notwithstanding the difficulties by which it was surrounded. He would reflect earnestly upon the subject, in the hope that God, whose cause it was, would enlighten and assist him. Thus much he had stated to Ridolfi, but he had informed his council afterwards that he was determined to carry out the scheme by certain means of which the Duke would soon be informed. The end proposed was to kill or to capture Elizabeth, to set at liberty the Queen of Scotland, and to put upon her head the crown of England. In this enterprise he instructed the Duke of Alva secretly to assist, without, however, resorting to open hostilities in his own name or in that of his sovereign. He desired to be informed how many Spaniards the Duke could put at the disposition of the conspirators. They had asked for six thousand arquebusiers for England, two thousand for Scotland, two thousand for Ireland. Besides these troops, the Viceroy² was directed to provide immediately four thousand arquebuses and two thousand corslets. For the expenses of the enterprise Philip would immediately remit two hundred thousand crowns. Alva was instructed to keep the affair a profound secret from his councillors. Even Hopper at Madrid knew nothing of the matter, while the King had only expressed himself in general terms to the nuncio and to Ridolfi, then already on his way to the Netherlands. The King concluded his letter by saying, that from what he had now written with his own hand, the Duke could infer how much he had this affair at heart. It was unnecessary for him to say more, persuaded

The title of Viceroy, occasionally given to the Duke, is, of course, not strictly correct—the Netherlands not constituting a kingdom.

^{1 &}quot;Y offresciendome su assistencia en general, sin descender à cosa particular, mas de que, siendo necessario, aunque estava muy pobre y gastado, ponria hasta los calices y su propria veste."—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1038.

as he was that the Duke would take as profound an interest in it as himself?

Alva perceived all the rashness of the scheme, and felt how impossible it would be for him to comply with Philip's orders. To send an army from

purpose of dethroning

rce her

be overlooked, nor would their operations be susceptible of very friendly explanations. The Governor therefore assured Philip' that he highly appliaded his master for his plot He could not help rendering infinite thanks to God for having made him existal to such a Prince. He praised exceedingly the resolution which his Majesty had taken. After this preamble, however, he proceeded to pour cold water upon his sovereign's ardour. He decidedly expressed the opinion that Philip should not proceed in such an undertaking until at any rate the party of the Duke of Norfolk had obtained possession of Elizabeth's person. Should the King declare hat the Venetians.

d make their peace

that marriage with the Duke of Alençon which now seemed but a pleusantry. Moreover, he expressed his want of con fidence in the Duke of Norfolk, whom he considered as a poor creature with but little courage. He also expressed his doubts concerning the prudence and capacity of Don Gueran de Espes, his Maresty's ambassador at London

It ın Er

in Ei

whose share in the conspiracy had remained a secret, was not discouraged by the absolute explosion of the whole affair

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , n 103S

^{4 1611} in 1041

^{2 &}quot;) o no fuelo devar de dar le (a Dios) infinuas gracias que me hoya le ho vasallo de lut frincipe, 3 alabar mucho la resolución que V M ha tomido "- blod", in 1041

[&]quot;Al Du jue tengo le por ffaco y de poco -- l'oul.

He still held to an impossible purpose with a tenacity which resembled fatuity. He avowed that his obligations in the sight of God were so strict that he was still determined to proceed in the sacred cause.1 He remitted, therefore, the promised funds to the Duke of Alva, and urged him to act with proper secrecy and promptness.

The Viceroy was not a little perplexed by these remarkable instructions. None but lunatics could continue to conspire, after the conspiracy had been exposed and the conspirators arrested. Yet this was what his Catholic Majesty expected of his Governor-General. Alva complained, not unreasonably, of the contradictory demands to which he was subjected.2 He was to cause no rupture with England, yet he was to send succour to an imprisoned traitor; he was to keep all his operations secret from his council, yet he was to send all his army out of the country, and to organize an expensive campaign. He sneered at the flippancy of Ridolfi, who imagined that it was the work of a moment to seize the Queen of England, to liberate the Queen of Scotland, to take possession of the Tower of London, and to burn the fleet in the Thames. "Were your Majesty and the Queen of England acting together," he observed, "it would be impossible to execute the plan proposed by Ridolfi.3 The chief danger to be apprehended was from France and Ger-Were those countries not to interfere, he would undertake to make Philip sovereign of England before the winter. Their opposition, however, was sufficient to make the enterprise not only difficult, but impossible. He begged his master not to be precipitate in the most important affair which had been negotiated by man since Christ came upon earth. Nothing less, he said, than the existence of the Christian faith was at stake, for, should his Majesty fail in this undertaking, not one stone of the ancient religion would be left upon another. He again warned the King of the contemptible character of Ridolfi, who had spoken of the

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1043. ² Ibid., 1045. 4 Ibid.

² Ibid., 1045.
³ Ibid.
⁴ Por amor de Dios pido à V. M. que su gran celo no le lleve à errar el mayor negotio de Dios que se ha tratado despues que el vino à la tierra, porque no pende menos que acabarse su religion, que errandole V. M. no queda en toda la Cristianidad piedra sobre piedra en ella."—

affair so freely that it was a common subject of discussion on the Bourse at Antwerp, and he reiterated in all his letters his distrust of the parties prominently engaged in the transaction

Such was the general tenor of the long despatches exchanged between the king and the Duke of Alva upon this iniquitous scheme. The Duke showed himself reluctant throughout the whole affair, although he certainly never opposed his masters project by any arguments founded upon good faith, Christian chanty, or the sense of honour To kill the Queen of England, subvert the laws of her realm, burn her fleets, and butcher her subjects, while the mask of amity and entire consideration was sedulously preserved—all these projects were admitted to be strictly mentionious in themselves, although objections were taken as to the time and mode of execution.

Alva never positively refused to accept his share in the enterprise, but he took care not to lift his finger till the entastrophe in England had made all attempts futtle Philip, on the other hand never positively withdrew from the conspiracy, but, after an infinite deal of writing and intriguing, concluded by leaving the whole affur in the hands of Alva The only sufferer for Philips participation in the plot was the Spanish envoy at London, Don Gueran de Espes This gentleman was formally dismissed by Queen Elizabeth for having given treacherous and hostile advice to the Duke of Alva and to Philip, but her Majesty at the same time expressed the most profound consideration for her brother of Spani **

Towards the close of the same year, however (December, 1571), Alva sent two other Italian assassins to England, bribed by the promise of vist rewards, to attempt the life of Elizabeth, quietly, by poison or otherwise. The envoy, Mondoucet, in apparing the French monarch of this scheme, added that the Duke was so ulcerated and annoyed by the discovery of the previous enterprise, that nothing could

1 Het , n 340 sqq

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II , n , 1049 ² Had , n. 105L ³ Letter of Queen Bhzabeth to Philippe II , in Correspondance — Philippe II , n 1069

^{*} Correspondance de Charles IV et Mondoucet. Com. F.-

exceed his rage. These ruffians were not destined to success, but the attempts of the Duke upon the Queen's life were renewed from time to time. Eighteen months later (August, 1573), two Scotchmen, pensioners of Philip, came from Spain, with secret orders to consult with Alva. They had accordingly much negotiation with the Duke and his secretary, Albornoz. They boasted that they could easily capture Elizabeth, but said that the King's purpose was to kill her.¹ The plan, wrote Mondoucet, was the same as it had been before, namely, to murder the Queen of England, and to give her crown to Mary of Scotland, who would thus be in their power, and whose son was to be seized, and bestowed in marriage in such a way as to make them perpetual masters of both kingdoms.²

It does not belong to this history to discuss the merits, nor to narrate the fortunes, of that bickering and fruitless alliance which had been entered into at this period by Philip with Venice and the Holy See against the Turk. The revolt of Granada had at last, after a two years' struggle, been subdued, and the remnants of the romantic race which had once swayed the Peninsula been swept into slavery. The Moors had sustained the unequal conflict with a constancy not to have been expected of so gentle a people. nation meek as lambs could resist so bravely," said the Prince of Orange, "what ought not to be expected of a hardy people like the Netherlanders?"3 Don John of Austria, having concluded a series of somewhat inglorious forays against women, children, and bed-ridden old men, in Andalusia and Granada, had arrived, in August of this year, at Naples, to take command of the combined fleet in the Levant.4 The battle of Lepanto had been fought,5 but the quarrelsome and contradictory conduct of the allies had rendered the splendid victory comparatively barren. It was no less true, however, that the blunders of the infidels had previously enabled Philip to extricate himself with better

^{1 &}quot;Mon maistre a bien eu moyen de faire prisonnier la reyne d'Angleterre, mais il la voulloit tuer," etc., etc.—Correspondance de Charles IX. et Mondoucet. Com. Roy. de l'Hist., iv. 340, sqq.

2 Ibid.

3 Archives et Correspondance, iii. 362.

De Thou, liv. l. t. vi. 226, et seq. Cabrera, ix. xxiii. 678, et seq.

De Thou, t. vi. 238, et seq. Cabrera, ix. 23, 692, 693.

success from the dangers of the Moonsh resolt than might have been his fortune. Had the rebels succeeded in holding Granada and the mountains of Andalusia, and had they been supported, as they had a right to expect, by the forces of the Sultan, a different aspect might have been given to the conflict, and one far less triumphant for Spain. Had a prince of vigorous ambition and comprehensive policy governed at that moment the Purkish Empire, it would have cost Philip a serious struggle to maintain himself in his hereditary dominions. While he was plotting against the life and throne of Elizabeth, he might have had cause to tremble for his own. Fortunately, however, for his Catholic Majesty, Selim was satisfied to secure himself in the posses sion of the Isle of Venus, with its fruitful vineyards. "To shed the blood" of Cyprian vines, in which he was so enthusiastic a connoisseur, was to him a more exhibitanting occupation than to pursue, amid camage and hardships, the splendid dream of a re-established Eastern caliphate."

On the 25th Sept, 1571, a commission of Governor General of the Notherlands was at last issued to John de la Cerda, Duke of Medina Cedi. Philip, in compliance with the Duke's repeated requests, and perhaps not entirely satis fied with the recent course of events in the provinces, had at last, after great hesitation, consented to Alva's resignation. His successor, however, was not immediately to take his departure, and in the meantime the Duke was instructed to pursevere in his faithful services. These services had, for the present, reduced themselves to a perpetual and not very triumphant altercation with his council, with the estates, and with the people, on the subject of his abominable tax. He was entirely alone. They who had stood unflindingly at his side when the only business of the administration was to bum herities, turned their backs upon him now that he had engaged in this desperate conflict with the whole money power of the councillors much too craft to retain their hold upon the wheel, to which they had only attached themselves in its ascent Viziljus and Berlaymont, Notrearnes and Aerschot, opposed and almost defied the man the

¹ De Thou vi I 50 Cabrera, lil 2 Correspondance de Philippe II

thought sinking, and kept the King constantly informed of the vast distress which the financial measures of the Duke

were causing.1

Quite at the close of the year, an elaborate petition from the estates of Brabant was read before the state-council.2 It contained a strong remonstrance against the tenth penny. Its repeal was strongly urged, upon the ground that its collection would involve the country in universal ruin. Upon this, Alva burst forth in one of the violent explosions of rage to which he was subject. The prosperity of the Netherlands, he protested, was not dearer to the inhabitants than to himself. He swore by the cross, and by the most holy of holies. preserved in the church of Saint Gudule, that had he been but a private individual, living in Spain, he would, out of the love he hore the provinces, have rushed to their defence had their safety been endangered.3 He felt, therefore, deeply wounded that malevolent persons should thus insinuate that he had even wished to injure the country, or to exercise tyranny over its citizens. The tenth penny, he continued, was necessary to the defence of the land, and was much preferable to quotas. It was highly improper that every man in the rabble should know how much was contributed, because each individual, learning the gross amount, would imagine that he had paid it all himself.4 In conclusion, he observed that, broken in health, and stricken in years as he felt himself, he was now most anxious to return, and was daily looking with eagerness for the arrival of the Duke of Medina Cœli.

During the course of this same year, the Prince of Orange had been continuing his preparations. He had sent his agents to every place where a hope was held out to him of obtaining support. Money was what he was naturally most anxious to obtain from individuals; open and warlike assistance what he demanded from governments. His funds, little by little, were increasing, owing to the generosity of many obscure persons, and to the daring exploits of the

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1056. Letter from Bishop of Ypres to Philippe, 1073, 1074. Reports drawn up by Don Francis de Alava on the state of the provinces, 1097. Letters from Bishops of Ypres, Ghent, Bruges.

² Viglii Comm. Dec. Den., s. Ix. ⁴ Ibid.

Ibid.
 Ibid., s. lxi.

beggars of the sea His mission, however, to the northern oeggars of the sea. His mission, hower, to the normers courts had failed. His envoys had been received in Sweden and Denmark with barren courtesy. The Duke of Alva, on the other hand, never alluded to the Prince but with con the bullet hand, never anadad to the Timbe of whith con-tempt, knowing not that the runned outlaw was slowly undermining the very ground beneath the monarch's feet, dreaming not that the feeble strokes which he despised were the opening blows of a centurys conflict, foreseeing not that long before its close the chastised province was to expand into a great republic, and that the name of the out law was to become almost divine

Granvelle had already recommended that the young Count de Buren should be endowed with certain lands in Spain, in exchange for his hereditary estates, in order that the name and fame of the rebel William should be for eyer extinguished in the Netherlands 2 With the same view, a new sentence against the Prince of Orange was now proposed by the Viceroy This was to execute him solemnly in effigy, to drag his escutcheon through the streets at the tails of horses, and after having broken it in pieces and thus cancelled his armonal

summary extinction thus laid down

Not discouraged, the Prince continued to send his emis Not discouraged, the Prince continued to send his emis saries in every direction. Diedrich Sonoy, his most trust worthy agent, who had been chief of the legation to the northern courts, was now actively canvassing the govern ments and peoples of Germany with the same object? Several remarkable papers from the hand of Orange were used upon this service. A letter, drawn up and signed by his own hand, recited, in brief and striking language, the history of his campaign in 1568, and of his subsequent efforts in the screed cause. It was now necessary, he said, that others should share in his sacrifices

Similar instructions were given to other agents, and a

¹ Bor, v 334 340. Hoofl, vi 210 ² Correspondance de Phibppe II , p 959. ⁴ Bor, vi 362 See it in Bor, vi 362, 363

paper called the Harangue, drawn up according to his suggestions, was also extensively circulated. This document is important to all who are interested in his history and charac-He had not before issued a missive so stamped with the warm, religious impress of the reforming party. but without despondency, the Harangue recalled the misfortunes of the past, and depicted the gloom of the present. Earnestly, but not fanatically, it stimulated hope and sollicited aid for the future.

These urgent appeals did not remain fruitless. The strength of the Prince was slowly but steadily increasing. the abhorrence with which Alva was universally regarded had nearly reached to frenzy. In the beginning of the year 1572; Don Francis de Alava, Philip's ambassador in France, visited Brussels." He had already been enlightened as to the consequences of the Duke's course by the immense immigration of Netherland refugees to France, which he had witnessed with his own eyes. On his journey towards Brussels he had been met near Cambray by Noircarmes. Even that "cruel animal," as Hoogstraaten had called him, the butcher of Tournay and Valenciennes, had at last been roused to alarm, if not to pity, by the sufferings of the country. will never disabuse his mind of this filthy tenth penny" said he to Alava. He sprang from his chair with great emetion as the ambassador alluded to the flight of merchants and artisans from the provinces. "Señor Don Francis," cried he, "there are ten thousand more who are on the point of leaving the country, if the Governor does not pause in his career grant that no disaster arise beyond human power to remedy."4

The ambassador arrived in Brussels, and took up his lodgings in the palace. Here he found the Duke just recovering from a fit of the gout, in a state of mind sufficiently savage. He became much excited as Don Francis began to speak of the emigration, and he assured him that there was gross deception on the subject. The envoy replied that he

could not be mistaken, for it was a matter which, so to

¹ See the Harangue in Bor, vi. 363-365. ² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1073, 1074.

² Correspondance de Limpresson 3 "Desta negra decima."—*Ibid.*, ii. 1073.

⁵ *Ibid.* 4 Ibid.

had touched with his own fingers, and seen with his own eyes. The Duke, persisting that Don Francis had been abused and misinformed, turned the conversation to other topics. Next day the ambassador received visits from Berlymont and his son, the Seigneur de Hreiges. He was taken aside by each of them, separately. "Thank God you have come hither," said they, in nearly the same words, "that you may full; comprehend the condation of the provinces, and without delay admonish his Majesty of the impending danger." All his visitors expressed the same sentiments. Don Frederic of Ioledo furnished the only exception, assuring the emoy that his father's financial measures were opposed by Noir carmes and others, only because it deprived them of their occupation and their influence. This duttil language, however, was to be expected in one of whom Secretary Albornoz had written, that he was the greatest comfort to his father, and the most drivine genus ever known." It was unfortunately corroborated by no other inhabitant of the country.

On the third day Don Francis went to take his leave The Duke begged him to inform his Majesty of the impatunce with which he was expecting the arrival of his successor. He then informed his guest that they had already begun to collect the tenth penny in Brabant, the most obstinate of all the provinces "What do you say to that, Don Francis?' he cried, with exultation. Alava replied that he thought none the less, that the tax would encounter many obstacles, and begged him earnestly to reflect. He assured him, moreo er, that he should, without reserve, express his opinions fully to the king. The Duke used the same language which Don Trederic had held, concerning the motives of those who opposed the tix. "It may be so," said Don Francis, "but at any rate, all have agreed to sing to the same tune." A little startled, the Duke rejomed, "Do you doubt that the cities will keep their promises? Depend upon it, I shall find the means to compel them." "God grant it may be so," said

Correspon lance de Philippe II , il 1073.

¹ hllip pe II , n SS6.

^{*} Hid , n 1073

Alava, "but in my poor judgment you will have need of all

your prudence and of all your authority."1

The ambassador did not wait till he could communicate with his sovereign by word of mouth. He forwarded to Spain an ample account of his observations and deductions. He painted to Philip in lively colours the hatred entertained by all men for the Duke. The whole nation, he assured his Majesty, united in one cry, "Let him begone, let him begone, let him begone!" As for the imposition of the tenth penny, that, in the opinion of Don Francis, was utterly impossible. He moreover warned his Majesty that Alva was busy in forming secret alliances with the Catholic princes of Europe, which would necessarily lead to defensive leagues among the Protestants,2

While thus, during the earlier part of the year 1572, the Prince of Orange, discouraged by no defeats, was indefatigable in his exertions to maintain the cause of liberty, and while at the same time the most staunch supporters of arbitrary power were unanimous in denouncing to Philip the insane conduct of his Viceroy, the letters of Alva himself were naturally full of complaints and expostulations. in vain, he said, for him to look for a confidential councillor, now that matters which he had wished to be kept so profoundly secret that the very earth should not hear of them, had been proclaimed aloud above the tiles of every house-top. Nevertheless, he would be cut into little pieces but his Majesty should be obeyed, while he remained alive to enforce the royal commands.5 There were none who had been ever faithful but Berlaymont, he said, and even ke had been neutral in the affair of the tax. He had rendered therein neither good nor had offices, but, as his Majesty was aware, Berlaymont was entirely ignorant of business, and "knew nothing more than to be a good fellow." 6 That being the case he recommended Hierges, son of the "good fellow," as a proper person to be governor of Friesland.

The deputations appointed by the different provinces to

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1073.

Todo el pueblo esta en vaya, vaya, vaya!"—Ibid., ii. 1074.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid., ii. 1095

Ibid., ii. 1103.

confer personally with the King received a reprimand upon their arrival, for having dared to come to Spain without per mission. Further punishment, however, than this rebuke was not inflicted. They were assured that the King was highly displeased with their venturing to bring remonstrances aguinst the tax, but they were comforted with the assurance that his Majesty would take the subject of their petition into consideration. Thus, the expectations of Alva were disappointed, for the tenth penny was not formally confirmed, and the hopes of the provinces frustrated, because it was not distinctly disayowed.

Matters had reached another crisis in the provinces "Had we mone, now," wrote the Prince of Orange, "we should, with the help of God, hope to effect something This is a time when, with even small sums, more can be effected than at other seasons with ampler funds"2 The citizens were in open revolt against the tax. In order that the tenth penny should not be levied upon every sale of goods, the natural but desperate remedy was adopted—no goods were sold at all Not only the wholesale commerce of the provinces was suspended, but the minute and indispensable traffic of daily life was entirely at a stand. The shops were all shut "The brewers," says a contemporary, "refused to brew, the bakers to bake, the tapsters to tap." Multitudes, thrown entirely out of employment, and wholly dependent upon charity, swarmed in every city. The sol diery, furious for their pay, which Alva had for many months neglected to furnish, grew daily more insolent, the citizens, maddened by outrage and hardened by despair, became more and more obstinate in their resistance, while the Duke, rendered inflexible by opposition and insane by wrath, regarded the ruin which he had caused with a malignant spirit which had long ceased to be human "The disease is gnawing at our vitals," wrote Viglius, "everybody is suf-fering for the want of the necessaries of life. Multitudes are

¹ "Pelation of what passed from the arrival of the deputies at Madn Lill 20th April, 1572 —Correspondence de Philippe II, 11. 1105 * Bor, vi. 362

^{507,} vi. 302

"De Brouwers en wilden niet brouwen, de Backers en wilden niet backen noch Tappers niet tappen."—*For.*, vi. 361

"Viglii Lpist ad Joach. Hopper., 126

in extreme and hopeless poverty. My interest in the welfare of the commonwealth," he continued, "induces me to send these accounts to Spain. For myself, I fear nothing. Broken by sickness and acute physical suffering, I should leave life without regret."

The aspect of the capital was that of a city stricken with the plague. Articles of the most absolute necessity could not be obtained. It was impossible to buy bread, or meat, or beer. The tyrant, beside himself with rage at being thus braved in his very lair, privately sent for Master Carl, the executioner.1 In order to exhibit an unexpected and salutary example, he had determined to hang eighteen of the leading tradesmen of the city in the doors of their own shops, with the least possible delay and without the slightest form of trial.2 Master Carl was ordered, on the very night of his interview with the Duke, to prepare eighteen strong cords, and eighteen ladders twelve feet in length.3 By this simple arrangement, Alva was disposed to make manifest on the morrow, to the burghers of Brussels, that justice was thenceforth to be carried to every man's door. He supposed that the spectacle of a dozen and a half of butchers and bakers suspended in front of the shops which they had refused to open, would give a more effective stimulus to trade than any to be expected from argument or proclamation. The hangman was making ready his cords and ladders; Don Frederic of Toledo was closeted with President Viglius, who, somewhat against his will, was aroused at midnight to draw the warrants for these impromptu executions; Alva was waiting with grim impatience for the dawn upon which the show was to be exhibited, when an unforeseen event suddenly arrested the homely tragedy. In the night arrived the intelligence that the town of Brill had been captured. The Duke, feeling the full gravity of the situation, postponed the chastisement which he had thus secretly planned to a more convenient season, in order, without an instant's hesitation, to avert the consequences of this new movement on the part of the rebels. The seizure of Brill was the Deus ex machinâ

¹ Bor, vi. 261.

² Ibid. Strada, lib. vii. 357. Hoofd, vi. 216.

Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup.
Bor, vi. 361. Hoofd, vi. 216.

which unexpectedly solved both the mextricable knot of the situation and the hangman's noose 1

Allusion has more than once been made to those formid able partisans of the patriot cause, the marine outlaws Cheated of half their birthright by nature, and now driven forth from their narrow isthmus by tyranny, the exiled Hol landers took to the ocean Its boundless fields, long arable to their industry became more fruitful than ever now that op pression was transforming a peaceful seafuring people into a nation of corsurs. Driven to outlawry and poverty, no doubt many Netherlanders plunged into crime | The patriot party had long since laid aside the respectful deportment which had provoked the sarcasms of the loyalists. The beggars of the sea asked their alms through the mouths of their cannon Unfortunately, they but too often made their demands upon both friend and foe ' Every ruined merchant, every banished lord, every reckless mariner, who was willing to lay the commercial world under contribution to repair his damaged fortunes, could, without much difficulty, be supplied with a vessel and crew at some northern port, under colour of cruising against the Viceroy's government. Nor was the ostensible motive simply a pretext. To make war upon Alva was the leading object of all these freebooters, and they were usually furnished by the Prince of Orange, in his capacity of sovereign, with letters of marque for that pur direct an cyll which had inevitably grown out of the horrors of the time His Admiral, William de la Marck, was, how superior A wild, sanguinary, licentious noble, wearing his invitation and beard unshorn, according to ancient Batavian custom, until the death of his relative Egmont should have been

¹ Strada lib. vi 357 Bor, Hoofd, supra

tilus -Gret i Annil lib. ii 49

expiated, a worthy descendant of the Wild Boar of Ardennes, this hirsute and savage corsair seemed an embodiment of vengeance. He had sworn to wreak upon Alva and upon popery the deep revenge owed to them by the Netherland nobility, and in the cruelties afterwards practised by him upon monks and priests, the Blood-Council learned that their example had made at least one ripe scholar among the rebels. He was lying, at this epoch, with his fleet on the southern coast of England, from which advantageous position he was now to be ejected in a summary manner.

The negotiations between the Duke of Alva and Queen Elizabeth had already assumed an amicable tone, and were fast ripening to an adjustment. It lay by no means in that sovereign's disposition to involve herself at this juncture in a war with Philip, and it was urged upon her government by Alva's commissioners, that the continued countenance afforded by the English people to the Netherland cruisers must inevitably lead to that result. In the latter days of March, therefore, a sentence of virtual excommunication was pronounced against De la Marck and his rovers. A peremptory order of Elizabeth forbade any of her subjects to supply them with meat, bread, or beer.^a The command being

¹ Vide Bor, vi. 365. V. Meteren, 64. Hoofd, 216, seq.—See also Van Wyn op Wagenaer, vi. 86; Van der Vynekt, ii. 127; Grotii Ann., lib. ii. 49; Ulloa, Comment., i. 60.

The practice of effecting marine insurances took a great and rapid extension from these and similar piracies. Renom de France MS. (ii. 12) supposes the system to have been invented by the Antwerp merchants at this epoch. The custom, however, was doubtless established at an earlier period in Flanders, England, Italy, and Spain. The statute 43 Eliz. c. 12, on the subject, speaks of the immemorial usage among merchants, both English and foreign, to procure insurance on ships and goods. The Duke of Alva, at this time, after consultation with the merchants, drew up an edict regulating contracts of assurance; stipulating that the sum insured should be less than the just and common value of the property insured, one-tenth at least remaining at the risk of the insurer, and prescribing the forms for the policies. A public officer was appointed to keep register of these contracts, which, without such registration, were to be invalid. Masters, pilots, and sailors were not allowed to insure their wages, or anything belonging to them. Fraud on the part of the insurers or the insured was punished with death and confiscation. These contracts, were, however, entirely insufficient to protect vessels, which were plundered daily by "ee canaille de corsaires," which infested every sea and bay.—Renom de France MS., ii. c. 12.

strictly complied with, their further stay was rendered im possible. Twenty us sizes, commanded by D. Haren, Brand, and other Doveri in the very last days of March. Being almost in a state of starvation, these adventurers were naturally anxious to supply starvation, these act enturers were naturally anytous to supply themselves with food They determined to make a sudden foray upon the coasts of North Holland, and accordingly steered for Enkhuizen, both because it was a rich sea port and because it contained many secret partisans of the Prince On Palm Sunday they captured two Spanish merchantmen Soon afterwards, however, the wind becoming contrary, they were unable to double the Helder or the Texel, and on Tuesday, the 1st of April, having abandoned their original intention, they dropped down towards Zeland, and entered the broad mouth of the river Meuse Between the town of Brill, upon the southern lip of this estuary, and Maasland sluis, about half a league distant, upon the opposite side, the squidron suddenly appeared at about two o'clock of an April afternoon, to the great astonishment of the inhabitants of both place. It seemed too large a fleet to be a mere col lection of trading vessels, nor did they appear to be Spanish ships Peter Koppelstoh, a sagacious ferryman, informed the passengers whom he happened to be conveying across the river, that the strangers were evidently the water beggars. The dreaded name filled his hearers with con beggars in the detacted maintenance and includes with construction, and they became eager to escape from so perilous a veinity. Having duly landed his customers, however, who hastened to spread the news of the timpending invasion, and to prepare for defence or flight, the stout ferry man, who was secretly favourable to the cause of liberty, rowed boldly out to inquire the destination and purposes of the

The vessel which he first hailed was that commanded by William de Blois, Seigneur of Treslong This adventurous noble, whose brother had been executed by the Duke of

fleet

¹ Probably Dover See in particular Van Wyn op Wagenaer, vi 77; also Meteren, 68.

Bor, though Wagenaer, vi. 340 stage Bor, this sup Hoofd, pp. 216, 217

Alva in 1568,1 had himself fought by the side of Count Louis at Jemmingen, and, although covered with wounds, had been one of the few who escaped alive from that horrible carnage. During the intervening period he had become one of the most famous rebels on the ocean, and he had always been well known in Brill, where his father had been governor for the King.2 Heat once recognized Koppelstok, and hastened with him on board the Admiral's ship, assuring De la Marck that the ferryman was exactly the man for their purpose. was absolutely necessary that a landing should be effected, for the people were without the necessaries of life. Captain Martin Brand had visited the ship of Adam van Haren, as soon as they had dropped anchor in the Meuse, begging for food. "I gave him a cheese," said Adam, afterwards relating the occurrence, "and assured him that it was the last article of food to be found in the ship." The other vessels were equally destitute. Under the circumstances, it was necessary to attempt a landing. Treslong, therefore, who was really the hero of this memorable adventure, persuaded De la Marck to send a message to the city of Brill, demanding its surrender. This was a bold summons to be made by a handful of men, three or four hundred at most, who were both metaphorically and literally beggars. The city of Brill was not populous, but it was well walled and fortified. It was, moreover, a most commodious port. Treslong gave his signet ring to the fisherman, Koppelstok, and ordered him, thus accredited as an envoy, to carry their summons to the magistracy. Koppelstok, nothing loath, instantly rewed ashore, pushed through the crowd of inhabitants, who overwhelmed him with questions, and made his appearance in the town-house before the assembled magistrates. He informed them that he had been sent by the Admiral of the fleet and by Treslong, who was well known to them, to

Sententien van Alva, 73, 74.
 Bor, vi. 366.
 Van Wyn of Wagenaer, vi. 78, from a MS. journal kept by Adam

van Haren himself.

⁴ Bor states their numbers at two hundred and fifty, vi. 366. Hoofd follows Bor. Mendoza, f. 111, says there were eleven hundred in all. The Duke of Alva, in his letter of 26th April, 1572 (No. 1107, Correspondance de Philippe II.), estimates them at between seven and eight hundred. Bentivoglio, lib. v. 88, says one thousand.

Bor, Hoofd, Van Wyn.

demand that two commissioners should be sent out on the part of the city to confer with the patriots He was bidden, he said, to give assurance that the deputies would be cour teously treated The only object of those who had sent him was to free the land from the tenth penny, and to overthrow the tyranny of Alva and his Spaniards Hereupon he was asked by the magistrates how large a force De la Marck had under his command. To this question the ferryman care lessly replied that there might be some fixe thousand in all 1 I his enormous falsehood produced its effect upon the magis trates There was now no longer any inclination to resist the invaders, the only question discussed being whether to trent with them or to fly On the whole, it was decided to do both With some difficulty, two deputies were found sufficiently valuant to go forth to negotiate with the beggars while in their absence most of the leading burghers and functionaries' made their preparations for flight. The envoys were assured by De la Marck and Treslong that no injury was intended to the citizens or to private property but that the overthrow of Alva's government was to be instantly accomplished Two hours were given to the magistrates in which to decide whether or not they would surrender the town and recept the authority of De la Marck as Admiral of the Prince of Orange They employed the two hours thus granted in making an ignorumous escape. Their example was followed by most of the townspeople. When the inviders at the ex piration of the walls of the ver class gazing city, they at them fro communication

from any source. The whole rebel force was now divided into two parties, one of which under Treslong made an attack upon the southern gate, while the other, commanded by the Admird, advanced upon the northern Treslong, after a short struggle, succeeded in forcing his entrance, and arrested, in doing so, the governor of the city, just taking his departure. De h Marck and his men made a bonfire at the northern gate, and then battered down the half burned portal with the end of

I Hooff vs. 218

¹ Bor, vs 366 Hooff vs 218

an old mart.1 Thus rudely and rapidly did the Netherland patriots conduct their first successful siege. The two parties, not more perhaps than two hundred and fifty men in all, met before sumet in the centre of the city, and the foundation of the Dutch Republic was laid. The weary spirit of freedom, so long a fugitive over earth and sea, had at last found a resting-place, which rude and even ribald hands had

prepared. The panic created by the first appearance of the fleet had been so extensive that hardly fifty citizens had remained in the town. The rest had all escaped, with as much property as they could carry away. The Admiral, in the name of the Prince of Orange, as lawful stadholder of Philip, took formal possession of an almost deserted city. No indignity was offered to the inhabitants of either sex, but as soon as the conquerors were fairly established in the best houses of the place, the inclination to plunder the churches could no longer be restrained. The altars and images were all destroyed, the rich furniture and gorgeous vestments appropriated to private use. Adam van Haren appeared on his vessel's deck attired in a magnificent high mass chasuble. Treslong thenceforth used no drinking cups in his cabin save the golden chalices Unfortunately, their hatred to popery of the sacrament. was not confined to such demonstrations. Thirteen unfortimate monks and priests, who had been unable to effect their escape, were arrested and thrown into prison, from whence they were taken a few days later, by order of the ferocious Admiral, and executed under circumstances of great barbarity.2

The news of this important exploit spread with great rapidity. Alva, surprised at the very moment of venting his rage on the butchers and grocers of Brussels, deferred this savage design in order to deal with the new difficulty. had certainly not expected such a result from the ready compliance of Queen Elizabeth with his request. His rage was excessive; the triumph of the people, by whom he was cordially detested, proportionately great. The punsters of Brussels were sure not to let such an opportunity escape them, for the name of the captured town was susceptible of

¹ Bor, vi. 366. Hoofd, Wagenaer.
² Bor, vi. 366, 367. Van Wyn op Wagenaer, vi. 84, note 10.

a quibble, and the event had taken place upon All Fools' Day

"On April's Fool's Day,
Duke Alva's spectacles were stolen away."

became a popular couplet. The word spectacles, in Flemish, as well as the name of the suddenly surprised city being Brill, this allusion to the Duke's loss and implied purblindness was not destitute of ingenuity. A cancature, too, was extensively circulated, representing De la Marck stealing the Duke's spectacles from his nose, while the Governor was supposed to be uttering his habitual expression whenever any intelligence of importance was brought to him. No es nada, no es nada.—This nothing. It is nothing.

The Duke, however, lost not an instant in attempting to repair the disaster. Count Bossu, who had acted as stad holder of I was and Taland and Alana thout some

the P

ancu Hastily gathering a force of some ten companies from the garrison of Utrecht, some of which very troops had recently. and unluckily for government, been removed from Bull to that city, the Count crossed the Sluis to the island of Voorn upon Easter day, and sent a summons to the rebel force to surrender Bnil The patnots being very few in number, were at first afraid to venture outside the gates to attack the much superior force of their invaders. A carpenter, however, who belonged to the city, but had long been a partisan of Orange, dashed into the water with his axe in his hand, and swimming to the Niewland sluice, hacked it open with a few vigorous strokes. The sea poured in at once, making the approach to the city upon the north side impossible Bossu then led his Spaniards along the Niewland dyke to the southern gate, where they were received with a warm dis charge of artillers, which completely staggered them Mean time Freslong and Robol had, in the most daring manner,

³ Bor, vt 367

¹ Bor, vi. 366 y-" Den eersten dag van April Verloos Duc d Alva zijnen .

² Vie du Duc d Albe, L 403 Van der V

rowed out to the ships which had brought the enemy to the island, cut some adrift, and set others on fire. The Spaniards at the southern gate caught sight of their blazing vessels, saw the sea rapidly rising over the dyke, became panic-struck at being thus enclosed between fire and water, and dashed off in precipitate retreat along the slippery causeway and through the slimy and turbid waters, which were fast threatening to overwhelm them. Many were drowned or smothered in their flight, but the greater portion of the force effected their escape in the vessels which still remained within reach. This danger averted, Admiral de la Marck summoned all the inhabitants, a large number of whom had returned to the town after the capture had been fairly established, and required them, as well as all the population of the island, to take an oath of allegiance to the Prince of Orange as stadholder for his Majesty.2

The Prince had not been extremely satisfied with the enterprise of De la Marck.3 He thought it premature, and doubted whether it would be practicable to hold the place, as he had not yet completed his arrangements in Germany, nor assembled the force with which he intended again to take the field. More than all, perhaps, he had little confidence in the character of his Admiral. Orange was right in his estimate of De la Marck. It had not been that rover's design either to take or to hold the place; and after the descent had been made, the ships victualled, the churches plundered, the booty secured, and a few monks murdered, he had given orders for the burning of the town, and for the departure of the fleet.4 The urgent solicitations of Treslong, however, prevailed, with some difficulty, over De la Marck's original intentions. It is to that bold and intelligent noble, therefore, more than to any other individual, that the merit of laying this corner-stone of the Batavian commonwealth belongs. The enterprise itself was an accident, but the quick eye of Treslong saw the possibility of a permanent

^{1 &}quot;Door slyk, door slop, door dik en dun," are the homely but vigorous expressions of the Netherland chronicler.—Bor, vi. 367.

² Ibid., vi. 368. Hoofd, vi. 220. ³ Bor, vi. 367. Hoofd, vi. 221. Wagenaer, vi. 348. ⁴ Bor, vi. 366. Hoofd. v. 219. Wagenaer, vi. 345, 346.

⁵ Hoofd, v. 219.

conquest, where his superior dreamed of nothing beyond a piratical foray

Meantime Bossu, baffled in his attempt upon Brill, took his way towards Rotterdam. It was important that he should at least secure such other cities as the recent success of the rebels might cause to waver in their allegiance He found the gates of Rotterdam closed The authorities refused to comply with his demand to admit a garrison for the King Professing perfect loyalty, the inhabitants very naturally refused to admit a band of sanguinary Spaniards to enforce their obedience Compelled to parley, Bossu resorted to a perfidious stratagem. He requested permis sion for his troops to pass through the city without halting This was granted by the magistrates, on condition that only a corporal's command should be admitted at a time. To these terms the Count affixed his hand and seal 1 With the admission, however, of the first detachment, a violent onset was made upon the gate by the whole Spanish force The townspeople, not suspecting treachers, were not prepared to make effective resistance. A stout smith, confronting the invaders at the gate, almost singly, with his sledge-hammer, was stribbed to the heart by Bossu with his own hand " The soldiers having thus gained admittance, rushed through the streets, putting every man to death who offered the slightest resistance Within a few minutes four hundred citizens were murdered The fate of the women, abandoned now to the outrage of a brutal soldiery, was worse than death. The capture of Rotterdam is infamous for the same crimes which blacken the record of every Spanish triumph in the Netherlands 5 The important town of Flushing, on the Isle of Walcheren,

was first to ubrate with the patriotic impulse given by the success at Br warm partisan of Orange, even the market-place to drive the city. A little later upon the same day a considerable rein forcement arrived before the walls. The Duke had determined, although too late, to complete the fortress which had been commenced leng before to control the possession of

Bor, vi. 368 2 Hr.f. Hoofd, vi. 220, 221.

1 Meteren, 66 Bor, Hoofd, why sup

this important position at the mouth of the western Scheld. The troops who were to resume this too long intermitted work arrived just in time to witness the expulsion of their comrades. De Herp' easily persuaded the burghers that the die was cast, and that their only hope lay in a resolute resistance. The people warmly acquiesced, while a halfdrunken, half-witted fellow in the crowd valiantly proposed, in consideration of a pot of beer, to ascend the ramparts and to discharge a couple of pieces of artillery at the Spanish ships. The offer was accepted, and the vagahond, merrily mounting the height, discharged the guns. Strange to relate, the shot thus fired by a lunatic's hand put the invading ships to flight. A sudden panic seized the Spaniards, the whole fleet stood away at once in the direction of Middelburg, and were soon out of sight.1

The next day, however, Antony of Bourgoyne, governor under Alva for the Island of Walcheren, made his appearance in Flushing. Having a high opinion of his own oratorical nowers, he came with the intention of winning back with his rhetoric a city which the Spaniards had thus far been unable to recover with their cannon. The great bell was rung, the whole population assembled in the market-place, and Antony, from the steps of the town-house, delivered a long oration, assuring the burghers, among other asseverations, that the King, roho was the best-natured Prince in all Christendom, would forget and forgive their offences if they returned honestly to their duties.

The effect of the Governor's eloquence was much diminished, however, by the interlocutory remarks of De Herpt and a group of his adherents. They reminded the people of the King's good nature, of his readiness to forget and to forgive, as exemplified by the fate of Horn and Egmont, of Berghen and Montigny, and by the daily and almost hourly decrees of the Blood-Council. Each well-rounded period of the Governor was greeted with ironical cheers. The oration was unsuccessful. "Oh, citizens, citizens!" cried at last the discomfited Antony, "ye know not what ye do. Your blood be upon your own heads; the responsibility be upon your own hearts for the fires which are to consume your cities and

¹ Bor, vi. 369, 370. Hoofd, vi. 222. ² Bor, vi. 370. Hoofd, vi. 222.

the desolation which is to sweep your land!" The orator at this impressive point was interrupted, and most unceremoniously hustled out of the city. The government remained in the hands of the patriots.

The party, however, was not so strong in soldiers as in spinit. No sooner, therefore, had they established their rebellion to Alia as an incontrovertible fact, than they sent off emissaries to the Prince of Orange, and to Admiral De la Marck. It Brill. Finding that the inhabitants of Flushing were willing to provide arms and ammunition, De la Marck readily consented to send a small number of men, bold and experienced in partisan warfire of whom he had now collected a larger number than he could well arm or maintain in his present position.

The detachment, two hundred in number, in three small vessels, 'set sail accordingly from Brill for Flushing, and a wild crew they were of reckless adventurers under command of the bold Treslong. The expedition seemed a fierce but whimsteal masquerade. Every man in the little fleet was attired in the gorgeous vestments of the plundered churches, in gold embroidered cassocks, glittening mass garments, or the more sombre cowls and robes of Capuchin finars. So sped the early stundard bearers of that ferocious liberty which had sprung from the fires in which all else for which men cherish their fatherland had been consumed. So swept that resolute but funtastic band along the placid estuanes of Zelund, waking the stagnant waters with their wild beggar soney-and cres of venceance.

That vengeance found soon a distinguished object Pacheco, the chief engineer of Alva, who had accompanied the Duke in his march from Italy, who had since earned a world wide reputation as the architect of the Antwerp citadel, had been just despatched in haste to Flushing to complete the fortress whose construction had been so long deliyed. Too late for his work, too soon for his safety, the ill fated engineer had arrived almost at the same moment with Treslong and his crew. He had stepped on shore,

¹ Bor, v1 370. Hoo€, v1. 222.

² Bor, vi. 370.

³ Wagenaer, vi. 351

⁴ Bor, vi. 370. Wagenaer vi. 351

Van Wyn op

^{\$4, 119} Bor, vi. 370. Hoofd, vi.

entirely ignorant of all which had transpired, expecting to be treated with the respect due to the chief commandant of the place, and to an officer high in the confidence of the Governor-general. He found himself surrounded by an indignant and threatening mob. The unfortunate Italian understood not a word of the opprobrious language addressed to him, but he easily comprehended that the authority of the Duke was overthrown. Observing De Ryk, a distinguished partisan officer and privateersman of Amsterdam, whose reputation for bravery and generosity was known to him, he approached him, and drawing a seal ring from his finger, kissed it, and handed it to the rebel chief-By this dumb-show he gave him to understand that he relied upon his honour for the treatment due to a gentleman. De Ryk understood the appeal, and would willingly have assured him, at least, a soldier's death, but he was powerless to He arrested him, that he might be protected from the fury of the rabble; but Treslong, who now commanded in Flushing, was especially incensed against the founder of the Antwerp citadel, and felt a ferocious desire to avenge his brother's murder upon the body of his destroyer's favourite? Pacheco was condemned to be hanged upon the very day of his arrival. Having been brought forth from his prison, he begged hard, but not abjectly for his life. He offered, heavy ransom, but his enemies were greedy for blood, not for money. It was, however, difficult to find an executione The city hangman was absent, and the prejudice of the country and the age against the vile profession had assumil not been diminished during the five horrible yof De Herpt Even a condemned murderenhe people of administration. the town-gaol, refused to accept his life in ranorget and to performing the office. It should never be saind Egmont, of that his mother had given birth to a hangmad almost hourly however, that the intended victim was a Spannded period of malefactor consented to the task with alacrity. The oration that he might afterwards kill any man who tauned at last the the deed.

Arrived at the foot of the gallows, Pachecoe upon your our cities and

Hoofd, who afterwards received the ring as a pres de Ruk, son of the officer to whom it was given by the

bitterly of the disgraceful death designed for him He pro tested loudly that he came of a house as noble as that of Egmont or Horn, and was entitled to as honourable an execution as theirs had been "The sword! the sword!" he frantically exclaimed, as he struggled with those who guarded him His language was not understood, but the names of Egmont and Horn inflamed still more highly the rage of the rabble, while his cry for the sword was falsely interpreted by a rude fellow who had happened to possess himself of Pacheco's rapier, at his capture, and who now paraded himself with it at the gallow's foot "Never fear for your sword, Senor," cried this ruffian 'your sword is safe enough, and in good hands Up the ladder with you, Senor, you have no further use for your sword

Pacheco, thus outraged, submitted to his fate. He mounted the ladder with a steady step, and was hanged between two other Spanish officers So perished miserably a brave soldier, and one of the most distinguished engineers of his time, a min whose character and accomplishments and certainly mented for him a better fate 2 But while we I igmatize as it deserves the atrocious conduct of a few detherland partizans, we should remember who first un chained the demon of international hatred in this unhappy land, nor should it ever be forgotten that the great leader of the revolt, by word, proclamation, example, by entreaties, threats, and condign punishment, constantly rebuked, and to Z certain extent restrained, the sanguinary spirit by which append his followers disgraced the noble cause which they

Pacheco, the 70 Hoofd, vi 225 Wagenaer, vi 352 It is errone the Duke in E Bentivoglio, lib v 92, and Cabrera, lib ix 705 that a world wide readed Both these writers follow Mendoza. Tassis citadel, had beede Tassis, Comment de Tumulibus Belgieis, xxxi complete the fo doubt, however, that the unfortunate gentleman was dulyed. Toock, and not by the legs.

all flated engage, in extension of the barbarous punishment which was with Treslo, thus, that a paper has been found appear has parsant, cor

¹ Bor, v1

Bor, 11

Bor, vi. 370 S4 119

328 Treslong did not long remain in command at Flushing. An officer, high in the confidence of the Prince, Jerome van 't Zeraerts, now arrived at Flushing, with a commission to be Lieutenant-Governor over the whole isle of Walcheren. He was attended by a small band of French infantry, while at nearly the same time the garrison was further strengthened by the arrival of a large number of volunteers from England.1

¹ Bor, vi. 371.

CHAPTER VII.

THE LIBERATOR CONQUERED BY ST. BARTHOLOMEW.

we not as all tan then also tillattend and 701 ... 1

of	•				by C	range as
G٠	*,				gover	mment-
In					xedI	Clause of
	tion—Surprise					
Oliver	-Details of t	he capture	Assembly of	the citize	ns—Sp	eeches of
	and of Count					
	1 Predenc ord					
	-Arrival of \					
Lisbor	n fleet—Affect	ation of cords	ility between	Alsa an	d Medu	ıa—Con
cession	ns by King a	nd Viceroy o	n the sulpec	t of the	tenth	penny -
:		, ,	•	٠.	-	

at Mons-Reinforcements fed from I rance by Gentis officer-IIIs total defeat-Orange an of the mott of some t

camp before Mons-Hopelessness of the Prince's scheme to obtain battle from Alva-Romego's encamisada-narrow escape of the Prince-

Mutiny and dissolution (I his army-His return to Holland-His steadfastness-Desperate position of Count Louis in N Alva-Capitulation of Mons-Courteoas

the Spanish generals-Hypocrisy of these

the Mons capitulation-Horrible violation of its terms-Noirearmes at More. Establi hment of a Blood-Council in the city-Wholesale execution - I melty and capidity of Noircarmes-Lafe discovery of the archive, of the e-crime. Return of the revolted cities of Brabant and Finder to obedience-Sack of Mechlin by the Spaniards-Details of that event.

THE example thus set by Brill and Flushing was rapidly followed. The first half of the year 1572 was distinguished by a series of triumphs rendered still more remarkable by the reverses which followed at its close. Of a sudden. almost as it were by accident, a small but important seaport, the object for which the Prince had so long been hoping, was secured. Instantly afterward, half the island of Walcheren renounced the yoke of Alva. Next, Enkhuizen, the key to the Zuyder Zee, the principal arsenal, and one of the first commercial cities in the Netherlands, rose against the Spanish Admiral, and hung out the banner of Orange on its ramparts.1 The revolution effected here was purely the work of the people—of the mariners and burghers of the city.' Moreover, the magistracy was set aside, and the government of Alva repudiated without shedding one drop of blood, without a single wrong to person or property.³ By the same spontaneous movement, nearly all the important cities of Holland and Zeland raised the standard of him in whom they recognized their deliverer.4 The revolution was accomplished under nearly similar circumstances everywhere. With one fierce bound of enthusiasm the nation shook off its chain. Ondewater, Dort, Harlem, Leyden, Gorcum, Loewenstein, Gouda, Medenblik, Horn, Alkmaar, Edam, Monni-kendam, Purmerende, as well as Flushing, Veer, and Enkhuizen, all ranged themselves under the government of Orange, as lawful stadholder for the King.5

Nor was it in Holland and Zeland alone that the beacon fires of freedom were lighted. City after city in Gelderland, Overyssel, and the see of Utrecht; all the important towns of Friesland, some sooner, some later, some without a struggle, some after a short siege, some with resistance by the functionaries of government, some by amicable compro-

¹ Bor, vi. 371-375. Hoofd, vi. 230-236.
² Bor, Hoofd, *ubi sup*. Ibid. Van Meteren, 67-69.

Hoofd, vi. 238-240, et seq. Bor, vi. 377, et seq.
Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Meteren, 69, et seq. Wagenaer, vi. 363-370.

mise, accepted the garrisons of the Prince, and formally recognized his authority. Out of the chaos which a long and preternatural tyranny had produced, the first struggling elements of a new and a better world began to appear. It were superfluous to narrate the details which marked the sudden restoration of liberty in these various groups of cities Traits of generosity marked the change of government in some, circumstances of ferocity disfigured the revolution in others. The island of Walcheren, equally divided as it was between the two parties, was the scene of much truculent and diabolical warfare. It is difficult to say whether the mutual hatred of race or the animosity of religious difference proved the deadlier venom The combats were perpetual and sanguinary, the prisoners on both sides instantly executed On more than one occasion, men were seen assisting to hang with their own hands and in cold blood their own brothers who had been taken prisoners in the enemy's ranks. Who had oven taken prisoners in the enemy's ranks. When the captures were too many to be hanged, they were tied bick to back, two and two, and thus hurled into the sea. The islanders found a fierce pleasure in these acts of cruelty. A Spaniard had ceased to be humn in their eyes. On one occasion, a surgeon at Veer cut the heart from a Spanish prisoner, nulled it on a vessel's prow, and invited the townsmen to come and fasten their teeth in it, which many did with savage satisfaction 4

In other parts of the country, the revolution was, on the whole, accomplished with comparative calmness. Even traits of generosity were not uncommon. The burgomaster of Gouda, long the supple slave of Alva and the Blood Council, fled for his life as the revolt broke forth in that city. He took refuge in the house of a certain widow, and begged for a place of concealment. The widow led him to a secret closet which served as a pantry. "Shall I be secure there,?" asked the fugitive functionary. "O yes, six Burgomaster, replied the widow, "twas in that very place that my husband lay concealed when you, accompanied by the officers of justice, were searching the house that you might bring him to

Bor Meteren#Hoofd, Wagenzer, ubs sup Hoofd vs 227

[&]quot; " Vocien sporten." - Hafd Was

⁴ Hoofd, vr. 228,

the scaffold for his religion. Enter the pantry, your worship; I will be responsible for your safety." Thus faithfully did the humble widow of a hunted and murdered Calvinist protect the life of the magistrate who had brought desolation to her hearth.

Not all the conquests thus rapidly achieved in the cause of liberty were destined to endure, nor were any to be retained without a struggle. The little northern cluster of republics which had now restored its honour to the ancient Batavian name was destined, however, for a long and vigorous life. From that bleak isthmus the light of freedom was to stream through many years upon struggling humanity in Europe; a guiding pharos across a stormy sea; and Harlem, Leyden, Alkmaar—names hallowed by deeds of heroism such as have not often illustrated human annals—still breathe as trumpettongued and perpetual a defiance to despotism as Marathon, Thermopylæ, or Salamis.

A new board of magistrates had been chosen in all the redeemed cities, by popular election. They were required to take an oath of fidelity to the King of Spain, and to the Prince of Orange as his stadholder; to promise resistance to the Duke of Alva, the tenth penny, and the inquisition; "to support every man's freedom and the welfare of the country; to protect widows, orphans, and miserable persons, and to maintain justice and truth."

Diedrich Sonoy arrived on the 2nd June at Enkhuizen. He was provided by the Prince with a commission, appointing him Lieutenant-Governor of North Holland or Waterland.³ Thus, to combat the authority of Alva was set up the authority of the King. The stadholderate over Holland and Zeland to which the Prince had been appointed in 1559, he now reassumed. Upon this fiction reposed the whole provisional polity of the revolted Netherlands. The government, as it gradually unfolded itself, from this epoch forward until the declaration of independence and the absolute renunciation of the Spanish sovereign power, will be sketched in a future chapter. The people at first claimed not an iota more of freedom than was secured by Philip's coronation oath. There

¹ Hoofd, vi. 242.

² Bor, vi. 374, 375. Hoofd, vi. 230, 236. Wagenaer, vi. 360, 361.

³ Bor, vi. 375.

was no pretence that Philip a pretence and a determinat conscience, and to reclaim

of the land So long as Alva reigned, the Blood Council, the inquisition, and martial law, were the only codes or courts, and every charter slept. To recover this practical liberty and these historical rights, and to shake from their shoulders a most sanguinary government, was the purpose of William and of the people. No revolutionary standard was displayed.

The written instructions given by the Prince to his Lieu tenant Sonoy's were to "see that the Word of God was preciched, without, however, suffering any hindrance to the Roman Church in the exercise of its religion to restore fugitives and the bamished foreonseience sake, and to require of all magistrates and officers of guilds and brotherhoods an oath of fidelity. The Prince likewise prescribed the form of that oath, repeating therein, to his eternal honour, the same striet prohibition of intolerance. Likewise, said the formula, "shall those of 'the religion' offer no let or hindrance to the Roman ehurches'."

The Prime was still in Germany engaged in raising troops and providing funds. He directed however, the affairs of the insurgent provinces in their minutest details, by virtue of the dictatorship inevitably forced upon him both by circum stances and by the people. In the meantime, Louis of Nassau the Bayard' of the Netherlands performed a most unexpected and, brilliant exploit. He had been long in I rance, negotia ting with the leaders of the Huguenots, and, more secretly, with the court. He was supposed by all the world to be still in that kingdom, when the startling intelligence arrived that he had surprised and captured the important city of Mons' I his town, the capital of Hamault situate in a fertile, undu lating and beautiful country, protected by lofty walls a triple most, and a strong citadel, was one of the most flourishing and clegant places in the Netherlands. It was, moreover, from its virinity to the frontiers of I rance, a most important acquisition to the insurgent party. The capture was their

¹ See them in Bor 11 375 376

Groen v I masterer Archives, etc., iv Hoo'd vi 237 238 Bor vi 377, 378

accomplished. A native of Mons, one Antony Oliver, a geographical painter, had insinuated himself into the confidence of Alva, for whom he had prepared at different times some remarkably well-executed maps of the country. Having occasion to visit France, he was employed by the Duke to keep a watch upon the movements of Louis of Nassau, and to make a report as to the progress of his intrigues with the court of France. The painter, however, was only a spy in disguise, being in reality devoted to the cause of freedom, and a correspondent of Orange and his family. His communications with Louis, in Paris, had therefore a far different result from the one anticipated by Alva. A large number of adherents within the city of Mons had already been secured, and a plan was now arranged between Count Louis, Genlis, De la Noue, and other distinguished Huguenot chiefs, to be carried out with the assistance of the brave and energetic artist.

On the 23rd of May, Oliver appeared at the gates of Mons, accompanied by three waggons, ostensibly containing mer-chandise, but in reality laden with arquebusses. These were secretly distributed among his confederates in the city. In the course of the day Count Louis arrived in the neighbourhood, accompanied by five hundred horsemen and a thousand foot soldiers. This force he stationed in close concealment within the thick forests between Maubeuge and Mons. Towards evening he sent twelve of the most trusty and daring of his followers, disguised as wine-merchants, into the city. These individuals proceeded boldly to a public-house, ordered their supper, and while conversing with the landlord, carelessly inquired at what hour next morning the city gates would be opened. They were informed that the usual hour was four in the morning, but that a trifling present to the porter would ensure admission, if they desired it, at an earlier hour. They explained their inquiries by a statement that they had some casks of wine which they wished to introduce into the city Having obtained all the information which before sunrise. they needed, they soon afterwards left the tavern. next day they presented themselves very early at the gate, which the porter, on promise of a handsome "drink-

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. vi. 100. Hoofd, vi. 237. Mendoza, lib. v. 120. Van Meteren, iv. 71

The

to follow hard upon his

penny," agreed to unlock No sooner were the bolts withdrawn, however, than he was struck dead, while about fifty dragoons rode through the gate." The Count and his followers now galloped over the city in the morning twilight, shouting "I rance! liberty! the town is ours!" "The Prince is coming!" "Down with the tenth penny; down with the murderous Alva!" So soon as a burgher showed his wondering face at the window, they shot at him with their carbines. They made as much noise and conducted themselves as boldly as if they had been at least a thousand strong.

Meantime, however, the streets remained empty, not one of their secret confederates showing immself. Fifty men could surprise, but were too few to keep possession of the city. The Count began to suspect a trap. As daylight costion of the little band.

in the woods, where they had completely lost their way Ordering each horseman to take a foot soldier on the crupper behind him, he led them rapidly back to Mons On the way they were encountered by La Noue, "with the iron arm," and Genlis, who, meantime, had made an unsuccessful attack to recover Valenciennes, which within a few hours had been won and fost again. As they reached the gates of Mons, they found themselves within a hair's breadth of being too late, their adherents had not come forth, the cutzens had been won the state of the control of the control of the cutzens had been won the cutzens had b

1 Hoofd, vi. 237 Bor, vi. 377 Meteren, 71 Mendoza, v. 120,

If had been severely wounded in 1570 His amputated, but "de bons ouvriers lai firent un bras "potte depuis le nom."—Vir de De la Nove, 63.

was forced, and Louis with all his men rode triumphantly into the town.1

The citizens were forthwith assembled by sound of bell in the market-place. The clergy, the magistracy, and the general council were all present. Genlis made the first speech, in which he disclaimed all intention of making conquests in the interests of France. This pledge having been given, Louis of Nassau next addressed the assembly; "The magistrates," said he, "have not understood my intentions. I protest that I am no rebel to the King; I prove it by asking no new oaths from any man. Remain bound by your old oaths of allegiance; let the magistrates continue to exercise their functions-to administer justice. I imagine that no person will suspect a brother of the Prince of Orange capable of any design against the liberties of the country. As to the Catholic religion, I take it under my very particular protection. will ask why I am in Mons at the head of an armed force: are any of you ignorant of Alva's cruelties? The overthrow of this tyrant is as much the interest of the King as of the people, therefore there is nothing in my present conduct inconsistent with fidelity to his Majesty. Against Alva alone have I taken up arms; 'tis to protect you against his fury that I am here. It is to prevent the continuance of a general rebellion that I make war upon him. The only proposition which I have to make to you is this—I demand that you declare Alva de Toledo a traitor to the King, the executioner of the people, an enemy to the country, unworthy of the government, and hereby deprived of his authority." 2

The magistracy did not dare to accept so bold a proposition; the general council, composing the more popular branch of the municipal government, were comparatively inclined to favour Nassau, and many of its members voted for the downfall of the tyrant. Nevertheless the demands of Count Louis were rejected. His position thus became

¹ De Thou, vi. 499. Mendoza, v. 121. Dewez, Hist. Gén. de la Belg., v. 413-416. Bor, Meteren, Hoofd.

² Paridaens. Mons sous les rapports historiques, statistiques, etc., 68-70 (Mons, 1819). The speech is reported from original documents in the archives of the city: "farde intitulée Pièces relatives à la Surprise de Mons; declarations des echevins, etc. etc."—Compare Bor, v. 377. Hoofd, vi. 238.

critical The civic authorities refused to pay for his troops, who were, moreover, too few in number to resist the inevit able siege. The patriotism of the citizens was not to be repressed, however, by the authority of the magistrates. many rich proprietors of the great cloth and silk manufactories, for which Mons was famous, raised and armed companies at their own expense, many volunteer troops were also speedily organized and drilled, and the fortifications were put in order No attempt was made to force the reformed religion upon the inhabitants, and even Catholics who were discovered in sccret correspondence with the enemy were treated with such extreme gentleness by Nassau as to bring upon him severe reproaches from many of his own party 1

A large collection of ecclesistical plate, jewelry, money, and other valuables, which had been sent to the city for safe keeping from the churches and convents of the provinces, was seized, and thus, with little bloodshed and no violence, was the important city secured for the insurgents 1 Three days afterwards, two thousand infantry, chiefly French, arrived in the place. In the early part of the following month Louis was still further strengthened by the arrival of thirteen hundred foot and twelve hundred horsemen, under command of Count Montgomery, the celebrated officer, whose spear at the tournament had proved fatal to Henry the Second Thus the Duke of Alva suddenly found himself exposed to a tempest of revolution One thunderbolt after another seemed descending around him in breathless succession Brill and Flushing had been already lost, Middelburg was so closely invested that its fall seemed imminent, and with it would go the whole island of Walcheren, the key to all the Nether lands In one morning he had heard of the revolt of Enk huizen and of the whole Waterland, two hours later came the news of the Valenciennes rebellion, and next day the astonishing capture of Mons One disaster followed hard upon another He could have sworn that the detested Louis of Nassau, who had dealt this last and most fatal stroke, was

l lari laens 76, 77
Bor vi 378 blooft vi 238.—Compare Bentivoglio, vi 100, et et et de lora, vi 120, 121, Grotius.
Bor, vi 378. Hooft, vi 238

Bor, vi 378.

^{*} Mendoza, v 120 , vi 122

at that moment in Paris, safely watched by government emissaries; and now he had, as it were, suddenly started out of the earth to deprive him of this important city, and to lay bare the whole frontier to the treacherous attacks of faithless France. He refused to believe the intelligence when it was first announced to him, and swore that he had certain information that Count Louis had been seen playing in the tenniscourt at Paris, within so short a period as to make his presence in Hainault at that moment impossible. Forced, at last, to admit the truth of the disastrous news, he dashed his hat upon the ground in a fury, uttering imprecations upon the Queen Dowager of France, to whose perfidious intrigues he ascribed the success of the enterprise, and pledging himself to send her Spanish thistles enough in return for the Florentine lilies which she had thus bestowed upon him.1

In the midst of the perplexities thus thickening around him, the Duke preserved his courage, if not his temper. Blinded, for a brief season, by the rapid attacks made upon him, he had been uncertain whither to direct his vengeance. This last blow in so vital a quarter determined him at once. He forthwith despatched Don Frederic to undertake the siege of Mons, and earnestly set about raising large reinforcements to his army. Don Frederic took possession, without much pposition, of the Bethlehem cloister in the immediate vicinity of the city, and with four thousand troops began the investment in due form.2

Alva had, for a long time, been most impatient to retire from the provinces. Even he was capable of human emotions. He was wearied with the unceasing execrations which assailed his ears. "The hatred which the people bear me," said he, in a letter to Philip, "because of the chastisement which it has been necessary for me to inflict, although with all the moderation in the world, makes all my efforts vain. A successor will meet more sympathy and prove more use-On the 10th June, the Duke of Medina Cœli, with a fleet of more than forty sail, arrived off Blankenburg, intend-

¹ Bor, vi. 378. Hoofd, vi. 238. Van Meteren, iv. 71.

² Bor, vi. 384. Meteren, iv. 71, 72. ³ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1107.

ing to enter the Scheld 1 Julian Romero, with two thousand Spanirds, was also on board the fleet Nothing of course, was known to the new comers of the altered condition of affairs in the Netherlands, nor of the unwelcome reception which they were like to meet in Flushing. A few of the lighter critic having been taken by the patriot cruisers the alarm was spread through all the fleet. Median Coeli, with a few transports was enabled to effect his escape to Sluys, whence he hastened to Brussels in a much less ceremonious manner than he had originally contemplated. Livelye Bis expan ships stood out to sea, described a large Lesbon fleet, by a singular coincidence, suddenly heaving in sight changed their course and the few ring larges lose belil to the contemplate.

fror Rar

had thus been swed, were transferred at a very critical

moment to Middelburg?

The great Lishon fleet followed in the wake of the Bis cavans, with much inferior success. Totally ignorant of the revolution which had occurred in the Isle of Walcheren, it obeyed the summons of the rebel fort to come to anchor, and, with the exception of three or four, the vessels were all taken. It was the richest booty which the insurgents had yet acquired by sea or land. The fleet was laden with spices, money, jewelry, and the richest merchandise. I we hundred thousand crowns of gold were taken and it was calculated that the plunder altogether would suffice to main tain the war for two years at least. One thousand Spanish soldiers, and a good amount of ammunition, were also captured. The unexpected condition of affairs made a nause natural and almost necessary, before the government could be decorously transferred Median Coel, with Spanish grandiloquence, wowed his willingness to serve as a soldier, under a general whom he so much venerated while Aha ordered that in all respects, the same outward marks of respect should be paid to his appointed successor as to him

442 Mendoza vi 1º7, 128

¹ Van Meteren 18 65. Hooft Vi 239 Vi 17 128
2 Meteren 18 65 66. Hooft, Vi 230 Vi lat
1 hil pp II ii. 1133 Archees etc., de la 11

self. Beneath all this external ceremony, however, much mutual malice was concealed.1

Meantime, the Duke, who was literally "without a single real," 2 was forced at last to smother his pride in the matter of the tenth penny. On the 24th June, he summoned the estates of Holland to assemble on the 15th of the ensuing month. In the missive issued for this purpose, he formally agreed to abolish the whole tax, on condition that the estatesgeneral of the Netherlands would furnish him with a yearly supply of two millions of florins. Almost at the same moment the King had dismissed the deputies of the estates from Madrid, with the public assurance that the tax was to be suspended, and a private intimation that it was not abolished in terms, only in order to save the dignity of the Duke.3

These healing measures came entirely too late. The estates of Holland met, indeed, on the appointed day of July, but they assembled not in obedience to Alva, but in consequence of a summons from William of Orange. They met, too, not at the Hague, but at Dort, to take formal measures for renouncing the authority of the Duke. The first congress of the Netherland commonwealth still professed loyalty to the Crown, but was determined to accept the policy of Orange without a question.

The Prince had again assembled an army in Germany, consisting of fifteen thousand foot and seven thousand horse, besides a number of Netherlanders, mostly Walloons, amounting to nearly three thousand more. Before taking the field, however, it was necessary that he should guarantee at least three months' pay to his troops. This he could no longer do, except by giving bonds endorsed by certain cities of Holland as his securities. He had accordingly addressed letters in his own name to all the principal cities, fervently adjuring

¹ Meteren, iv. 66. Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iii. 440, 442. Hoosd, vi. 240, vii. 257. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1177.

Mendoza, vi. 122.—"Hallando se sin un real como el Duque lo

estara en esta sazon."

^{3 &}quot;Garschelyk te quijten aboleren on aftestallen," etc. - Bor, vi. 384, 385, 386. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1135. Bor, vi. 386.

⁶ Bor. - Compare Hoofd, vii. 259; Meteren, iv. 71; Bentivoglio, v. 104.

⁷ Jbid., vi. 386. Hoofd, vii. 259.

them to remember, at last, what was due to him, to the father land, and to their own character. "Let not a sum of gold," said he, in one of these letters, "be so dear to you, that for its sake you will sacrifice your lives, your wives, your children, and all your descendants, to the latest generations, that you will bring sin and shame upon yourselves, and des truction upon us who have so heartly striven to assist you Think what scorn you will incur from foreign nations, what a erime you will commit against the Lord God, what a bloody joke ye will impose for ever upon yourselves and your children, if you now seek for subterfuges, if you now prevent us from taking the field with the troops which we have on listed. On the other hand, what inexpressible benefits you will confer on your country, if you now help us to rescue that fatherland from the power of Spanish vultures and wolves."

This and similar missives, circulated throughout the province of Holland, produced a deep impression. In accord ance with his suggestions, the deputies from the noblity and from twelve cities of that province assembled on the 15th July, at Dort. Strictly speaking, the estates or government of Holland, the body which represented the whole people, consisted of the nobles and six great cities. On this occasion, however, Amsterdam being still in the power of the King, could send no deputies, while, on the other hand, all the small towns were invited to send up their representatives to the congress. Light accepted the proposal, the great declined to appoint delegates, partly from motives of economy, pruth from timulity.

These estates were the legislatine representatives of the people, but they hid no legislatine powers. The people hid never pretended to sovereight, nor did they claim it now. The source from which the government of the Nether lands was supposed to proceed was still the divine mandate. Even now the estates stiently conceded, as they had ever

Hollandsche

ind Bijlagen,

^{377 3 0.} Klust, Hol Staatsreg , L 10-17

done, the supreme legislative and executive functions to the land's master.1 Upon Philip of Spain, as representative of Count Dirk the First of Holland, had descended, through many tortuous channels, the divine effluence originally supplied by Charles the Simple of France. That supernatural power was not contested, but it was now ingeniously turned against the sovereign. The King's authority was invoked against himself in the person of the Prince of Orange, to whom, thirteen years before, a portion of that divine right had been delegated. The estates of Holland met at Dort on the 15th July, as representatives of the people, but they were summoned by Orange, royally commissioned in 1559 as stadholder, and therefore the supreme legislative and executive officer of certain provinces. This was the theory of the provisional government.2 The Prince represented the royal authority, the nobles represented both themselves and the people of the open country, while the twelve cities represented the whole body of burghers. Together, they were supposed to embody all authority, both divine and human, which a congress could exercise. Thus the whole movement was directed against Alva and against Count Bossu, appointed stadholder by Alva in the place of Orange.3 Philip's name was destined to figure for a long time at the head of documents by which moneys were raised, troops evied, and taxes collected, all to be used in deadly war vinst himself.

The estates were convened on the 15th July, when Paul Buys, pensionary of Leyden, the tried and confidential friend of Orange was elected Advocate of Holland.4 The convention was then adjourned till the 18th, when Sainte Aldegonde made his appearance, with full powers to act provisionally in behalf of his Highness.5

The distinguished plenipotentiary delivered before the congress a long and very effective harangue. He recalled the sacrifices and efforts of the Prince during previous years.

¹ Kluit, Hol. Staatsreg., i. 50, 52. ² Bor, vi. 388. Kluit, Hist. Hol. Staatsreg., i. 48, ct seq., and 374, et seq.

Bor. Kluit, ubi sup. Wagenaer, vi. 377-380.

Resol. Holl. 14th Sept., 1574, b. 93. Wagenaer, vi. 376.

⁵ Bor, vi. 386, 387.

.. 1 0

F T a

because not a city had opened its gates, nor a Netherlander lifted his finger in the cause. Nevertheless, he had not lost courage nor closed his heart, and now that, through the blessing of God, the eyes of men had been opened, and so many cities had declared against the tyrant, the Prince had found himself exposed to a butter stringgle. Although his own fortunes had been ruined in the cause, he had been unable to resist the daily flood of petitions which called upon him to come forward once more. He had again importuned his relations and powerful friends, he had at last set on foot a new and well appointed army. The day of payment had arrived. Over his own head impended per petual shame, over the fatherland perpetual woe, if the congress should now refuse the necessity supplies. "Arouse ye, then," cried the orator, with ferour, "awaken your own zeal and that of your sister cities. Seize Opportunity by the locks, who never appeared fairer thin she does to-day."

The impassioned eloquence of Sainte Aldegonde produced a profound impression. The men who had obstinately re fused the demands of Alva, now unanimously resolved to pour forth their gold and their blood at the call of Orange "Truly," wrote the Duke, a little later, "it almost drives me and to see the difficulty with which your Majesty's supplies are furnished, and the liberality with which the people place their lives and fortunes at the disposal of this rebelt." It seemed strange to the loyal Governor that men should support their liberator with greater alverny than that with which they served their destroyer! It was resolved that the requisite amount should be at once raised, partly from the regular imposts and current "Requests," partly by loins from the rich, from the elegy, from the guilds and brotherhoods, partly from superfluous church ormanicals and other

¹ Bor, 13 386 388, and Hoofd, 11 248, 249, report the speech in fall for. Our verbald-amente me have perder el juicio ver la dificultad con que à 1 M. error an en sueguda, 3 la liberalida acuden 1 robel le con sus vidas 3 hattendas.—C. 1976

costly luxuries. It was directed that subscriptions should be immediately opened throughout the land, that gold and silver plate, furniture, jewelry, and other expensive articles should be received by voluntary contributions, for which inventories and receipts should be given by the magistrates of each city, and that upon these money should be raised, either by loan or sale. An enthusiastic and liberal spirit prevailed. All seemed determined rather than pay the tenth to Alva to pay the whole to the Prince.

The estates, furthermore, by unanimous resolution, declared that they recognized the Prince as the King's lawful stadholder over Holland, Zeland, Friesland, and Utrecht, and that they would use their influence with the other provinces to procure his appointment as Protector of all the Netherlands during the King's absence.3 His highness was requested to appoint an Admiral, on whom, with certain deputies from the Water-cities, the conduct of the maritime war should devolve. The conduct of the military operations by land was to be directed by Dort, Leyden, and Enkhuizen, in conjunction with the Count de la Marck. A pledge was likewise exchanged between the estates and the plenipotentiary, that neither party should enter into any treaty with the King, except by full consent and co-operation of the other. Vith regard to religion, it was firmly established that the public exercises of divine worship should be permitted not only to the Reformed Church, but to the Roman Catholicthe clergy of both being protected from all molestation.4

After these proceedings, Count de la Marck made his appearance before the assembly. His commission from Orange was read to the deputies, and by them ratified. The Prince, in that document authorized his "dear cousin" to enlist troops, to accept the fealty of cities, to furnish them with garrisons, to re-establish all the local laws, municipal rights, and ancient privileges which had been suppressed. He was to maintain freedom of religion, under penalty of death to those who infringed it; he was to restore all confiscated

¹ Bor, vi. 388. Hoofd, vii. 349, 350. Wagenaer, vi. 378-380.

² "Tanto flagrabant odio dominatus," says Grotius (Ann., ii. 58),

"omnia dabant ne decimam darent."

³ Bor, vi. 388, et seq. Hoofd, vii. 250. Kluit, i. 50, et seq. ⁴ Bor, vi. 388.

⁵ Ibid., 389. Hoofd, vii. 250, 251.

property, he was, with advice of his council, to continue in office such city magistrates as were favourable, and to remove those adverse to the cause !

The Prince was, in reality, clothed with dictatorial and even regal powers. This authority had been forced upon him by the prayers of the people, but he manifested no eagerness as he partly accepted the onerous station was provisionally the depositary of the whole sovereignty of the northern provinces, but he cared much less for theories of government than for ways and means. It was his object to release the country from the tyrant who, five years long, had been burning and butchering the people. It was his determination to drive out the foreign soldiery To do this, he must meet his enemy in the field. So little was he disposed to strengthen his own individual power, that he voluntarily imposed limits on himself, by an act, supple mental to the proceedings of the Congress of Dort In this important ordinance made by the Prince of Orange, as a provisional form of government,2 he publicly announced "that he would do and ordain nothing except by the advice of the estates, by reason that they were best acquainted with the circumstances and the humours of the inhabitants" He directed the estates to appoint receivers for all public taxes. and ordained that all military officers should make oath of fidelity to him, as stadholder, and to the estates of Holland. to be true and obedient, in order to liberate the land from the tile are and Son of terronne fruits comess of leave at

certainly as disinterested as it was sagacious.

Meanwhile the war had opened vigorously in Hainault Louis of Nassau had no sooner found himself in possession of Mons than he had despatched Genlis to France, for those reinforcements which had been promised by royal lips 2 On the other hand. Don I redenc held the city closely belea

¹ See the Commission in Bor, vi 389 391.
2 "Ordonnantie ende Instructie van den Prince van Orange voor die van Hollandt om by provisie 't I. werden "-Grant Factaget Book, D in Hol Stanisteg , 1. 69, et seg

Bor, v. 397. Hoofl, v. 257

already put his army in motion. On the 7th of July he had crossed the Rhine at Duisburg, with fourteen thousand foot, seven thousand horse, enlisted in Germany, besides a force of three thousand Walloons. On the 23rd of July, he took the city of Roermond, after a sharp cannonade, at which place his troops already began to disgrace the honourable cause in which they were engaged, by imitating the cruelties and barbarities of their antagonists. The persons and property of the burghers were, with a very few exceptions, respected; but many priests and monks were put to death by the soldiery under circumstances of great barbarity.2 The Prince, incensed at such conduct, but being unable to exercise very stringent authority over troops whose wages he was not yet able to pay in full, issued a proclamation, denouncing such excesses, and commanding his followers, upon pain of death, to respect the rights of all individuals, whether Papist or Protestant, and to protect religious exercises both in Catholic and Reformed Churches.3

It was hardly to be expected that the troops enlisted by the Prince in the same great magazine of hireling soldiers, Germany, from whence the Duke also derived his annual supplies, would be likely to differ very much in their propensities from those enrolled under Spanish banners; yet there was a vast contrast between the characters of the two commanders. One leader inculcated the practice of robbery, rape, and murder, as a duty, and issued distinct orders to butcher "every mother's son" in the cities which he captured; the other restrained every excess to the utmost of his ability, protecting not only life and property, but even the ancient religion.

The Emperor Maximilian had again issued his injunctions against the military operations of Orange. Bound to the monarch of Spain by so many family ties, being at once cousin, brother-in-law, and father-in-law of Philip, it was difficult for him to maintain the attitude which became him, as chief of that Empire to which the peace of Passau had assured religious freedom. It had, however, been sufficiently proved that remonstrances and intercessions addressed to Philip were but idle breath. It had, therefore,

¹ Bor, vi. 398. ² Bor, vi. 399. Hoofd, vii. 259, 260. ³ *Ibid.*, vi. 399, 400. *Ibid.*, vii. 259, 260.

become an insult to require pacific conduct from the Prince on the ground of any past or future mediation. It was a still grosser mockery to call upon him to discontinue hos tilities because the Netherlands were included in the Empire, and therefore protected by the treaties of Passau and Augs burg Well did the Prince reply to his Imperial Maiesty's summons in a temperate but cogent letter, which he ad dressed to him from his camp, that all intercessions had proved fruitless, and that the only help for the Netherlands was the sword

The Prince had been delayed for a month at Roermond, because, as he expressed it, "he had not a single sou,"2 and because, in consequence, the troops refused to advance into the Netherlands Having at last been furnished with the requisite guarantees from the Holland eities for three months' pay, on the 27th of August, the day of the publica tion of his letter to the Emperor, he crossed the Meuse and took his circuitous way through Diest, Tirlemont, Sichem, Louvain, Mechlin, Termonde, Oudenarde, Nivelles Many cities and villages accepted his authority and admitted his garrisons Of these Mechlin was the most considerable, in which he stationed a detachment of his troops. Its doon was scaled in that moment. Also could not forgive this act of patriotism on the part of a town which had so re cently excluded his own troops "This is a direct permission of God," he wrote, in the spirit of dire and revengeful prophecy, "for us to punish her as she deserves, for the imagebreaking and other misdeeds done there in the time of Madame de Parma, which our Lord was not willing to pass over without chastisement " 4

Meantime the Prince continued his advance. Louvain purchased its neutrality for the time with sixteen thousand ducats, Brussels obstinately refused to listen to him, and was too powerful to be forcibly attacked at that juncture, other important cities, convinced by the arguments and

¹ See it in Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit , iii, 63.

Groen v Trinst, Archives, etc., in. 400.

Roy, vi. 400 402 Hoold, vii. 260, et say
Correspon lance de I hihppe II., ii. 1156 Hoof l. vn 260.

won by the eloquence of the various proclamations which he scattered as he advanced, ranged themselves spontaneously and even enthusiastically upon his side. How different would have been the result of his campaign but for the unexpected earthquake which at that instant was to appal Christendom, and to scatter all his well-matured plans and legitimate hopes. His chief reliance, under Providence and his own strong heart, had been upon French assistance. Although Genlis, by his misconduct, had sacrificed his army and himself, yet the Prince was still justly sanguine as to the policy of the French court. The papers which had been found in the possession of Genlis by his conquerors all spoke one language. would be struck with stupor," wrote Alva's secretary, "could you see a letter which is now in my power, addressed by the King of France to Louis of Nassau." In that letter the King had declared his determination to employ all the forces which God had placed in his hands to rescue Netherlands from the oppression under which they were groaning. In accordance with the whole spirit and language of the French government, was the tone of Coligny in his correspondence with Orange. The Admiral assured the Prince that there was no doubt as to the earnestness of the royal intentions in behalf of the Netherlands, and, recommending extreme caution, announced his hope within a few days to effect a junction with him at the head of twelve thousand French arquebusiers, and at least three thousand cavalry.2 Well might the Prince of Orange, strong, and soon to be strengthened, boast that the Netherlands were free, and that Alva was in his power.3 He had a right to be sanguine, for nothing less than a miracle could now destroy his generous hopes—and, alas! the miracle took place—a miracle of perfidy and bloodshed such as the world, familiar as it had ever been and was still to be with massacre, had not yet witnessed. On the 11th of August, Coligny had written thus hopefully of his movements towards the Netherlands, sanctioned and aided by his King. A fortnight from that day occurred the "Paris wedding;" and the Admiral, with thousands of his religious confederates, invited to confidence by superhuman treachery,

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1146.

and lulled into security by the music of august marriage-hells. was suddenly butchered in the streets of Paris by royal and noble hands

The Prince proceeded on his march, during which the heavy news had been brought to him, but he felt convinced that, with the very arrival of the awful tidings, the fate of that campaign was scaled, and the fall of Mons mevitable. In his own language, he had been struck to the earth "with the blow of a sledge hammer, '-nor did the enemy draw a different augury from the great event

The crime was not committed with the connivance of the Spanish government On the contrary, the two courts were at the moment bitterly hostile to each other. In the begin ning of the summer, Charles IX and his advisers were as false to Philip, as at the end of it they were treacherous to

Coligns and Orange even the ment of be

1572]

executed scheme

before, Catharine de Medici had rejected the advances of Alva towards the arrangement of a general plan for the ex-

he expressed the opinion that to take arms against his own subjects was wholly out of the question, and could only be followed by general rum "Tis easy to see that he has been tutored," 2 wrote Alsa to his master Unfortunately, the same mother, who had then installed those lessons of hypocritical benevolence, had now wrought upon her son's cowardly but ferocious nature with a far different intent. The incomplete assassination of Coligny, the dread of signal vengeance at the hands of the Huguenots, the necessity of taking the lead in the internecine struggle, were employed with Medicean art. and with entire success.

Starting to his feet, with a

to the scheme," he cried,

left alive in France to reproach me with the deed "?

That night the slaughter commenced. The long-premeditated crime was executed in a panic, but the work was thoroughly done. The King, who a few days before had written with his own hand to Louis of Nassau, expressing his firm determination to sustain the Protestant cause both in France and the Netherlands, who had employed the counsels of Coligny in the arrangement of his plans, and who had sent French troops, under Genlis and La Noue, to assist their Calvinist brethren in Flanders, now gave the signal for the general massacre of the Protestants, and with his own hands from his own palace windows, shot his subjects with his arquebus as if they had been wild beasts.

Between Sunday and Tuesday, according to one of the most moderate calculations, five thousand Parisians of all ranks were murdered. Within the whole kingdom, the number of victims was variously estimated at from twenty-five thousand to one hundred thousand. The heart of Protestant Europe, for an instant, stood still with horror. The Queen of England put on mourning weeds, and spurned the apologies of the French envoy with contempt. At Rome, on the contrary, the news of the massacre created a joy beyond description. The Pope accompanied by his cardinals, went solemnly to the church of Saint Mark to render thanks to God for the grace thus singularly vouch-safed to the Holy See and to all Christendom; and a Te Deum was performed in presence of the same august assemblage.

But nothing could exceed the satisfaction which the event occasioned in the mind of Philip the Second. There was an end now of all assistance from the French government to the Netherland Protestants. "The news of the events upon Saint Bartholomew's-day," wrote the French envoy at Madrid, Saint Goard, to Charles IX., "arrived on the 7th September. The King, on receiving the intelligence, showed, contrary to his natural custom, so much gaiety, that he seemed more delighted than with all the good fortune or happy incidents which had ever before occurred to him. He called all his

¹ Von Raumer, ii. 260.—Compare De Thou, t, vi. l. ii. 430; Bor, vi. 402, 403; Meteren, iv. 74.

² Von Raumer, ii. 262.

³ Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., Supplement, 125.

familiars about him in order to assure them that your Majesty was his good brother, and that no one else deserved the title of Most Christian He sent his secretary Cay's to me with his felicitations upon the event, and with the information that he was just going to Saint Jerome to render thanks to God, and to offer his prayers that your Majesty might receive Divine support in this great affair I went to see him next morning, and as soon as I came into his presence he began to laugh, and with demonstrations of extreme contentment, to praise your Majesty as deserving your title of Most Christian, telling me there was no King worthy to be your Majesty's companion, either for talour or prudence. He praised the steadfast resolution and the long dissimulation of so great an enterprise, which all the world would not be able "I thanked him," continued the to comprehend ambassador, "and I said that I thanked God for enabling four hfyesty to prote to his master that his apprentic had learned his trade, and deserved his title of Most Christian king I added, that he ought to confess that he oved the preservation of the Netherlands to your Majesty "1

Nothing certainly could, in Philip's apprehension, be more delightful than his most unexpected and most opportune in despitus than his most unexpected and most opportune in telligence. Charles IX, whose intrigues in the Netherlands he had long known, had now been suddenly converted by this stupendous crime into his most powerful ally, while at the same time the Protestants of Lurope would learn that there was still another crowned head in Christendom more desurving of abhorrence than himself. He wrote immediately to Alva, expressing his satisfaction that the King of I rance

been urging him to command the immediate execution of Genlis and his companions, who had been made prisoners, as well as all the frenchmen who would be captured in Mons, and that he fully concurred in the propriety of the

¹ De Thou, t vi. 1 lin. 442
² The letter is published by M Gachard. "Particularities medites sur la Saint Barthelemy "—En letins de l'Aced Roy de Ielg, xvi

measure. "The sooner," said Philip, "these noxious plants are extirpated from the earth, the less fear there is that a fresh crop will spring up." The monarch therefore added, with his own hand, to the letter, "I desire that if you have not already disembarrassed the world of them, you will do it immediately, and inform me thereof, for I see no reason why it should be deferred." This is the demoniacal picture painted by the French ambassador, and by Philip's own hand, of the Spanish monarch's joy that his "Most Christian" brother had just murdered twenty-five thousand of his own subjects. In this cold-blooded way, too, did his Catholic Majesty order the execution of some thousand Huguenots additionally, in order more fully to carry out his royal brother's plans; yet Philip could write of himself, "that all the world recognized the gentleness of his nature and the mildness of his intentions."

In truth, the advice thus given by Saint Goard on the subject of the French prisoners in Alva's possessions, was a natural result of the Saint Bartholomew. Here were officers and soldiers whom Charles IX. had himself sent into the Netherlands to fight for the Protestant cause against Philip and Alva. Already, the papers found upon them had plivaced him in some embarrassment, and exposed his duplicity to the Spanish government, before the great massacre had made such signal reparation for his delinquency. He had ordered Mondoucet, his envoy in the Netherlands, to use dissimulation to an unstinted amount, to continue his intrigues with the Protestants, and to deny stoutly all proofs of such connivance. "I see that the papers found upon Genlis," he wrote 3 twelve days before the massacre, "have been put into the hands of Assonleville, and that they know everything done by Genlis to have been committed with my consent.

[&]quot;Y assi holgare que si ya no les ubiere deshechado del mundo lo hagais luego, y me aviseis dello, pues que no veo que aya causa ni la pueda aber por que esto se dexe de hazer."—Letter of Philip, 18th September, 1572, ubi sup.

Letter to the Emperor. Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., Suppl. 46.

These remarkable letters exchanged between Charles IX. and Mondoucet have recently been published by M. Emile Gachet (chef du bureau paléographique aux Archives de Belgique) from a manuscript discovered by him in the library at Rheims.—Compte Rendu de la Com. Roy. d'Hist., iv. 340, sqq.

Nevertheless, you will tell the Duke of Alva that these are lies invented to exette suspinen against me. You will also give him occasional information of the enemy saffairs, in order to make him believe in your integrity. Even if he does not believe you, my purpose will be answered, provided you do it dexterously. At the same time you must keep up a constant communication with the Prince of Orange, taking great care to present discourse of you intelligence with him?

Were not these master strokes of diplomacy worthy of a King whom his mother, from boyhood upwards had caused to study Macchiavellis 'Prince,' and who had thoroughly taken to heart the maxim, often repeated in those days, that the 'Seience of reigning was the science of

lying?'

The joy in the Spanish camp before Mons was unbounded. It was as if the only bulwark between the Netherland rebels and total destruction had been suddenly withdrawn. With anthems in Saint Gudule, with bonfires festive illuminations, roating artillery, with trumpets also, and with shawms, was the glorious holiday celebrated in court and camp in honour of the vast murder committed by the Most Christian King upon his Christian subjects, nor was a moment lost in apprising the Huguenot soldiers shut up with Louis of Nassau in the beleaguered eity of the great catastrophe which was to render all their valour fruitless. "Thas a punshment," vaid a Spanish soldier, who fought most courageously before. Mons and who elaborately described the siege afterwards, "we'll worthy of a king whose tith is: "The Yost Christian" and it was still more honourable to inflied it with his own hands as he did. "Nor was the observation a pithy sareasm, but a frink expression of opinion, from a man celebrated alike for the skill with which he handled both his sword and his pen.

^{1 &}quot;Lucores qu'il ne y adjouste foy, toutes foit cela servira à mon intention pourvei que le facez destrement."—Compte Kendu de la Com Roi al III, 11, 240 349

^{**} That ... 33 *** Qui nescit dissimilate nescit regnare. **
** Litter of Mondouget utring. Stra la, sur 366 -- "In Ili panorum
castris subj 1 mina tenetaria singentia lettuta signa hotise ederer schoporure
crylosione ter repetia. Teto tympanorum tubaromique
circum vallo festis ginibus collucente." etc., etc.

^{*} Mendoza, vii. 146.

The French envoy in the Netherlands was, of course, immediately informed by his sovereign of the great event. Charles IX. gave a very pithy account of the transaction. "To prevent the success of the enterprise planned by the Admiral," wrote the King, on the 26th of August, with hands yet reeking, and while the havoc throughout France was at its height, "I have been obliged to permit the said Guises to rush upon the said Admiral, which they have done, the said Admiral having been killed and all his adherents. A very great number of those belonging to the new religion have also been massacred and cut to pieces. It is probable that the fire thus kindled will spread through all the cities of my kingdom, and that all those of the said religion will be made sure of."2 Not often, certainly, in history, has a Christian king spoken thus calmly of butchering his subjects while the work was proceeding all around him. It is to be observed, moreover, that the usual excuse for such enormities, religious fanaticism, cannot be even suggested on this occasion. Catharine, in times past, had favoured Huguenots as much as Catholics, while Charles had been, up to the very moment of the crime, in strict alliance with the heretics of both France and Flanders, and furthering the schemes of Orange and Nassau. Nay, even at this very moment, and in this very letter in which he gave the news of the massacre, he charged his envoy still to maintain the closest but most secret intelligence with the Prince of Orange; taking great care that the Duke of Alva should not discover these relations. His motives were, of course, to prevent the Prince from abandoning his designs, and from coming to make a disturbance in France. The King, now that the deed was done, was most "Now, M. de anxious to reap all the fruits of his crime. Mondoucet, it is necessary in such affairs," he continued, "to have an eye to every possible contingency. I know that this news will be most agreeable to the Duke of Alva, for it is most favourable to his designs. At the same time, I don't desire that he alone should gather the fruit. I don't choose that he should, according to his excellent custom, conduct his

^{1 &}quot;J'ay été constraint permettre et doner moyen ausdits de Guisc de courir sus audit Amiral," etc.—Correspondance de Mondoucet, etc., ubi sup.

2 Correspondance de Mondoucet.

affairs in such wise as to throw the Prince of Orange upon my hands, besides sending back to France Genlis and the other prisoners, as well as the French now shut up in Mons "

This was a sufficiently plain hint, which Mondoucet could not well misunderstand "Observe the Duke's countenance carefully when you give him this message," added the King, "and let me know his reply" In order, however, that there might be no mistake about the matter. Charles wrote again to his ambassador, five days afterwards, distinctly stating the regret which he should feel if Alva should not take the city of Mons, or if he should take it by composition "Tell the Duke," said he, "that it is most important for the service of his master and of God that those I renehmen and others in Mons should be cut in pieces'. He wrote another letter upon the same day, such was his anxiety upon the subject, chastising the entoy to urge upon Alia the necessity of chastising those rebels to the French crown "If he tells you,' continued Charles, "that this is tacitly requiring him to put to death all the French prisoners now in hand as well as to cut in pieces every man in Mons, you will say to him that this is exactly what he ought to do, and that he will be guilty of a great wrong to Christianity if he does otherwise.' S Certinily, the Duke, having been thus distinctly ordered, both by his own master and by his Christian Majesty, to put toom up mis own misser and up his Christian Mijesty, to put every one of these Frenchmen to death, had a sufficincy of royal warrant. Nevertheless, he was not able to execute entirely these ferocious instructions. The prisoners already in his power were not destined to escape, but the city of Mons, in his own language, "proved to have sharper teeth than he supposed "

Mondoucet lost no time in placing before Alva the urgent nondouct ios no time in prients octore Aira the urgent necessity of accomplishing the extensive and cold blooded missacre thus proposed. "The Duke has replied," wrote the envoy to his socreters, "that he is executing his prisoners every day, and that he has but a few left. Nevertheless, for some reason which he does not mention, he is reserving the principal noblemen and chiefs." He afterwards informed

² Ibid 3 141 1 Correspondance de Mondoucet

Mondoucet to Charles I., 15th September, 1572

¹ Ibid , 5th September, 1572

his master that Genlis, Jumelles, and the other leaders, had engaged, if Alva would grant them a reasonable ransom, to induce the French in Mons to leave the city, but that the Duke, although his language was growing less confident, still hoped to take the town by assault. "I have urged him," he added, "to put them all to death, assuring him that he would be responsible for the consequences of a contrary course." "Why does not your Most Christian master," asked Alva, "order these Frenchmen in Mons to come to him under oath to make no disturbance? Then my prisoners will be at my discretion and I shall get my city." "Because," answered the envoy, "they will not trust his Most Christian Majesty, and will prefer to die in Mons."1

This certainly was a most sensible reply, but it is instructive to witness the cynicism with which the envoy accepts this position for his master, while coldly recording the results of all these sanguinary conversations.

Such was the condition of affairs when the Prince of Orange arrived at Péronne, between Binche and the Duke of Alva's entrenchments.2 The besieging army was rich in notabilities of elevated rank. Don Frederic of Toledo had hitherto commanded, but on the 27th of August, the Dukes of Medina Cœli and of Alva had arrived in the camp.3 Directly afterwards came the warlike Archbishop of Cologne, at the head of two thousand cavalry.5 There was but one chance for the Prince of Orange, and experience had taught him, four years before, its slenderness. He might still provoke his adversary into a pitched battle, and he relied upon God for the result. In his own words, "he trusted ever that the great God of armies was with him, and would fight in the midst of his forces." 6 So long as Alva remained in his impregnable camp, it was impossible to attack him or to throw reinforcements into Mons. The Prince soon found, too, that Alva was far too wise to hazard his position by a superfluous combat. The Duke knew that the cavalry of the Prince was superior to his own. He expressed himself

Mondoucet to Charles IX., 15th September, 1572.
 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1158. Hoofd, vii. 262.

³ *Ibid.*, vii. 257. ⁵ Bor, vi. 402. 4 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1158.

Letter of John of Nassau. Archives, etc., iii. 461.
Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1158.

entirely unwilling to play into the Prince's hands, instead of winning the game which was no longer doubtful. The Huguenot soldiers within Mons were in despit in and mutiny; Louis of Nassau lay in his bed consuming with a dangerous fever; Genlis was a prisoner, and his army cut to picen; Coligny was murdered, and Protestant France partityed; the troops of Orange, enlisted but for three months, were already rebelhous, and sure to break into open mushbordination when the consequences of the Pairs massacre should become entirely clear to them, and there were, therefore, even more cogent reasons than in 1568, why Alsa should ramain perfectly still, and see his enemy's cau " founder before his eyes. The valant Archibshop of Cologne was most eager for the fray. He rode daily at the Duke's ride, with harness on his back and pistols in his hol-ters, armed and attired like one of his own troop is, and urging the Duke, with vehemence, to a pitched battle with the Prince. The Duke commended, but did not yield to, the pra lin's enthusiasm. "Tis a fine figure of a man, with his coralit and pistols," he wrote to Philip, "and he shows great affertion for your Majesty's service.""

The issue of the campaign was inevitable. On the 11th September, Don Frederic, with a force of four thomand picked min, established himself at Saire Homan, a villagener the Haire gate of the ont, while the Proce had encamped at Hermigny, which half a league of the acception, whence he attempted to introduce renforments not the town. On the right of the 11th and 12th, Don Frederic hazarded an excentifical upon the error's carp, with provide minerally successful, and had many rene red to the capture of the Frince himself. A chosen lead of a track an arquebusers, aimed, at was unforming in these seen call expeditions, with times them combet their services, and they judical Recommendation of the distinct, were led by Julian Recommendation for the of the section, The service cut down the vicinity may well and for a recomposition of the section of the section of the property and the first place that from the colors of the recommendation of the section of the

force they had been thus suddenly surprised, and unable in the confusion to distinguish between friend and foe.1 The boldest, led by Julian in person, made at once for the Prince's His guards and himself were in profound sleep, but a small spaniel, who always passed the night upon his bed, was a more faithful sentinel. The creature sprang forward, barking furiously at the sound of hostile footsteps, and scratching his master's face with his paws." There was but just time for the Prince to mount a horse which was ready saddled, and to effect his escape through the darkness, before his enemies sprang into the tent. His servants were cut down, his master of the horse and two of his secretaries, who gained their saddles a moment later, all lost their lives, and but for the little dog's watchfulness, William of Orange, upon whose shoulders the whole weight of his country's fortunes depended, would have been led within a week to an ignominious death. To his dying day, the Prince ever afterwards' kept a spaniel of the same race in his bed-chamber. The midnight slaughter still continued, but the Spaniards, in their fury, set fire to the tents. The glare of the conflagration showed the Orangists by how paltry a force they had been surprised. Before they could rally, however, Romero led off his arquebusiers, every one of whom had at least killed his man. Six hundred of the Prince's troops had been put to the sword, while many others were burned in their beds, or drowned in the little rivulet which flowed outside their camp. Only sixty Spaniards lost their lives.5

This disaster did not alter the plans of the Prince, cfor those plans had already been frustrated. The whole marrow of his enterprise had been destroyed in an instant by the massacre of Saint Bartholomew. He retreated to Péronne and Nivelles, an assassin, named Heist, a German by birth, but a French chevalier, following him secretly in his camp, pledged to take his life for a large reward promised by Alva

Mendoza, vii. 157. Strada, vii. 367, 368.
 Strada, vii. 368. Hoofd, vii. 263.
 Hoofd, vii. 263. In the statues of the Prince a little dog is frequently sculptured at his feet.

⁵ Bentivoglio, v. 106. Mendoza, vii. 157, et seq. Hoofd, vii. 263,

^{264.} Bor, vii. 408.

6 Letter of Mondoucet to Charles IX. Comm. Roy. de l'Hist., iv. 340.

-an enterprise not destined, however, to be successful. The soldiers flatly refused to remain an hour longer in the field, or even to furnish an escort for Count Louis, if, by chance, or even to furnish an escort for Count Louis, if, by chance, he could be brought out of the town. 'The Prince was obliged to inform his brother of the desperate state of his affairs, and to advise him to capitulate on the best terms' which he could make. With a heavy heart, he left the chivalrous Louis besieged in the city which he had so gal lantly captured, and took his way across the Meure towards the Rhine. A furnous mutiny broke out among his troops. His his was, with difficulty, saved from the brutal soldier, infuriated at his inhabity to pay them, except in the over-duc securities of the Holland cities—by the exertions of the officers who still regarded him with centration and affection? Crossing the Rhine at Orso, he disbanded his army and betook himself, almost alone, to Holland '

Yet even in this hour of distress and defeat, the Prince scemed more herote than many a conqueror in his day of triumph. He went to Holland, the only province which remained true, and which still looked up to him as its satiour, but he went thither expecting and prepared to pensh "Thre I will make my sputcher," was his simple and sub-lime expression in a private letter to his brother. He had advanced to the rescue of Louis, with eity after

He had advanced to the rescue of Louis, with city after city opening its arms to receive him. He had expected to be joined on the march by Coligny, at the head of a chosen army, and he was now obliged to leave his brother to his fate, having the massacre of the admiral and his confiderates substituted for their expected army of assistance, and with every city and every prowince forsaking his cause, as eagerly as they had so hitely embraced it. "It has pleased God,' he said, "to take away every hope which we could have founded upon man, the King has published that the mas sacre was by his orders, and has forbidden all his subjects, upon pain of death, to assist me, he has, moreover, sent

Letter of Prince of Orange to John of Nassau. Archives de la Maison d'Orange etc., in. 501 507, and the expher explained in Liv.c. in a Hoofd vin. 264 e. Meteren, iv. 75.

Hor, vin. 468. Meteren, iv. 75.

1 Hoofd, vin. 264.

Bor, vii. 408. Meteren, iv 75. Hoofd, vii 264. "Ayant delibere de faire illeeq ma sepultre "-Letter to his brother 7 in of Aarrau Groen & Priest , Archives, etc.,

ii. 1162.

succour to Alva. Had it not been for this, we had been masters of the Duke, and should have made him capitulate at our pleasure." 1 Yet even then he was not cast down.

Nor was his political sagacity liable to impeachment by the extent to which he had been thus deceived by the French "So far from being reprehensible that I did not suspect such a crime," he said, "I should rather be chargeable with malignity had I been capable of so sinister a suspicion. 'Tis not an ordinary thing to conceal such enormous deliberations under the plausible cover of a marriage fes-

Meanwhile, Count Louis lay confined to his couch with a burning fever. His soldiers refused any longer to hold the city, now that the altered intentions of Charles IX. were known and the forces of Orange withdrawn. Alva offered the most honourable conditions, and it was therefore impossible for the Count to make longer resistance. was so important, and time was at that moment so valuable, that the Duke was willing to forego his vengeance upon the rebel whom he so cordially detested, and to be satisfied with depriving him of the prize which he had seized with such audacity. "It would have afforded me sincere pleasure," wrote the Duke, "over and above the benefit to God and your Majesty, to have had the Count of Nassau in my power. I would overleap every obstacle to seize him, such is the particular hatred which I bear the man." Under the circumstances, however, he acknowledged that the result of the council of war could only be to grant liberal terms.

On the 19th September, accordingly, articles of capitulation were signed between the distinguished De la Noue with three others on the one part, and the Seigneur de Noircarmes and three others on the side of Spain. The town was given over to Alva, but all the soldiers were to go out with their weapons and property. Those of the townspeople who had borne arms against his Majesty, and all who still held to the Reformed religion, were to retire with the soldiery. The troops were to pledge themselves not to serve in future

¹ Archives de la Maison d'Orange, etc., iii. 501-507.
² Ibid. Vie De la Noue, 75.
⁴ Letter of Alva to Philippe II. Correspondance de Philippe II.,

against the Kings of Frince or Spain, but from this provision Louis, with his English and German soldiers, was expressly excepted, the C 'the Gran soldiers, was expressly the idea of such a pledge, or c for an instant. It was also at

a piedge, or c. for in instant.
It was also at, an unmished, and hostages exchanged, for the due observance of the terms of the trait. The preliminaries having been thus settled, the patriot forces abandoned the town.

Count Louis, rising from his sick bed, paid his respects in person to the victorious generals, at thur request. He was received in Alva's camp with an extraordinary show of admiration and exteem. The Duke of Medina Coch over whelmed him with courtesies and "biolomanas, while Don Frederic assured him, in the high flown language of Spanish compliment, that there was nothing which he would not do to serve him, and that he would take a greater pleasure in executing his shiphtest wish than if he had been his next of kin."

As the Count next day, still suffering with fever, and attired in his long dressing gown, was taking his departure from the ett, he ordered his carringe to stop at the entrance to Don I rederics quarters. That general, who had been standing incognito near the door, gazing with honest ad mirrition at the hero of so many a hard fought field, with drew as he approached, that he might not give the invalid the trouble of alighting. I ours, however, recognizing him, additions the freedomers, and paused at the gate. Don I redenic, from politiness to his condition, did not present

¹ Bor, vii 408 409. Hoofi, vii 265. Meteren, iv 76. Men loza, vii 158 159 160.

himself, but sent an aide-de-camp to express his compliments and good wishes. Having exchanged these courtesies, Louis left the city, conveyed, as had been agreed upon, by a guard of Spanish troops. There was a deep meaning in the respect with which the Spanish generals had treated the rebel chieftain. Although the massacre of Saint Bartholomew met with Alva's entire approbation, yet it was his cue to affect a holy horror at the event, and he avowed that he would "rather cut off both his hands than be guilty of such a deed " to as if those hangman's hands had the right to protest against any murder, however wholesale. Count Louis suspected at once, and soon afterwards thoroughly understood, the real motives of the chivalrous treatment which he had received.2 He well knew that these very men would have sent him to the scaffold, had he fallen into their power, and he therefore estimated their courtesy at its proper value.

It was distinctly stated, in the capitulation of the city, that all the soldiers, as well as such of the inhabitants as had borne arms, should be allowed to leave the city, with all their property. The rest of the people, it was agreed, might remain without molestation to their persons or estates.³ It has been the general opinion of historians that the articles of this convention were maintained by the conquerors in good faith.⁴ Never was a more signal error. The capitulation was made late at night, on the 20th September, without the provision which Charles IX. had hoped for: the massacre, namely, of De la Noue, and his companions. As for Genlis and those who had been taken prisoners at his defeat, their doom had already been sealed. The city was evacuated on the 21st September. Alva entered it upon the 24th. Most of the volunteers departed with the garrison, but many who

¹ Letter of Louis of Nassau to Charles IX. (1st June, 1573). Groen v. Prinst., Archives de la Maison, etc., iv. 86*, et seq. The letter is taken from the Archives of Simancas.

^{2 &}quot;El que cà esté la seulle cause de la courtoisie et fidelité dont le Duc d'Albe a ussé envers le Conte à la prinse de la ville de Monts; comme il a depuis dict à plusieurs que c'estoit pour monstrer qu'il ne vouldroit point avoir faict ung si méchant acte qu'avoit faict le Roy de France," etc., etc.—Ibid.

³ Mendoza, vii. 157vo, 158vo. Bor, vii. 408, 409.

Bor, Le Petit, Guicciardini, et al.

had, most unfortunately, prolonged their farenells to their families, trusting to the word of the Spanish Captain Molinos, were thrown into prison. Noncarmes, the butcher of Valenciennes, now made his appearance in Mons As grand bathff of Hamault, he came to the place as one in authority, and his deeds were now to complete the infamy which must for ever surround his name. In brutal violation of the terms upon which the town had surrendered, he now set about the work of massacre and pillage A Commission of Froubles, in close imitation of the famous Blood Council at Brussels, was established,2 the members of the tribunal being appointed by Noircarmes, and all being inhabitants of the town council commenced proceedings by condemning all the volunteers, although expressly included in the capitulation Their wives and children were all banished, their property all confiscated On the 15th of December, the executions commenced The intrepid De Leste, silk manufacturer, who had commanded a band of volunteers, and sustained during the siege the assaults of Alva's troops with remarkable courage at a sery entical moment, was one of the earliest victims " In consideration "that he was a gentleman, and not among the most milicious,"4 he was executed by sword "In respect that he heard the mass, and made a sweet and Catholic end it was allowed that he should be "buned in consecrated carth 14 Many others followed in quick succession were beheaded, some were hanged, some were burned alive All who had borne arms or worked at the fortifications were of course, put to death Such as refused to confess and receive the Catholie sacraments per hed by fire. A poor wretch, accused of having indicated thee mysteries, had he tongue torn out before being beheaded. A cobbler, nema Blaise Bouzet, was hanged for haven eaten meat soup me

¹ Mons, sous les Kapports Hecasques et Statist que l'amdaens (Mons, 1819) 77, se

² I andaens, 77-87 3 11d

Sentence against Pierre de Leonerel Almeyer-Un au Teilsunal de Sang 113 per- 2

[&]quot; Int -" In considerance as the doc" - Cgrande recognossance et remain know de t' saincte et son corps porte aus ermens

[·] Landachs Se meren to 150

Friday.1 He was also accused of going to the Protestant preachings for the sake of participating in the alms distri-buted on these occasions,² a crime for which many other paupers were executed.3 An old man of sixty-two was sent to the scaffold for having permitted his son to bear arms among the volunteers.⁴ At last, when all pretexts were wanting to justify executions, the council assigned as motives for its decrees an adhesion of heart on the part of the victims to the cause of the insurgents, or to the doctrines of the Reformed Church.⁵ Ten, twelve, twenty persons were often hanged, burned, or beheaded in a single day.6 Gibbets laden with mutilated bodies lined the public highways, while Noircarmes, by frightful expressions of approbation, excited without ceasing the fury of his satellites.⁷ This monster would perhaps be less worthy of execration had he been governed in these foul proceedings by fanatical bigotry or by political hatred; but his motives were of the most sordid description. It was mainly to acquire gold for himself that he ordained all this carnage. With the same pen which signed the death-sentences of the richest victims, he drew orders to his own benefit on their confiscated property.8 The lion's share of the plunder was appropriated by himself. He desired the estate of François de Glarges, Seigneur d'Eslesmes. The gentleman had committed no offence of any kind, and, moreover, lived beyond the French frontier. Nevertheless, in contempt of international law, the neighbouring territory was invaded, and D'Eslesmes dragged before the blood tribunal of Mons. Noircarmes had drawn up beforehand, in his own handwriting, both the terms of the accusation and of the sentence. The victim was innocent and a Catholic, but he was rich. He confessed to have been

¹ Altmeyer, 120, from the Archives Judiciaires de Hainault. Régistre contenant les sentences criminelles.

³ Sentences du 6me Mars, 1573, et autres, apud Paridaens, 82.

⁴ Paridaens.

⁵ Paridaens, Sentences du 6me Mars, et autres.

⁶ Ilid., 83 Sentences des 15me et 31me Dec., 1572, 17mc Jan., 1573, 6me Mars, 10me, 11me, 13me Avril, 9me 'uillet, 26me et 27me

Aôut, 1573.

7 Ibid.

8 Ibid., 84. Lettres aux Commissaires des ter Juin et 24me Nov., 1573.

twice at the preaching, from curiosity, and to have omitted taking the sacriment at the previous Easter For these offences he was beheaded, and his confiscated estate adjudged at an almost nominal price to the secretary of Noircarmes, bidding for his master. "You can do me no greater plea sure," wrote Noircarmes to the council, "thin to make quick work with all these rebels, and to proceed with the confiscation of their estates real and personal. Don't fail to put all those to the torure, out of whom anything can be got."

Notwithstanding the unexampled docility of the commissioners, they found it difficult to extract from their redoubted chief a reasonable share in the wages of blood. They did not scruple, therefore, to display their own infamy, and to enumerate their own crimes, in order to justify their demand for higher salaries. "Consider, they said in a petition to this end, "consider closely all that is odious in our office, and the great number of banishments and of executions which we have pronounced among all our o'en relations and friends!"

It may be added, moreover, as a slight palliation for the enormous crimes committed by these men, that, becoming at last weary of their business, they urged Noirearmes to desist from the work of proscription Longehaye, one of the commissioners, even waited upon him personally, with a plea for merey in favour of "the poor people, even beggars, who, although having borne arms during the siege, might then be pardoned?" Noirearmes, in a rage at the proposition, said that "if he did not know the commissioners to be honest men, he should believe that their faith had been exted," and forbade any further words on the subject. When Longetheve still ventured to speak in favour of certain per

¹ tandaens S₂ Greffe de Mors. Sentence du 24me Fev., 1573. Lette de Noticarmes à Burequies de 25me Nov., 1573 ested by Latillates.

Altmeyer 115 from the Archives de Hamaut

[&]quot;Considered de pres tout l'odient de nostre charge et le grand nomit et de bannissement et d'exections que nous avois prononces au renlieu de tous nes parens et amis. L'atties des Compassaires du 22m et lain 1575, anul lytridions, bo, frem the Gieff de Mest 4 " Ous aux et ur. — la collect de Mosesgemen-dissit que se

[&]quot; - lous ave veu - la co lete de Monceigneur-diant que se ne nous cognossos gens de bien, auroit opinion qu'avi ves leu les mairs expraisses. - Latter el Lei rekaye ha 4 refer, 12

sons, "who were very poor and simple, not charged with duplicity, and good Catholics besides," he fared no better. "Away with you!" cried Noircarmes, in a great fury, adding that he had already written to have execution done upon the "Whereupon," said poor Blood-Councillor whole of them. Longehaye, in his letter to his colleague, "I retired, I leave you to guess how."2

Thus the work went on day after day, month after month. Till the 27th August of the following year (1573) the executioner never rested; and when Requesens, successor to Alva, caused the prisons of Mons to be opened, there were found still seventy-five individuals condemned to the block, and

awaiting their fate."

It is the most dreadful commentary upon the times in which these transactions occurred, that they could sink so soon into oblivion. The culprits took care to hide the records of their guilt, while succeeding horrors, on a more extensive scale, at other places, effaced the memory of all these comparatively obscure murders and spoliations. The prosperity of Mons, one of the most flourishing and wealthy manufacturing towns in the Netherlands, was annihilated, but there were so many cities in the same condition that its misery was hardly remarkable. Nevertheless, in our own days, the fall of a mouldering tower in the ruined Chateau de Naas at last revealed the archives of all these crimes.4 How the documents came to be placed there remains a mystery, but they have at last been brought to light.

The Spaniards had thus recovered Mons, by which event the temporary revolution throughout the whole Southern Netherlands was at an end. The keys of that city unlocked the gates of every other in Brabant and Flanders. The towns which had so lately embraced the authority of Orange now hastened to disavow the Prince and to return to their ancient, hypocritical, and cowardly allegiance.5 The new oaths of fidelity were in general accepted by Alva, but the beautiful archiepiscopal city of Mechlin was selected for an example

and a sacrifice.

^{1 &}quot;Replicqua, Arrière! par grant furie," etc.-Letter of Longehaye

in Allmeyer, 125, sqq.

2 "Sur quoy me rethiray, je vous laisse à penser comment."—Ibid.

3 Daridaens. 86, sqq.

4 Ibid., 279, note E.

5 Bor, vi. 415. ⁵ Bor, vi. 415.

There were heavy arrears due to the Spanish troops To indemnify them, and to make good his blasphemous prophecy of Divine chastisement for its past misdeeds, Alva now abandoned this town to the licence of his soldiery. By his command Don Frederic advanced to the gates and By his command Don Frederic advanced to the gates and demanded its surrender. He was answered by a few shots from the garrison. Those cowardly troops, however, having thus plunged the city still more deeply into the disgrace which, in Alixa's eyes they had incurred by receiving rebels within their walls after having but just before refused admit tance to the Spanish forces, decamped during the night, and left the place defenceless 1

Early next morning there issued from the gites a solemn procession of priests, with banner and crozier, followed by a

of the victor While the

the soldiers were busily engaged in heaping dried branches and rubbish into the moat. Before the religious exercises were concluded, thou sands had forced the gates or climbed the walls, and entered the city with a celerity which only the hope of rapine could inspire The sack instantly commenced. The property of friend and foe, of Papist and Calvinist, was indiscriminately rifled Everything was dismantled and destroyed. "Hardly a nail," said a Spaniard, writing soon afterwards from Brus-sels, "was left standing in the walls" The troops seemed. to imagine themselves in a Turkish town, and wreaked the Divine vengeance which Alva had denounced upon the city

Divine tengeance which has a denounced upon the citywith an energy which met with his ferrent applians.

Three days long the hornble scene continued, one day
for the benefit of the Spannards, two more for that of the
Wallcoms and Germans All the churches, monasteres,
religious houses of every kind were completely sacked.

¹ Bor. v. 40 Bor, vi 40 11 , 11. 1185 ou de femmes,

tout n'aye este saccate jusques aux lantes et demers d'epar

Every valuable article which they contained, the ornaments of altars, the reliquaries, chalices, embroidered curtains, and carpets of velvet or damask, the golden robes of the priests, the repositories of the host, the precious vessels of chrism and extreme unction, the rich clothing and jewelry adorning the effigies of the Holy Virgin, all were indiscriminately rifled by the Spanish soldiers. The holy wafers were trampled under foot, the sacramental wine was poured upon the ground, and, in brief, all the horrors which had been committed by the iconoclasts in their wildest moments, and for a thousandth part of which enormities heretics had been burned in droves, were now repeated in Mechlin by the especial soldiers of Christ, by Roman Catholics who had been sent to the Netherlands to avenge the insults offered to the Roman Catholic faith. The motive, too, which inspired the sacrilegious crew was not fanaticism, but the desire of plunder. The property of Romanists was taken as freely as that of Calvinists, of which sect there were, indeed, but few in the archiepiscopal city. Cardinal Granvelle's house was rifled. The pauper funds deposited in the convents were not respected. The beds were taken from beneath sick and dying women, whether lady abbess or hospital patient, that the sacking might be torn to pieces in search of hidden treasure.1

The iconoclasts of 1566 had destroyed millions of property for the sake of an idea, but they had appropriated nothing. Moreover, they had scarcely injured a human being; confining their wrath to graven images. The Spaniards at Mechlin spared neither man nor woman. The murders and outrages would be incredible, were they not attested by most respectable Catholic witnesses. Men were butchered in their houses, in the streets, at the altars.

¹ Discours du Pillage de Malines, 2me Octobre, 1572, 406, 407. "Voires ne ont esté respectez les repositoires et cyboires, où estoyent les sainctes hostyes et précieux corps de nostre Seigneur et Rédempteur, ny les vaisseaux des saint chresme et extrêmes onctions, qui ont esté ravis par les soldats Espagnols—tiré déhors le ciboire, gectant en terre les sainctes hosties," etc., etc.

[&]quot;Et y a la mater des noires-soeurs ha perdu 6 florins de son espargne—et pardessus ha esté tiré à la dicte mater, gisant malade, son lict de dessoubz elle; comme aussi ha este faict avec infinité de femmes accouchées et d'aultres avortées et de malades."—Discours, etc., 409.

Women were violated by hundreds in churches and in grave-jards. Moreove, the deed had been as deliberately arranged as it was thoroughly performed. It was sunctioned by the highest authority. Don I rederie, son of Alva, and General Noircarmes were both present at the sene and applications were in vain made to them that the have might be stayed. They were seen whispering to each other in the ear on their arrival says an eye witness and a Catholic, 'and it is well known that the affur had been resolved upon the preceding day. The two continued together as long as they remained in the city.' The work was, in truth fully accomplished. The ultra Catholic, Lain Richardot, member of the Grand Council, and nephew of the Bishop of Arras informed the state-council that the sack of Micchin had been so hornible that the poor and unfor tunate mothers had not a single morsel of bread to put in the mouths of their children who were dwing before their Cycs—so insane and cruel had been the avance of the plunderers. "He could say more, he added,' if his hair did not stand on end, not only at recounting but even at remembering the scene."

¹ D (cours etc., 415)
² Ibid 417, 412

³ Letter of Jean Richardot apud Gachard, Rapport au Ministre de l'Interieur sur les Archives de Litte, 234.

CHAPTER VIII.

THREE THOROUGH MASSACRES.

Affairs in Holland and Zeland-Siege of Tergoes by the patriots-Importance of the place—Difficulty of relieving it—Its position—Audacious plan for sending succour across the "Drowned Land"-Brilliant and successful expedition of Mondragon-The siege raised-Horrible sack of Zutphen—Base conduct of Count Van den Berg—Refusal of Naarden to surrender-Subsequent unsuccessful deputation to make terms with Don Frederic-Don Frederic before Naarden-Treachery of Romero—The Spaniards admitted—General massacre of the garrison and burghers-The city burned to the ground-Warm reception of Orange in Holland—Secret negotiations with the Estates—Desperate character of the struggle between Spain and the provinces-Don Frederic in Amsterdam—Plans for reducing Holland—Skirmish on the ice at Amsterdam-Preparation in Harlem for the expected siege-Description of the eity-Early operations-Complete investment-Numbers of besiegers and besieged—Mutual barbarities—Determined repulse of the first assault-Failure of Batenburg's expedition-Crueltics in city and camp—Mining and countermining—Second assault vietoriously repelled-Suffering and disease in Harlem-Disposition of Don Frederic to retire—Memorable rebuke by Alva—Efforts of Orange to relieve the place-Sonoy's expedition-Exploit of John Haring-Cruel execution of prisoners on both sides—Quiryn Dirkzoon and his family put to death in the city-Fleets upon the lake-Defeat of the patriot armada—Dreadful suffering and starvation in the eity—Parley with the besiegers—Despair of the city—Appeal to Orange—Expedition under Batenburg to relieve the city—His defeat and death—Desperate condition of Harlem-Its surrender at discretion-Sanguinary executions—General massacre—Expense of the victory in blood and money— Joy of Philip at the news.

WHILE thus Brabant and Flanders were scourged back to the chains which they had so recently broken, the affairs of the Prince of Orange were not improving in Zeland. Never was a twelvemonth so marked by contradictory fortune, never were the promises of a spring followed by such blight and disappointment in autumn as in the memorable year 1572. On the island of Walcheren, Middelburg and Arnemuyde still held for the King—Campveer and Flushing for the Prince of Orange. On the island of South Beveland,

the city of Goes or Tergoes was still stoutly defended by a small garrison of Spanish troops As long as the place held out, the city of Middelburg could be maintained Should that important city fall, the Spaniards would lose all hold upon Walcheren and the province of Zeland

Jerome de t Zeraerts, a brave, faithful, but singularly unlucky officer, commanded for the Prince in Walcheren's He had attempted by various hastily planned expeditions to give employment to his turbulent soldiers, but fortune had Middelburg and failed He had attempted Tergoes and had been compelled ingloriously to retreat. The citizens of I lushing, on his return, had shut the gates of the town In his free, and for several days refused to admit him or his troops ³ To retrieve this disgrace, which had spring rather from the insubordination of his followers and the rather from the insubordination of his followers and the dislike which they bore his person than from any want of courage or conduct on his part, he now assembled a force of seven thousand men, marched again to Tergoes, and upon the 26th of August laid siege to the place in form. The garrison was very insufficient, and although they conducted thumselves with great brivery, it was soon evident that unless trinforced they must yield. With their over throw it was obvious that the Spaniards would lose the important matitime province of Zeland, and the Duke ac cordingly ordered D Avila, who commanded in Antwerp, to throw succour into Tergoes without delay. Attempts were made, by sea and by land, to this effect, but were all unsue cessful. The Zelanders commanded the waters with their cessful. The Zelanders commanded the waters with their fleet, and were too much at home among those gulfs and shallows not to be more than a match for their enemies. Baffled in their attempt to relieve the town by water or by land, the Spaniards conceived an amphibious scheme | Their plan led to one of the most bulliant feats of arms which dis tinguish the history of the war

The Schold, flowing just the city of Antwerp and separating the provinces of Tlanders and Brabant, opens wide its two arms in nearly opposite directions, before it joins the sea. Between these two arms he the isles of Zeland, half floating

upon, half submerged by, the waves. The town of Tergoes was the chief city of South Beveland, the most important part of this archipelago, but South Beveland had not always been an island. Fifty years before, a tempest, one of the most violent recorded in the stormy annals of that exposed country, had overthrown all barriers,1 the waters of the German Ocean, lashed by a succession of north winds. having been driven upon the low coast of Zeland more rapidly than they could be carried off through the narrow straits of Dover. The dykes of the island had burst, the ocean had swept over the land, hundreds of villages had been overwhelmed, and a tract of country torn from the province and buried for ever beneath the sea. "Drowned Land," as it is called, now separated the island from the main. At low tide it was, however, possible for experienced pilots to ford the estuary, which had usurped the place of the land. The average depth was between four and five feet at low water, while the tide rose and fell at least ten feet; the bottom was muddy and treacherous, and it was, moreover, traversed by three living streams or channels, always much too deep to be fordable.3

Captain Plomaert, a Fleming of great experience and bravery, warmly attached to the King's cause, conceived the plan of sending reinforcements across this drowned district to the city of Tergoes. Accompanied by two peasants of the country, well acquainted with the track, he twice accomplished the dangerous and difficult passage, which, from dry land to dry land, was nearly ten English miles in length. Having thus satisfied himself as to the possibility of the enterprise, he laid his plan before the Spanish colonel, Mondragon.

That courageous veteran eagerly embraced the proposal, examined the ground, and after consultation with Sancho d'Avila, resolved in person to lead an expedition along the path suggested by Plomaert. Three thousand picked men, a thousand from each nation, 5-Spaniards, Walloons, and

¹ Mendoza, viii. 166, et seg.—Compare Guicciardini and Bentivoglio,

vii. 109-114.

2 "Verdronken Land."—Bor, vi. 394.

3 Bor, Hoofd, Mendoza, Bentivoglio, etc., etc.,

4 Hoofd, vii., 270, 271. Bentivoglio, vi. 3. Bentivoglio, vi. 112.

Germans, were speedily and secretly assembled at Bergen-op-Zoom, from the neighbourhood of which city, at a place called Aggier,' it was necessary that the expedition should set forth. A quantity of sacks were provided, in which a supply of biscuit and of powder was placed one to be carried by each soldier upon his head. Although it was already late in the autumn the weather was projutious, the troops not yet informed as to the secret enterprise for which they had been selected, were already assembled at the edge of the water, and Mondragon, who notwithstanding his age, had resolved upon heading the hazardous expedition, now briefly, on the evening of the 20th October, explained to them the nature of the service. His statement of the dangers which they were about to encounter, rather inflamed than diminished their ardour. Their enthusiasm became unbounded. as he described the importance of the city which they were about to save, and alluded to the glory which would be won by those who thus courageously came forward to its rescue. The time of about half ebb-tide having arrived, the veterin, preceded only by the guides and Plomaert, plunged guilt into the waves, followed by his army, almost in single file The water was never lower than the breast, often higher than the shoulder. The distance to the island, three and a half lengues at least, was to be accomplished within at most, six hours, or the rising tide would overwhelm them for ever And thus, across the quaking and uncertain slime, which often refused them a footing that adventurous hand. five hours long, jursued their midnight march sometimes swimming for their lives, and always struggling with the waves which every instant threatened to engulph them

Before the tide had risen to more than half flood, before the day had dawned, the army set foot on dry land again, at the village of Irschen Of the whole three thousand, only nine unlucks individuals had been drowned, so much had courage and discipline wailed in that dark and perilous passage through the very bottom of the sea.\textsuperscript{The Duke of Alva might well pronounce it one of the most brilliant and original achievements in the annals of war. The beacon

¹ Bor vi 304. 2 Bertivoglio Mendora Der Hoofd, mirsus Meteren iv 76, 77 Lorrespon lance de I halippe IL, is 1179.

fires were immediately lighted upon the shore, as agreed upon, to inform Sancho d'Avila, who was anxiously awaiting the result at Bergen-op-Zoom, of the safe arrival of the troops. A brief repose was then allowed. At the approach of daylight, they set forth from Irseken, which lay about four leagues from Tergoes. The news that a Spanish army had thus arisen from the depths of the sea, flew before them as they marched. The besieging force commanded the water with their float its leading force. water with their fleet, the land with their army; yet had these indomitable Spaniards found a path, which was neither land nor water, and had thus stolen upon them in the silence of night. A panic preceded them as they freell upon a foe much superior in number to their own force. It was impossible for 't Zeraerts to induce his soldiers to offer resistance. The patriot army fled precipitately and ignominationally to their ships, hotly pursued by the Spaniards, who o'rewertook and destroyed the whole of their rear-guard before athey could embark. This done, the gallant little garrison which had for successfully held the city, was reinforced with the courageous veterans who had come to their relief. His and udacious project thus brilliantly accomplished, the "good at old Mordragon," as his soldiers called him, returned to the province of Perspect 2 of Brabant.2

After the capture of Mons and the sack of Melechlin, the Duke of Alva had taken his way to Nimwegen, having depatched his son, Don Frederic, to reduce the north hern an eastern country, which was only too ready to submit to the conqueror. Very little resistance was made by any of the cities which had so recently, and with such enthusias melectric opposition to the entrance of the King's troops, and receive a dreadful chastisement in consequence. Alva sent or do to his son to leave not a single man alive in the city, and to burn every house to the ground. The Duke's common was almost literally obeyed. Don Frederic entered Zutphe and without a moment's warning put the whole garrison the sword. The citizens next fell a defenceless prey; some

Bentivoglio, Bor, Mendoza, Hoofd, Meteren, ubi sup. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1180.

^{1 &}quot;El bueno viejo Mondragon."—Correspondence de Philippe Il.

being stabbed in the streets, some hanged on the trees which decorated the city, some stripped stark naked, and turned out into the fields to freeze to death in the wintry night. As the work of death became too fatiguing for the hutchers, five hundred innocent burghers were ned two and two, back to back, and drowned like dogs in the river 1ssel. A few stragglers who had contrived to elude pursuit at first, were afterwards taken from their inding places, and hung upon the gallons by the feel some of which victims suffered days and nights of agony before death came to their relief. It is super fluous to add that the outrages upon women were no less universal in Zutphen than they had been in every city captured or occupied by the Spanish troops. These horrors continued till scarcely chastity or life remained, throughout the miserable city.

This attack and massacre had been so suddenly executed, that assistance would hardly have been possible, even had there been disposition to render it. There was, however, no such disposition. The whole country was already covering again, except the proxinces of Holland and Yeland. No one dared approach, even to learn what had occurred within the walls of the town, for days after its doom had been accomplished. "A wail of agony was heard above Zuphen last Sunday," wrote Count Nieuwenar, "a sound as of a mighty massacre, but we know not what has taken place."

Count Van den Berg, another brother in law of Orange, proced himself signally unworthy of the illustrous race to which he was alited. He had, in the earlier part of the year, received the homnge of the cities of Gelderland and Overyssel, on behalf of the patriot Prince. He now basely alandoned the field where he had endeavoured to gather laurels while the sun of success had been shining. Having written from Kampen, whither he had retired, that he meant to hold the cit to the last gasts, he immediately

¹ Correspondence de Inflippe II, in 1180. Bor, vi. 415. Hoof i, vi. 274. Meteren, iv 78.—Compare Mendeza, viii. 172 and Lerti voglio vi. 114, who glides rapidly over these scenes of horror with a smoothness all his own.

^{1 &}quot;Away det on oue dimanche passe on a our ung grand jammer geschier et tuene dedans Zeifen, mais on ne stat ce que c'est."— Court Airumenar la Leni et Massau Archives de la Maison d'Orange etc. in 25.

citadel a strong band of well-armed and skilful musketeers sallied forth upon skates as the besieging force advanced. A rapid, brilliant, and slippery skirmish succeeded, in which the Hollanders, so accustomed to such sports, easily vanquished their antagonists, and drove them off the field, with the loss of several hundred left dead upon the ice.1 "Twas a thing never heard of before to-day," said Alva, "to see a body of arquebusiers thus skirmishing upon a frozen sea."2 In the course of the next four-and-twenty hours a flood and a rapid thaw released the vessels, which all escaped to Enkhuizen, while a frost, immediately and strangely succeeding, made pursuit impossible.3

The Spaniards were astonished at these novel manœuvres upon the ice. It is amusing to read their elaborate descriptions of the wonderful appendages which had enabled the Hollanders to glide so glibly into battle with a superior force, and so rapidly to glance away, after achieving a signal triumph. Nevertheless, the Spaniards could never be dismayed, and were always apt scholars, even if an enemy were the teacher. Alva immediately ordered seven thousand pairs of skates, and his soldiers soon learned to perform military evolutions with these new accoutrements as audaciously, if not as adroitly, as the Hollanders.4

A portion of the Harlem magistracy, notwithstanding the spirit which pervaded the province, began to tremble as danger approached. They were base enough to enter into secret negotiations with Alva, and to send three of their own number to treat with the Duke at Amsterdam. wise enough to remain with the enemy. The other two were arrested on their return, and condemned, after an impartial trial, to death.5 For, while these emissaries of a cowardly magistracy were absent, the stout commandant of the little garrison, Ripperda, had assembled the citizens and soldiers in the market-place. He warned them of the absolute necessity to make a last effort for freedom. In startling colours

¹ Mendoza, vii. 173.

² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1186.—" Que me parece la mas nueva cosa que hasta oy se ha oido, escaramuzar arcabuzeria sobre la mer alada."

³ Hoofd, vii. 281.

Bentivoglio, vii. 122. Mendoza, viii. 173, et al.
 Bor, vi. 420, 421. Hoofd, vii. 282. Meteren, iv. 78.

he held up to them the fate of Mechlin, of Zutphen, of Naarden, as a prophetic mirror, in which they might rend their own fate should they be base enough to surrender the their own late should they be base enough to surrender the city. There was no composition possible, he urged, with foes who were as false as they were sangumary, and whose foul passions were stimulated, not slaked, by the horrors with which they had already feasted themselves. Ripperda addressed men who could sympathiz, with his bold and lighty sentiments. Soldiers and citizens cried out for defence instead of surrender, as with one voice, for there

were no abject spirits at Harlem, save among the magistracy, and Sunte Aldegonde, the faithful minister of Orange, was soon sent to Harlem by the Prince to make a thorough

change in that body 2

Harlem, over whose ruins the Spanish tyranny intended to make its entrance into Holland, lay in the narrowest part of that narrow isthmus which separates the Zuyder Lee from the German Ocean The distance from sea to sea is hardly five English miles across Westerly from the city extended a slender strip of land, once a morass, then a fruitful meadow, maintained by unflagging fortitude in the very jaws of a stormy occan Between the North Sea and the outer edge of this pasture surged those wild and fantastic downs, heaped up lis wind and wave in mimicry of mountains, the long coils of that rope of sand, by which, plaited into additional strength by the slenderest of bulmishes, the waves of the North Sea were made to obey the command of man. On

water, and united by a stender causeway. The Harlem Lake, formed less than a century before by the bursting of four lesser meres during a storm which had threatened to swallow the whole Peninsula, extended itself on the south and east, a sea of limited dimensions, being only fifteen feet in depth with seventy square miles of surface, but, exposed as it by to all the winds of heaven, often lashed into storms as dangerous as those of the Atlantic. Beyond the lake,

¹ Bor, vi. 420, 421 Hoofd, vis. 283 Meteren, iv. 78. ² Bor, Hoofd, Mendozz, w²x swf ³ Arundo are ⁴ Bentivogho, vii. 118. Mendozz, viii. 176. Bor, vi. 422

towards the north, the waters of the Y nearly swept across the Peninsula. This inlet of the Zuyder Zee was only separated from the Harlem mere by a slender thread of land. Over this ran the causeway between the two sister cities, now so unfortunately in arms against each other. Midway between the two, the dyke was pierced and closed again with a system of sluice-works, which, when opened, admitted the waters of the lake into those of the estuary, and caused an inundation of the surrounding country.

The city was one of the largest and most beautiful in the It was also one of the weakest.² The walls were of antique construction, turreted, but not strong. extent and feebleness of the defences made a large garrison necessary, but unfortunately, the garrison was even weaker than the walls. The city's main reliance was on the stout hearts of the inhabitants. The streets were, for that day, spacious and regular; the canals planted with limes and poplars. The ancient church of Saint Bavon, a large imposing structure of brick, stood almost in the centre of the place, the most prominent object, not only of the town but of the province, visible over leagues of sea, and of land more level than the sea, and seeming to gather the whole quiet little city under its sacred and protective wings. Its tall open-work leaden spire was surmounted by a colossal crown, which an exalted imagination might have regarded as the emblematic guerdon of martyrdom held aloft over the city, to reward its heroism and its agony.

It was at once obvious that the watery expanse between Harlem and Amsterdam would be the principal theatre of the operations about to commence. The siege was soon begun. The fugitive burgomaster, De Fries, had the effrontery, with the advice of Alva, to address a letter to the citizens, urging them to surrender at discretion. The messenger was hanged—a cruel but practical answer, which put an end to all further traitorous communications.³ This was

iv. 78.—This lake, the scene of so many romantic events during the period with which we are occupied, has, within the last few years, been converted into dry land. The magnificent undertaking was completed in the year 1853.

the year 1853.

¹ Bor, Meteren, Bentivoglio, Mendoza, ubi sup.

² Bor, vi. 422.

³ Hoofd, vii. 284.

in the first week of December. On the 10th, Don Fredenc sent a strong detachment to capture the fort and village of Sparendam, as an indispensable preliminary to the commencement of the siege. A peasant having shown Zapata, the commander of the expedition, a secret passage across the flooded and frozen meadows, the Spaniards stormed the place gallantly, routed the whole garnson, killed three hundred, and took possession of the works and village Next day,

under Count Overstein, were stationed in a beautiful and extensive grove of limes and beeches, which spread between the southern walls and the shore of Harlem Lake. Don Frederic, with his Spinnirds, took up a position on the opposite side, at a pivee called the House of Kleef, the ruins of which still remain. The Walloons and other regiments were distributed in different places, so as completely to energied the town. On the edge of the mere the Prince of Orange had already ordered a cluster of forts to be creeted, by which the command of its frozen surface was at first secured for Harlem. In the-course of the siege, however, other forts were erected by Don I rederic, so that the aspect of things sufficed a change

Against this immense force, nearly equal in number to that of the whole population of the city, the garrison within the walls never amounted to more than four thousand nen's In the beginning it was much less numerous. The same circumstances however, which assisted the initiatory overarity of the circumstances however, which assisted the initiatory over-

1 Pierre Sterlinex; Lene corte Waerachtige Heschryvinghe van alle Geschiedinissen, Anschlagen, Stormen, Schermatsingen onde Schieten voor de vroome Stadt Haerlem in Holland geschiel i, etc., etc.—Del/i,

The sather was a citizen of Antwerp, who kept a daily oceanl of the famous seege. The author was a citizen of Antwerp, who kept a daily oceanl of the events as they occurred at Hatten. It has day, cut register of horrors, pitted down without passon or comment.—Compare Los, v. 422, 423; Westerra, iv. 79; Mendaux vi. 174, 175; Magnatar, Vad Hist, v.

Bor, Hoof I, Mendora. Wagenser, vt. 415.

^{*} Hoold, vii. 28t.

The Prince of Orange, meanwhile, encouraged the citizens to persevere by frequent promises of assistance. His letters, written on extremely small bits of paper, were sent into the town by carrier pigeons.\(^1\) On the 28th of January he despatched a considerable supply of the two necessaries, powder and bread, on one hundred and seventy sledges across the Harlem Lake, together with four hundred veteran soldiers.\(^2\) The citizens continued to contest the approaches to the ravelin before the Cross-gate, but it had become obvious that they could not hold it long. Secretly, steadfastly, and swiftly they had, therefore, during the long wintry nights, been constructing a half moon of solid masonry on the inside of the same portal.\(^3\) Old men, feeble women, tender children, united with the able-bodied to accomplish this work, by which they hoped still to maintain themselves after the ravelin had fallen.\(^4\)

On the 31st of January, after two or three days' cannonade against the gates of the Cross and of St. John, and the intervening curtains, Don Frederic ordered a midnight assault. The walls had been much shattered, part of the John's-gate was in ruins; the Spaniards mounted the breach in great numbers; the city was almost taken by surprise; while the Commander-in-chief, sure of victory, ordered the whole of his forces under arms to cut off the population who were to stream panic-struck from every issue. The attack was unexpected, but the forty or fifty sentinels defended the walls while they sounded the alarm. The tocsin bells tolled, and the citizens, whose sleep was not apt to be heavy during that perilous winter, soon manned the ramparts again. The daylight came upon them while the fierce struggle was still at its height. The besieged, as before, defended themselves with musket and rapier, with melted pitch, with firebrands, with clubs and stones. Meantime, after morning prayers in

consumian las minas mucha gente y soldados — y en las mismas que se labraran, se combatio algunas vezes, por la estrecheza del lugar con espada y rodela, por no poderse aprovechar de otras armas." "Daer onstond dan een ysslyk schouwspel en slaghreegen van hoofden, armen, beenen een sleeteren van ingewant, uit den aarde, naa de lucht."—

Hoofd, vii. 291.

¹ Hoofd, viii. 303. Mendoza, ix. 188, 189. Meteren, iv. 80.

² Bor, vi. 432.

³ Ibid., 431, 432. Mendoza, iv. 188.

⁴ Ibid.

⁵ Bor, vi. 432. Hoofd, vii. 292, 293.

the Spanish camp, the trumpet for a general assault was sounded. A tremendous onset was made upon the gate of the Cross, and the rivelin was carried at last. The Spaniards poured into this fort so long the object of their attack expecting instantly to sweep into the city with sword and fire. As they mounted its will they became for the first time aware of the new and stronger fortification which had been secretly constructed on the inner side. The reason why the ravelin lad been at list onceded was revealed. The half moon, whose existence they had not suspected rose before them bristling with cannon. A sharp fire was instantly opened upon the besiepers while at the same instant the ravelin, which the cruzens had undermined blew up with a severe explosion carring into the air all the soldiers who had just entered it so triumphantly. This was the turning point. The retreat was sounded, and the Spanierids fled to their camp leaving it least three hundred dead beneath the walls. Flus was a second assault made by an overwhelming force and led by the most accomplished generals of Spain signally and glorously replied by the plun burghers of Hurlein.

It became now almost evident that the city could be taken.

It became now almost evident that the city could be taken neither by regular approaches nor by sudden attack. It was therefore resolved that it should be reduced by famine Still as the winter wore on the immense army without the walls were as great sufficients by that scourge, as the population within. The solders fell in heaps before the diseases an gendered by intense cold and insufficient food for, as usual as such steges these deaths far outnumbered those inflicted by the enemis hand. The sufferings inside the city neces sarily increased day by day the whole population being put on a strict allowing of day the whole population being put on a strict allowing of food. Their supplies were daily diminishing and with the approach of the spring and the thay ing of the tee on the lake their, was danger that they would be entirely cut off. If the possession of the water were lost, they must vield or starie and they doubted whether the Prince would be able to organize a fleet. The gaunt spectre of Famini, afraedy rose before them with a menace which

¹ Holf 1 200 2 Holf vi. 200 2 Holf vi. 200 Wendors is 184 185 Bor vi. 432 Benu regle 11 174 Renting 0 til 125 Mendors, is 185 Bor vi. 436 437

could not be misunderstood. In their misery they longed for the assaults of the Spaniards, that they might look in the face of a less formidable foe. They paraded the ramparts daily, with drums beating, colours flying, taunting the besiegers to renewed attempts. To inflame the religious animosity of their antagonists, they attired themselves in the splendid, gold-embroidered vestments of the priests, which they took from the churches, and moved about in mock procession, bearing aloft images bedizened in ecclesiastical finery, relics, and other symbols, sacred in Catholic eyes, which they afterwards hurled from the ramparts, or broke, with derisive shouts, into a thousand fragments.1

It was, however, at that season earnestly debated by the enemy whether or not to raise the siege. Don Frederic was clearly of opinion that enough had been done for the honour of the Spanish arms. He was wearied with seeing his men perish helplessly around him, and considered the prize too paltry for the lives it must cost. His father thought differently. Perhaps he recalled the siege of Metz, and the unceasing regret with which, as he believed, his imperial master had remembered the advice received from him. At any rate the Duke now sent back Don Bernardino de Mendoza, whom Don Frederic had despatched to Nimwegen, soliciting his father's permission to raise the siege, with this reply:—"Tell Don Frederic," said Alva, "that if he be not decided to continue the siege till the town be taken, I shall no longer consider him my son, whatever my opinion may formerly have been. Should he fall in the siege, I will myself take the field to maintain it, and when we have both perished, the Duchess, my wife, shall come from Spain to do the same."3

Such language was unequivocal, and hostilities were resumed as fiercely as before. The besieged welcomed them with rapture, and, as usual, made daily the most desperate In one outbreak the Harlemers, under cover of a thick fog, marched up to the enemy's chief battery, and attempted to spike the guns before his face. They were all slain at the cannon's mouth, whither patriotism, not vain-

¹ Bentivoglio, vii. 121.

² Mendoza, ix. 185, 186. Bentivoglio, vii. 124, 125.

³ Mendoza, ix. 192.

giors, had led them, and las dead around the batters, with their hammers and spikes in their hands ' The same spirit was daily manifested. As the spring advanced, the kine went daily out of the gates to their peaceful pasture, notwith standing all the turnioil within and around nor was it possible for the Spaniards to capture a single one of these creatures, without paying at least a dozen soldiers as its nnce. "These citizens wrote Don Frederic, "do as much as the best soldiers in the world could do

The frost broke up by the end of Lebruary Count Bossu, who had been building a fleet of small vessels in Amsterdam, soon afterwards succeeded in entering the lake with a few gun boats, through a breach which he had made in the Over toom, about half a league from that city. The possession of the lake was already imperilled. The Prince, however, had not been idle and he too was soon reads to send his flotilla to the mere. At the same time the city of Amster dam was in almost as hazardous a position as Harlem the one on the lake so did the other depend upon its dyke for its supplies. Should that great artificial road which led to Musden and Utrecht he cut asunder, Amsterdam might be started as soon as Harlem . Since I came into the world, wrote Alva, 'I have never been in such anxiety If they should succeed in cutting off the communication along the dykes, we should have to raise the siege of Harlem, fully aware of the position of both places, but he was, as usual sally deficient in men and means. He wrote im ploringly to his funds in I right in I rance, in Germany He urged his brighter Louis to bring a few soldiers, if it were humanly possible "The whole country longs for you he wrote to Louis, 'as if you were the archangel Gabrael

The Prince however, did all that it was possible for man so hampered, to do He was himself, while anxiously

¹ Menius ir 182 2 Hoofd van. ,or 1 Todo lo que barnamente podica bacer los mejores soldados del riur lo. — Corrojo, glane de Phintje II , n. 1217

1 Bor, vi. 436

^{*} Correspondance de P1 1 ope II , il 1245.

Archives de la Ma son d'Orange iv 74

writing, and hoping, and waiting for supplies of troops from Germany or France, doing his best with such volunteers as he could raise. He was still established at Sassenheim, on the south of the city, while Sonoy with his slender forces was encamped on the north. He now sent that general with as large a party as he could muster to attack the Diemerdyk. His men entrenched themselves as strongly as they could between the Diemer and the Y, at the same time opening the sluices and breaking through the dyke. During the absence of their commander, who had gone to Edam for reinforcements, they were attacked by a large force from Amsterdam. A fierce amphibious contest took place, partly in boats, partly on the slippery causeway, partly in the water, resembling in character the frequent combats between the ancient Batavians and Romans during the wars of Civilis. The patriots were eventually overpowered.

Sonoy, who was on his way to their rescue, was frustrated in his design by the unexpected faint-heartedness of the volunteers whom he had enlisted at Edam.2 Braving a thousand perils, he advanced, almost unattended, in his little vessel, but only to witness the overthrow and expulsion of his band.³ It was too late for him singly to attempt to rally the retreating troops. They had fought well, but had been forced to yield before superior numbers, one individual of the little army having performed prodigies of valour. John Haring, of Horn, had planted himself entirely alone upon the dyke, where it was so narrow between the Y on the one side and the Diemer Lake on the other, that two men could hardly stand abreast. Here, armed with sword and shield, he had actually opposed and held in check one thousand of the enemy, during a period long enough to enable his own men, if they had been willing, to rally, and effectively to repel the attack. It was too late, the battle was too far lost to be restored; but still the brave soldier held the post, till, by his devotion, he had enabled all those of his compatriots who still remained in the entrenchments to make good their retreat. He then plunged into the sea, and, untouched by

¹ Bor, vi. 437. ² Bor. Hoofd, viii. 300. ³ Bor, Hoofd.

apear or bullet, effected his escape.\(^1\) Had he been a Greek or a Roman, an Horituus or a Chabrias, his name would have been famous in history—his statute exceted in the market place, for the bold Dutchman on his dyke had mann fested is much valout in a sacred cause as the most classic heroes of antiquity.

This unsuccessful attempt to cut off the communication between Amsterdam and the country strengthened the hopes of Alva Several hundreds of the patriots were killed or captured, and among the slun was Antony Oliver, the painter, through whose agency Louis of Nassau had been introduced into Mons. His head was cut off by two ensigns in Alvas service who received the price which had been set upon it of two thousand earolt. It was then labelled with its owner's name, and thrown into the city of Harlem.' At the same time a new gibbet was erected in the Spanish camp before the city, in a conspicuous situation, upon which all the prisoners were hanged, some by the neck, some by the heels, in full view of their countrymen. As usual, this especial act of cruelty excited the emulation of the citizens I'wo of the old board of magistrates, belonging to the Spanish party, were still imprisoned at Harlem, together with seven other persons, among whom was a priest and a boy of twelve years. They were now condemned to the gillons. The wife of one of the ex-burgomasters and his daughter, who was a beguin, went by his side as he was led to execution, piously exhorting him to sa tain with surage the executions of the populace and his ignominious doom. The rabble, irritated by such boldness, were not satisfied with wreaking their vengeance on the principal victims be after the execution had taken place they hunted the wife and drughter into the water, where her both perished ! I right to record these insures of cruelty, sometimes repetrated by the patrots as well as by their oppresser-

¹ Horff viii 1900, 301 - Comme Green v. Prinst., Archevil. Maissin d Orange iv. 80.

Letter of Alva to Ifin Commandence de Philimell

Hoff via you Verta P Serlinex.
Hoff via you Verta P Serlinex.

¹ Sahor Hade Er 205

L X C41

cruelty rendered almost inevitable by the incredible barbarity of the foreign invader. It was a war of wolfish malignity. In the words of Mendoza, every man within and without Harlem "seemed inspired by a spirit of special and personal vengeance." The innocent blood poured out in Mechlin, Zutphen, Naarden, and upon a thousand scaffolds, had been crying too long from the ground. The Hollanders must have been more or less than men not to be sometimes betrayed into acts which justice and reason must denounce.

The singular mood which has been recorded of a highspirited officer of the garrison, Captain Curey, illustrated the horror with which such scenes of carnage were regarded by noble natures. Of a gentle disposition originally, but inflamed almost to insanity by a contemplation of Spanish cruelty, he had taken up the profession of arms, to which he had a natural repugnance. Brave to recklessness, he led his men on every daring outbreak, on every perilous midnight Armed only with his rapier, without defensive armour, he was ever found where the battle raged most fiercely, and numerous were the victims who fell before his sword. On returning, however, from such excursions, he invariably shut himself in his quarters, took to his bed, and lay for days, sick with remorse, and bitterly lamenting all that bloodshed in which he had so deeply participated, and which a cruel fate seemed to render necessary. As the gentle mood subsided, his frenzy would return, and again he would rush to the field, to seek new havoc and fresh victims for his rage.2

The combats before the walls were of almost daily occurrence. On the 25th March, one thousand of the besieged made a brilliant sally, drove in all the outposts of the enemy, burned three hundred tents, and captured seven cannon, nine standards, and many wagon-loads of provisions, all which they succeeded in bringing with them into the city. Having thus reinforced themselves, in a manner not often practised by the citizens of a beleaguered town, in the very face of thirty thousand veterans—having killed eight hundred of the enemy, which was nearly one for every man engaged, while they lost but four of their own party 't—the Harlemers,

¹ Mendoza, ix. 191.

[·] Hoofd, viii. 302.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Ibid.

on their return, erected a trophy of funereal but exulting aspect. A mound of earth was constructed upon the ram parts, in the form of a colossal grave, in full view of the enemy's camp, and upon it were planted the cannon and standards so gallantly won in the skirmish, with the taunting inscription floating from the centre of the mound—"Harlem is the graveyard of the Spannards."

Such were the characteristics of this famous siege during the winter and early spring. Alsa might well write to his sovereign, that 'it was a war such as never before was seen or heard of in any land on earth." Yet the Duke had known near sixty years of warfare. He informed Philip that 'in ere it as a place defended with such skill and bratery as Harlem, either by rebels or by men fighting for their lawful Prince." Certuinly his son had discovered his mistake in asserting that the city would yield in a week, while the father, after nearly six years expendence, had found this 'people of butter' less malleable than even those "tron people' whom he boasted of having tamed. It was seen that neither the skies of Greece or Italy, nor the sublime seenery of switzerland, were necessary to arouse the spint of defiance to foreign oppression—a spint which beat as proudly among the wintry mists and the level meadows of Holland as it had ever done under sunnier atmospheres and in more romatic linds.

Mendozi had accomplished his mission to Spain, and had returned with supplies of money within six weeks from the date of his departure.\(^1\) Owing to his representations and Alvi's enterties, Plinlip had, moreover, ordered Requesers, governor of Milan, to send forward to the Netherlands three veteran Spaintsh regiment\(^2\) which when were now more required at Hailem thanin Haly.\(^1\) While the land force had thus been strength ened, the fleet upon the lake had also been largely increased. The Prince of Orange had on the other hand, provided more than a hundred sail of various descriptions,\(^3\) so that the whole surface of the mere was now alive with ships

¹ P Sterlings. Hoof! #4 rmf

to the guerra que hasta oy se ha su o ny oydo semilante en rais condia "— Corresponden e de Piu ppe II, in se 1/64, in 198.

^{747,} il. 119

Bor,

sumed they boiled the hides of horses and oxen, they are shoe leather, they plucked the nettles and grass from the graveyards and the weeds which grew between the stones of the pasement that with such food they might still support his a little longer till the promised succour should armse Men women and childran full dead by scores in the streets perishing with pure starvation and the survivors lind hardly the heart or the strength to bury them out of their sight. They who yet hived seemed to flit his shadows to and fro, enving those whose sufferings had already been terminated by deeth?

by death 1 I hus wore tway the month of June On the 1st of July the burghers consented to a parley. Deputies were sent to confer with the bestegers but the negotiations were admitted by Don Tredenca. On the 3rd a tremendous cannonade was respend upon the city. One thousand and cight balls were discharged—the most which had ever been thrown in one day since the commencement of the stege? I he wills were exceedy shallered but the assume was not ordered, because the bestegers were assumed that it was not ordered. were exceeds shiftered but the assault was not ordered, because the besiegers were assured that it was physically impossible for the inhabitants to hold out many days longer. A last letter, written in blood, was now despatched to the Prince of Orange, stating the forform condution to which they were reduced. At the same time, with the deristion of despain, they fluing into the hostile camp the few loaves of bread pair, inc.) fung into the hostic early the lew loades of irread which yet remained within the city walls. A day or two litts, a second and third parley were held with no more satisfactory result than had attended the first. A black flag was now horsted on the cathedral tower, the signal of despair to friend and foc. I ut a pigeon soon afterwards flew into the town with a letter from the I rince begging them to muntain themselves two days longer because succour was api roaching.

The Prince had indeed been doing all which under the 1 He at 456 43" Hooff was 300 310 Meteren in So. Hen-

11 11 1 1 10 310

the count of the Mend as he not not with the state of the

circumstances, was possible. He assembled the citizens of Delft in the market-place, and announced his intention of marching in person to the relief of the city, in the face of the besieging army, if any troops could be obtained. Soldiers there were none; but there was the deepest sympathy for Harlem throughout its sister cities, Delft, Rotterdam, Gouda. A numerous mass of burghers, many of them persons of station, all people of respectability, volunteered to march to the rescue. The Prince highly disapproved of this miscellaneous army, whose steadfastness he could not trust. As a soldier, he knew that for such a momentous enterprise, enthusiasm could not supply the place of experience. Nevertheless, as no regular troops could be had, and as the emergency allowed no delay, he drew up a commission, appointing Paulus Buys to be governor during his absence, and provisional stadholder, should he fall in the expedition.³ Four thousand armed volunteers, with six hundred mounted troopers, under Carlo de Noot, had been assembled, and the Prince now placed himself at their head.4 There was, however, a universal cry of remonstrance from the magistracies and burghers of all the towns, and from the troops themselves, at this project.5 They would not consent that a life so precious, so indispensable to the existence of Holland, should be needlessly hazarded. It was important to succour Harlem, but the Prince was of more value than many cities. He at last reluctantly consented, therefore, to abandon the command of the expedition to Baron Batenburg,6 the less willingly from the want of confidence which he could not help feeling in the character of the forces. On the 8th of July, at dusk, the expedition set forth from Sassenheim.7 It numbered nearly five thousand men, who had with them four hundred wagon-loads of provisions and seven fieldpieces.* Among the volunteers, Oldenbarneveld, afterwards so illustrious in the history of the Republic, marched in

¹ Bor, vi. 439, 440.

² See his letter of 18th July, 1573, in Bor, vi. 440.
³ This Commission is published in Kluit. Hol. Staatsreg., iii. 425-

^{427,} Bijlagen. Hoofd.

⁵ Bor, vi. 439. Hoofd, viii. 311. 6 Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Meteren, iv. 80.

⁸ Bor, ubi sup. 7 Bor, Hoofd.

the ranks, with his musket on his shoulder 1. Such was a sample of the spirit which pervaded the population of the province

Batenburg came to a halt in the woods of Nordwyk, on the south side of the city, where he remained till midnight 2 All seemed still in the enemy's camp After prayers, he gave orders to push forward, hoping to steal through the lines of his sleeping adversaries, and accomplish the relief by surprise. He was destined to be bitterly disappointed His plans and his numbers were thoroughly known to the Spaniards, two doves, bearing letters which contained the details of the intended expedition, having been shot and

brought into Don I rederic's camp "

The citizens, it appeared, had broken through the curtain work on the side where Batenburg was expected in order that a sally might be made in co-operation with the relieving force, as soon as it should appear. Signal fires had been agreed upon, by which the besieged were to be made aware of the approach of their friends. The Spanish commander necordingly ordered a mass of green branches, pitch, and straw, to be lighted opposite to the gap in the city wall Behind it he stationed five thousand picked troops. Inc thousand more, with a force of cavalry, were placed in the neighbourhood of the downs, with orders to attack the patnot army on the left to move castward

of smoke concerl

burg from the observation of the townspeople, and hid the

five thousand Spaniards from the advancing Hollanders As Batenburg emerged from the wood, he found himself attacked by a force superior to his own, while a few minutes later he was entirely enveloped by overwhelming numbers The whole Spanish army was, indeed under arms, and had been expecting him for two days. The unfortunate citizens alone were ignorant of his arrival The roise of the conflict

¹ Hoof! (vin 311) to whose father Olderharrevell related the anecdote

^{*} Hor, Roefd vir 311 Per vi 4: * Hor, Roefd vir 311 Menduz, vz. 201 Hoeft Boy 12 439.

^{*} Hooft, Wagerner Bre, vz. 439.

they supposed to be a false alarm created by the Spaniards, to draw them into their camp; and they declined a challenge which they were in no condition to accept.\(^1\) Batenburg was soon slain, and his troops utterly routed. The number killed was variously estimated at from six hundred to two and even three thousand.\(^2\) It is, at any rate, certain that the whole force was entirely destroyed or dispersed, and the attempt to relieve the city completely frustrated. The death of Batenburg was the less regretted, because he was accused, probably with great injustice, of having been intoxicated at the time of action,\(^2\) and therefore incapable of properly conducting the enterprise entrusted to him.

The Spaniards now cut off the nose and ears of a prisoner and sent him into the city to announce the news, while a few heads were also thrown over the walls to confirm the intelligence.4 When this decisive overthrow became known in Delft, there was even an outbreak of indignation against Orange. According to a statement of Alva, which, however, is to be received with great distrust, some of the populace wished to sack the Prince's house, and offered him personal indignities.3 Certainly, if these demonstrations were made, popular anger was never more senseless; but the tale rests entirely upon a vague assertion of the Duke, and is entirely at variance with every other contemporaneous account of these transactions. It had now become absolutely necessary, however, for the heroic but wretched town to abandon itself to its fate. It was impossible to attempt anything more in its behalf. The lake and its forts were in the hands of the enemy, the best force which could be mustered to make head against the besieging army had been cut to pieces, and the Prince of Orange, with a heavy heart, now sent

¹ Hoofd, viii. 312.

² Bor. vi. 440. Hoofd, viii. 312. Meteren, iv. 80. Wagenaer, vi. 428, 429.—Compare Mendoza, ix. 204; Bentivoglio, vii. 128; Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1254. The Dutch authorities give four thousand five hundred as the number of the whole force under Batenburg; the Spanish put them as high as eight thousand. The number of the slain, according to the Netherland accounts, were five or six hundred, according to those of the victors from one thousand five hundred to three thousand.

³ Bor, vi. 440. ⁴ P. Sterlinex. Hoofd, viii. 312.

⁵ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1254.

word that the burghers were to make the best terms with the enemy,1

The tidings of despair created a temble commotion in the starving city. There was no hope either in submission or resistance. Massacre or starvation were the only alternative But if there was no hope within the walls, without there was still a soldier's death For a moment the garnson and the able-bodied citizens resolved to advance from the gates in a solid column, to cut their way through the enemy's camp, or to pensh on the field. It was thought that the helpless and the infirm, who would alone be left in the city, might be treated with indulgence after the fighting men had all been At any rate, by remaining, the strong could neither protect nor comfort them As soon, however, as this resolve was known, there was such wailing and outers of women and children as picroud the hearts of the soldiers and burghers. and caused them to forego the project. They felt that it was cowardly not to die in their presence. It was then determined to form all the females, the sick, the aged, and the children, into a square, to surround them with all the able-bodied men who still remained, and thus arrayed to fight their way forth from the gates, and to conquer by the strength of desnair, or at least to pensh all together

These desperate projects, which the besteged were thought quite capable of executing, were soon known in the Spanish camp. Don I'redene felt after what he had witnessed in the past seven months; that there was nothing which the Hablemers could not do or dan. He fasted lest they should set fire to their city, and consume their houses, themselves, and their children, to ashes together, and he was unsuling that the fruits of his victors, purchased at such a vast expense, should be snatched from his band as he was about to gather them. A letter was accordingly, by his order, sent to the magistracy and leading citizens, in the mane of Count Over stein, communder of the German forces in the less egging.

¹ Hoofl, vm 312, 313 Magenter, vn 422. 2 By, vi 440 Hoofl, vm 313 Meteren, iv So. Mendors, is.

Hooft, Meterens Men loza.

1 Bor, va. 440. Hoeft, van 313. Meteren, is & Mondors, is.

^{*} Heefl, var. 313-

army.1 This despatch invited a surrender at discretion, but contained the solemn assurance that no punishment should be inflicted except upon those who, in the judgment of the citizens themselves, had deserved it, and promised ample forgiveness if the town should submit without further delay.2 At the moment of sending this letter, Don Frederic was in possession of strict orders from his father not to leave a man alive of the garrison, excepting only the Germans, and to execute besides a large number of the burghers.3 These commands he dared not disobey, even if he had felt any inclination to do so. In consequence of the semi-official letter of Overstein, however, the city formally surrendered at discretion on the 12th July.⁴

The great bell was tolled, and orders were issued that all arms in the possession of the garrison or the inhabitants should be brought to the Town House. The men were then ordered to assemble in the cloister of Zyl, the women in the cathedral.6 On the same day, Don Frederic, accompanied by Count Bossu and a numerous staff, rode into the city. The scene which met his view might have moved a heart of stone. Everywhere was evidence of the misery which had been so bravely endured during that seven months' siege. The smouldering ruins of houses, which had been set on fire by balls, the shattered fortifications, the felled trunks of trees, upturned pavements, broken images, and other materials for repairing gaps made by the daily cannonade, strewn around in all directions, the skeletons of

Bor, vi. 440. Hoofd, viii. 313. Wagenaer, 429, 430.

Bor, vi. 440. Hoofd, viii. 313.—Even Mendoza admits that a message promising mercy, was sent into the city in order to induce the besieged to abandon their desperate resolution—"Se embio aviso del campo que todos los que quisiessen quedar en la villa à merced, se usaria con ellos de misericordia."-ix. 204. The assurance in Count Overstein's letter, according to the uniform testimony of Dutch historians, was to the effect stated in the text, "Dat er alsnoch vergissenis ten beste was, Zoo zy tot oovergift verstaan wilden; ende niemand gestraft zoude worden, oft hy hadde 't naa hun eighen oordeel, verdient."-Hoofd, viii. 313.

³ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1253.

⁴ Bor, vi. 440. Hoofd, viii. 313. Meteren, iv. 80. Mendoza says the 14th July.—ix. 205.

⁵ P. Sterlinex. Bor, vi. 441. Hoofd, viii. 314, 315. 6 P. Sterlinex. Bor. Hoofd. Mendoza, ix. 205.

unclean animals from which the flesh had been gnawed, the unburied bodies of men and women who had fallen dead in the public thoroughfares-more than all, the gaunt and emiciated forms of those who still survived, the ghosts of their former selves, all might have induced at least a doubt whether the suffering inflicted already were not a sufficient punishment, even for enmes so deep as heresy and schism But this was far from being the sentiment of Don Frederic. He seemed to read defiance as well as despair in the sunken eyes which glared upon him as he entered the place, and he took no thought of the pledge which he had informally but sacredly given

sacredily given
All the officers of the garnson were at once arrested
Some of them had anticipated the sentence of their con
queror by a voluntary death Captain Bordet, a 1 rench
officer of distinction, like Britus, compelled his servant to
hold the sword upon which he fell, rather than yield himself
all the to the vengeance of the Spannards. Traits of generasity
were not wanting Instead of Peter Hassylaer, a young
officer who had displayed remarkable braver; throughout the siege, the Spaniards by mistake arrested his cousin Nicholas. The prisoner was suffering himself to be led away to the incytable scaffold without remonstrance, when Peter Hasselier pushed his way violently through the ranks of the captors "If you want Insign Hasselaer, I am the man Let this innocent person depart," he eried 1 Before the sun set his head had fallen. All the offcers were taken to the House of Kleef, where they were immediately executed.3 Captun Ripperda, who had so heroically rebuked the craven conduct of the magistracy, whose cloquence had inflamed the soldiers and citizens to resistance, and whose skill and courage had sustained the siege so long, was among the first to suffer 'A natural son of Cardinal Granvelle, who could have easily saved his life by proclaiming a parentage which

nast lance wearheren volleges Leeft."-Core In Arr. etc. etc Ber. 1. 441 Heet, vm. 316.

[&]quot; P Sent ner Hold tal 315

At last, after twenty-three hundred human creatures I had been murdered in cold blood, within a city where so many thousands had previously perished by violent or by lingering deaths, the blasphemous farce of a pardon was enacted. Iffity-seven of the most prominent burghers of the place were, lowever, excepted from the act of armesty, and taken into custody as security for the future good conduct of the other critizens. Of these hostages some were soon exeruted, some died, in prison, and all would have been eventually sacrificed, had not the naval defeat of Bossu soon afterwards enabled the Prince of Orange to reveue the ramaning prisoners. Ten thousand two lundred and fifty six shots had been discharged against the walls during the stege. Twelve thousand of the besteging army had died of wounds or disease, during the seven months and two days, between the investment and the surrender. In the earlier part of August, fafter the execution had been satisfactorily accomplished, Don Frederic made his triumphial entry, and the first chapter in the invision of Holland was closed. Such was the memorable siege of Harlem, an event in which we are called upon to wonder equally at human capacity to inflict and to endure misery.

de Philippe II., 1257; Cabrera, Filipe Segundo, x 754-759. Even Bentivection is shocked at the barbanties committed after the surrender

We, et. 442, 442 Veteren, er. 50, 82.

[!] Bor, id. 432. Meteren. ... Mendwa, in. 203. ... 'According to Dwidt, via. 316, and Bor, via. 444. The Spanish wit era estimate the number at four or five thousand.—Mendia.a, in. 204. Caltern, a. 50. ... Wacmart, na. 417. ... 'Wacmart, na. 417.

CHAPTER IX.

TYRANNY'S TIDE BEGINS TO EBB.

Position of Alva-Hatred entertained for him by elevated personages -Quarrel, between him and Medina Coli-Departure of the latter-Complaints to the King by each of the other-Attempts at conciliation addressed by government to the people of the Netherlands-Grotesque character of the address-Mutinous demonstration of the Spanish troops -Secret overtures to Orange-Obedience, with difficulty, restored by Alva-Commencement of the siege of Alkmaar-Sanguinary menaces of the Duke-Encouraging and enthusiastic language of the Prince-Preparations in Alkmaar for defence—The first assault steadily repulsed -Refusal of the soldiers to storm a second time-Expedition of the carpenter-envoy-Orders of the Prince to flood the country-The carpenter's despatches in the enemy's hands—Effect produced upon the Spaniards—The siege raised—Negotiations of Count Louis with France -- Uneasiness and secret correspondence of the Duke-Convention with the English government-Objects pursued by Orange-Cruelty of De la Marck—Ilis dismissal from office and subsequent death—Negotiations with France—Altered tone of the French court with regard to the St. Bartholomew-Ill effects of the crime upon the royal projects-Hypocrisy of the Spanish government-Letter of Louis to Charles IX. -Complaints of Charles IX.-Secret aspirations of that monarch and of Philip-Intrigues concerning the Polish election-Renewed negotiations between Schömberg and Count Louis, with consent of Orange-Conditions prescribed by the Prince-Articles of secret alliance-Remarkable letter of Count Louis to Charles IX .- Responsible and isolated situation of Orange-The "Address" and the "Epistle"-Religious sentiments of the Prince-Naval action on the Zuyder Zee-Captivity of Bossu and of Sainte Aldegonde-Odious position of Alva-His unceasing ernelty-Execution of Uitenhoove-Fraud practised by Alva upon his creditors-Arrival of Requesens, the new Governor-General -Departure of Alva-Concluding remarks upon his administration.

FOR the sake of continuity in the narrative, the siege of Harlem has been related until its conclusion. This great event constituted, moreover, the principal stuff in Netherland history, up to the middle of the year 1573. A few loose threads must be now taken up before we can proceed further.

Alva had for some time felt himself in a false and uncom-

fortable position. While he continued to be the object of a popular hatred as intense as ever glowed, he had graduily lost his hold upon those who at the outset of his career, had been loudest and lowest in their demonstrations of respect "Believe me, wrote secretary Albornov to Secretary Cayas "this people abhor our nation worse than they abhor the deal. As for the Duke of Alva they foam at the mouth when they hear his name. Viglus although still main taning smooth relations with the Governor had been in reality, long since estronged from him. Even Aerschot, for whom the Duke had long munituded an intimely half affectionate, half contemptuous now began to treat him with a contumely which it was difficult for so proud a stomach to discuss."

But the main source of discomfort was doubtless the presence of Medina Coch. This was the perpetual thorn in his side which no cunning could extract. A successor who would not and could not succeed him, yet who attended him as his shadow and his cail genius—a confidential colleague who betraved his confidence, mocked his projects, dended his authority, and yet complained of ill treatment—a rist who was neither competer nor subalizer and who affected to be his censor—a functionary of a purely anomalous character, sheltering lumself under his abnecation of an authority which he had not dared to assume, and enticising measures which he was not competent to grasp—such was the Dake of Medina Cech, in Alvas estimation

If helckring between the two Dukes became uncerving and dispraceful. Of course each complained to the King, and each according to his own account was a marry to the other's tyrains, but the mechaess manifested by. Alvi in all his relations with the new comer, was wondeful if we are to lake the accounts furnished by hinrieff and by his confidential secretars. On the other hand, Median Coch wrote to the King complaining of Alva in most unmitigated strains and asserting that he was limitely neer all veet it we are desiral less, not to have the slightest information as to the

Le Escupen en car su nombre "-Correctionain e de Fai 1940 II , in

^{*} C steepon ance (e Phil se H , I 1177 1598. * Hal , ii 1154 1155, 1156.

policy of the government.1 He reproached the Duke with shrinking from personal participation in military operations, and begged the royal forgiveness if he withdrew from a scene where he felt himself to be superfluous.2

Accordingly, towards the end of November, he took his departure without paying his respects. The Governor complained to the King of this unceremonious proceeding, and assured his Majesty that never were courtesy and gentleness so ill requited as his had been by this ingrate and cankered. "He told me," said Alva, "that if I did not stay in the field, he would not remain with me in peaceful cities, and he asked me if I intended to march into Holland with the troops which were to winter there. I answered, that I should go wherever it was necessary, even should I be obliged to swim through all the canals of Holland." 3 After giving these details, the Duke added, with great appearance of candour and meekness, that he was certain Medina Cœli had only been influenced by extreme zeal for his Majesty's service, and that, finding so little for him to do in the Netherlands. he had become dissatisfied with his position.

Immediately after the fall of Harlem, another attempt was made by Alva to win back the allegiance of the other cities by proclamations. It had become obvious to the Governor that so determined a resistance on the part of the first place besieged augured many long campaigns before the whole province could be subdued. A circular was accordingly issued upon the 26th July from Utrecht, and published immediately afterwards in all the cities of the Netherlands. cIt was a paper of singular character, commingling an affectation of almost ludicrous clemency, with honest and hearty brutality. There was consequently something very grotesque about the document. Philip, in the outset, was made to sustain towards his undutiful subjects the characters of the "Ye are well brooding hen and the prodigal's father. aware," thus ran the address, "that the King has, over and over again, manifested his willingness to receive his children, in however forlorn a condition the prodigals might return. His Majesty assures you once more that your sins, however black they may have been, shall be forgiven and forgotten in

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1178. ² *Ibid*. ³ *Ibid*., ii. 1193.

the plentinde of royal kindness, if you repent and return in season to his Majesty's embrace. Notwithstanding your manifold crimes, his Majesty still seeks, like a hen calling her chickens, to gather you all under the farental 'cing. The king herchy warms you once more, therefore, to place your solves in his royal hands, and not to start for his rage, cruelty, and fury, and the approach of his army.'

In affectionate character of the address, already fading towards the end of the preamble, soon changes to butterness. 'But if," epitimuses the monarch 'ye disregard these offers of mere), receiving them with closed ears as heretofore, then we wim you that there is no rigour, nor cruchly, however great, which you are not to expect by hying waste, starration, and the sword in such manner that nowhere shall remain a relic of that which at fresent exists but his Majesty will strip bare, and utterly depytulate the land and cause it to be inhibited again by itempers since otherwise, his Majesty could not believe that the will of God and of his Majesti had been accomplished.

It is almost superfluous to add that this circular remained

fruitless

The next point of attack was the city of Alkmari, stituate quite at the termination of the pennsula, among the largues and redeemed princes of North Holland. The Prince of Oringe had already provided it with a small garrison. The city had been summoned to surrender by the middle of July, and had returned a bold refusal. Meantime, the Spaniards had retured from before, the walls, while the surrender and cliratisement of Harlem occupied them during the next succeeding weeks. The month of August, morrows, was mainly consumed by Alva in quelling a dangerous and pro-rieted mutiny, which broke out among, the Spanish soldiers at Harlem' between three and four thousand of them having been quintered upon the ill fated population in that city. Uncas in, musery was endure by the mahalitants at the hands of the ferocious Spaniard, flushed with victory mutinous for log arrears of pay, and greedy for the booty which had been defined. At times, however, if e fury of the soldiery was

II F

more violently directed against their own commanders than against the enemy. A project was even formed by the malcontent troops to deliver Harlem into the hands of Orange. A party of them, disguised as Baltic merchants, waited upon the Prince at Delft, and were secretly admitted to his bedside before he had risen. They declared to him that they were Spanish soldiers, who had compassion on his cause, were dissatisfied with their own government, and were ready, upon the receipt of forty thousand guilders, to deliver the city into his hands. The Prince took the matter into consideration, and promised to accept the offer if he could raise the required sum. This, however, he found himself unable to do within the stipulated time, and thus, for want of so paltry a sum, the offer was of necessity declined.

Various were the excesses committed by the insubordinate troops in every province in the Netherlands upon the long-suffering inhabitants. "Nothing," wrote Alva, "had given him so much pain during his forty years of service." He avowed his determination to go to Amsterdam in order to offer himself a hostage to the soldiery, if by so doing he could quell the mutiny. He went to Amsterdam accordingly, where, by his exertions, ably seconded by those of the Marquis Vitelli, and by the payment of thirty crowns to each soldier—fourteen on account of arrearages and sixteen as his share in the Harlem compensation money—the rebellion was appeased, and obedience restored.

There was now leisure for the General to devote his whole energies against the little city of Alkmaar. On that bank and shoal, the extreme verge of habitable earth, the spirit of Holland's Freedom stood at bay. The grey towers of Egmont Castle and of Egmont Abbey rose between the city and the sea, and there the troops sent by the Prince of Orange were quartered during the very brief period in which the citizens wavered as to receiving them. The die was soon cast, however, and the Prince's garrison admitted. The Spaniards advanced, burned the village of Egmont to the ground as soon as the patriots had left it, and on the 21st of

Meteren, iv. S1. Hoofd (viii. 318) also tells the story, but does not vouch for it.

² Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1260.

³ Hoofd, vii. 318. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1264.

August, Don I rederic, appearing before the walls, proceeded formully to invest Alkmar. In a few days this had been so thornughly accomplished that, in Alsa's language, "it was impossible for a sparrow to enter or go out of the city"? The odds were somewhat unequal Sixteen thousand veteran troops constituted the besieging force." Within the city were a garrison of eight hundred soldiers, together with therteen hundred burghers canable of bearing arms. The rest of the population consisted of a very few refugees, besides the women and children. Two thousand one hundred able bodied men, of whom only about one third were soldiers, to resist sixteen thousand regulars !

Nor was there any doubt as to the fate which was reserved for them, should they succumb. The Duke was vociferous at the ingratitude with which his demeno had hitherto been requited. He complained bitterly of the ill success which had attended his monitory circulars, represented himself with incredible vehemence for his previous mildness, and protested that, after having executed only twenty three hun dred persons at the surrender of Harlem, besides a few additional burghers since, he had met with no correspondent demonstrations of affection. He promised himself, however, an ample compensation for all this ingratitude in the wholesale vengeance which he purposed to wreak upon Alkmaar Already he gloated in anticipation over the havoe which would soon be let loose within those walls. Such ravings, if invented by the pen of fiction, would seem a puerle canca-

¹ Canning van Forcest Len Kort Verhael van de strenghe I ele gheringe en le Aftrek der Spangiaerden van de S alt Alekmaer — Delft 1573

This is much the m ! Important and detailed account of the siege of Alkman. The s ory is told with vigour and feroeig, by a man who was daily and mabily on the walls during the whole siege, and who wro o his parrative as soon as the Spaniards had been repulsed.

The sult r, who was a magnerate and a pens mary of the eay, chierces that his ' sl interous and aleeps fellow turghers were con verted into experienced so diers by the Spariard, who summored them every moment out of bed to the walls."-1 41

Compare Hoof I, vi L 117 319 Wagenart vi 441 Correspondance de l'11 ipne II , su 1754

[&]quot; Wagenser, vi 44 Hoof I va 221 " Wageract, via 441, 442. Hoofd

^{4 7} of Hoofd, van 321

ture: proceeding, authentically, from his own, they still appear almost too exaggerated for belief. "If I take Alkmaar," he wrote to Philip, "I am resolved not to leave a single creature alive; the knife shall be put to every throat. Since the example of Harlem has proved of no use, perhaps an example of cruelty will bring the other cities to their senses."1 He took occasion also to read a lecture to the party of conciliation in Madrid, whose counsels, as he believed, his sovereign was beginning to heed. Nothing, he maintained, could be more senseless than the idea of pardon and clemency. This had been sufficiently proved by recent events. It was easy for people at a distance to talk about gentleness, but those upon the spot knew better. Gentleness had produced nothing, so far; violence alone could succeed in future. "Let your Majesty," he said, "be disabused of the impression, that with kindness anything can be done with these people. Already have matters reached such a point that many of those born in the country, who have hitherto advocated clemency, are now undeceived, and acknowledge their mistake. They are of opinion that not a living soul should be left in Alkmaar, but that every individual should be put to the sword." At the same time he took occasion, even in these ferocious letters, which seem dripping with blood, to commend his own natural benignity of disposition. "Your Majesty may be certain," he said, "that no man on earth desires the path of clemency more than I do, notwithstanding my particular hatred for heretics and traitors." 3 It was therefore with regret that he saw himself obliged to take the opposite course, and to stifle all his gentler sentiments.

Upon Diedrich Sonoy, Lieutenant-Governor for Orange in the province of North Holland, devolved the immediate responsibility of defending this part of the country. As the storm rolled slowly up from the south, even that experienced officer became uneasy at the unequal conflict im-

^{1 &}quot;Estoy resuelto en no dexar criatura con la vida, sino hazerlos passar todos à cuchillo, quiza con al exemplo de la crueldad, vernan las demas villas."—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1264.

² Ibid., ii. 1266. ³ "V. M. sea cierto que nadie en la tierra desea mas el camino de la blandura que yo; aunque es odio particular el que tengo con los hereges y traidores," etc., etc.—Ibid.

⁴ Hoofd, viii. 321. Bor, vi. 451, 452.

pending. He despatched a letter to his chief giving a cloomy picture of his position. It was hoped, too, that some resource had been provided in a secre foreign alliance. If your princely grace, wrote Spnoy, has made a contract for assistance with any powerful potentate, it is of the highest importance that it should be known to all the cities, in order to put an end to the emigration, and to console the people in their affliction

The answer of the Prince was full of lofty enthusiasm He reprimanded with gentle but earnest eloquence the despondency and little faith of his heutenant and other adherents. He had not expected he said, that they would have so soon for otten their manly courage. They seemed to consider the whole fate of the country attached to the city of Harlem He took God to witness that he had spared no pains, and would willingly have spared no drop of his blood to save that devoted city "But as notwithstanding our efforts he continued it has pleased God Almights to dis pose of Harlem according to His divine will, shall we there fore, deny and deride His holy word? Has the strong arm of the Lord thereby grown weaker? Has His church therefore come to nought? You ask if I have entered into a firm treaty with any great king or potentale, to which I answer, that before I ever took up the cause of the oppressed Chris-tians in these provinces, I had entered into a el se alli vice with the Aug of kings and I am firmly convinced that all who put their trust in Him shall be saved by His almighty liand. The God of armies will raise up armies for us to do hatt) with our enemies and His own. In conclusion, he stated his preparations for attacking the enemy by sea as well as by land and encouraged his lieutenant and the citizens of the northern quarter to maintain a hold front before the ad vancing foc 1

And now, with the dismantled and desolate Harlem before their eyes, a prophetic pliantom, pethaps, of the rown im-minent fate, did the handful of people shut up within All maar prepare for the worst. Their main hope las in the friendly sea. The yay sluces called the Zyp, through which an in

¹ I be for 44" 44" hould shee the let er
3 See this remarkal in anythelog ent Inter, da ed a

^{15&}quot;3 in the, 11 44" 44%

undation of the whole northern province could be very soon effected, were but a few miles distant. By opening these gates, and by piercing a few dykes, the ocean might be made to fight for them. To obtain this result, however, the consent of the inhabitants was requisite, as the destruction of all the standing crops would be inevitable. The city was so closely invested, that it was a matter of life and death to venture forth, and it was difficult, therefore, to find an envoy for this hazardous mission. At last, a carpenter in the city, Peter Van der Mey by name, undertook the adventure,1 and was entrusted with letters to Sonoy, to the Prince of Orange, and to the leading personages in several cities of the province. These papers were enclosed in a hollow walking-staff, carefully made fast at the top.2

Affairs soon approached a crisis within the beleaguered Daily skirmishes, without decisive result, had taken place outside the walls. At last, on the 18th of September, after a steady cannonade of nearly twelve hours, Don Frederic, at three in the afternoon, ordered an assault.3 Notwithstanding his seven months' experience at Harlem, he still believed it certain that he should carry Alkmaar by storm. The attack took place at once upon the Frisian gate and upon the red tower on the opposite side. Two choice regiments, recently arrived from Lombardy, led the onset, rending the air with their shouts, and confident of an easy victory. They were sustained by what seemed an overwhelming force of disciplined troops. Yet never, even in the recent history of Harlem, had an attack been received by more dauntless breasts. Every living man was on the walls. The storming parties were assailed with cannon, with musketry, with pistols. Boiling water, pitch, and oil, molten lead, and unslaked lime, were poured upon them every moment. Hundreds of tarred and burning hoops were skilfully quoited around the necks of the soldiers, who struggled in vain to extricate themselves from these fiery ruffs, while as fast as any of the invaders planted foot upon the breach, they were confronted face to face with sword and dagger by the burghers, who hurled them headlong into the moat below.

¹ Bor, vi. 452.

² Ibis.

Bor, vi. 453. Hoofd, viii. 323. Mendoza, x. 217-219.
 Nanning van Foreest, p. 34. Bor, vi. 453. Hoofd, viii. 323.

Thrice was the attack renewed with ever increasing rage -thrice repulsed with unflinching fortitude The storm continued four hours long. During all that period not one of the defenders left his post, till he dropped from it dead or wounded 'The women and children unscared by the halls flying in every direction or by the hand to-hand conflicts on the rimparts passed steadily to and fro from the arsenals to the fortifications constantly supplying their fathers husbands and brothers with powder and ball? Thus every human being in the city that could walk had become a sold cr last darkness fell upon the scene. The trumpet of recall was sounded and the Spannids, utterly discomfited retired from the walls leaving at least one thousand dead in the trenches while only thirteen burghers and twenty four of the garrison lost their lives. Thus was Alkmaar preserved for a little longer-thus a large and well appointed army signally defeated by a handful of men fighting for their firesides and altars I neigh C

mrac

the b.

nor harness" as he looked down into the city only some plan looking peor le generally dressed like fishermen. Yet these plain looking fishermen had defeated the veterans of Alva

The citizens felt encouraged by the results of that day's Moreover, they already possessed such information concerning the condition of affairs in the camp of the enems as gave them additional confidence. A Spaniard named Jernnimo, had been taken prisoner and brought into the city On ecciving a pomise of pardon he had revealed mans Sec

am

his

made, was treach crously executed." He begged hard for his life as he was led to the gallows, offering fresh revelations, which however after the amy le communications already made,

I for It all .- Compare Mend wa x "16-19 " van Forcest Anny me say Frent It Hooks, val 324.

Heal on 3-4 statement of Heal on 3-4 statement of Heal on 3-4 statement

^{*} I w vi. 457 | H wil v i. 3 23 3. 3. 4. 457 | H will vii. 3° 3.

When that moment should armse, it was solemnly promised that an inundation should be created which should sweep the whole Spanish army into the sea. The work had, in fact, been commenced. The 7pp and other sluices had already been opened, and a vast body of water, fluxen by a strong north west wind, had rushed in from the ocean It needed only that two great dykes should be pierced to render the deluge and the desolation complete. The harvests were doomed to destruction, and a fightful loss of properly rendered inevitable, but, at any rate, the Spaniards, if this last measure were taken, must fly or perish to a man.

This decisive blow having been thus ordered and promised, the carpenter set forth towards the city. He was, however, not successful in accomplishing his entrance un molested, as he had been in effecting his departure. He narrowly escaped with his his in passing through the enemy's lines, and while occupied in saving himself was so unlucky, or, as it proved, so fortunate, as to lose the stick in which his despatches were enclosed. He made good his entrance into the city, where, by word of mouth, he en couraged his fellow burghers as to the intentions of the Prince and Sonos In the meantime his letters were laid before the general of the besieging army. The resolution taken by Oringe, of which Don I rederic was thus uninten tionally made aware, to flood the country far and near, rather than fail to protect Alkmaar, made a profound im pression upon his mind. It was obvious that he was deal ing with a determined leader and with desperate men. His attempt to carry the place by storm had signally failed, and he could not deceive himself as to the temper and disposi tion of his troops ever since that repulse. When it should become known that they were threatened with submersion in the ocean in addition to all the other horrors of war, he had reason to believe that they would retire ignominiously from that remote and desolate sandhool, where, by remaining they could only find a water, grave. These views having been discussed in a council of officers, the res to

[&]quot; her align Hall mages Men"

for the glory of Spanish arms. Neither honour nor loyalty, it was thought, required that sixteen thousand soldiers should be sacrificed in a contest, not with man, but with the ocean.¹

On the 8th of October, accordingly, the siege, which had lasted seven weeks, was raised, and Don Frederic rejoined his father in Amsterdam. Ready to die in the last ditch, and to overwhelm both themselves and their foes in a common catastrophe, the Hollanders had at last compelled their haughty enemy to fly from a position which he had so insolently assumed.

These public transactions and military operations were not the only important events which affected the fate of Holland and its sister provinces at this juncture. The secret relations which had already been renewed between Louis of Nassau, as plenipotentiary of his brother and the French court, had for some time excited great uneasiness in the mind of Alva. Count Louis was known to be as skilful a negotiator as he was valiant and accomplished as a soldier. His frankne sand boldness created confidence.

Alva secretly expressed to his sovereign much suspicion of

* 14

I rance 1 He reminded him that Charles IX, during the early part of the preceding year, had given the assurance that he was secretly dealing with Louis of Nassau, only that he might induce the Count to fass over to Philip's service 1 At the same time Charles had been doing all he could to succour Mons, and had written the memorable letter which had fallen into Alva's hands on the capture of Genlis, and which expressed such a fixed determination to inflict a deadly blow upon the king, whom the writer was thus endeavouring to expole. All this the Governor recalled to the recollection of his sovereign. In view of the increasing repugnance of the I nglish court, Alva recommended that fur words should be employed, hinting, however, that it would be by no means necessary for his master in consider himself very strictly bound by any such pledges to I healieth, if they should happen to become inconveniently pressing "A monarch's promises," he deheately suggested, were not to be considered so sacred as those of humbler murtals.4 Not that the King should directly violate his word, but at the same time, continued the Duke, "I have thought all my life, and I have learned it from the Imperor, your Majesty's father, that the negotiations of kings depend upon different principles from those of us private gentlemen who wilk the world, and in this minner I always observed that your Majesty's father, who was so great a gentleman and so powerful a prince, conducted his affairs." The Governor took occasion, likewise, to express his regrets at the andward marrier in which the Ridolfi scheme had been managed Had he been consulted at an earlier day, the affair could have been treated much more delicately, as it was, there could be little doubt but that the discovery of the plot had prejudiced the mind of Lhzabeth against Spain that dust," concluded the Duke, " has resulted all this It could hardly be matter of surprise, either to

¹ Correspon tance de Pla inpe II , in 1211 · led, in 269 mue

^{*} Del , n 1211 "O e las negociaciones de los tiges pendian de my diferentes calan que los negocia de los ja ticaliteratal eros que andam si per el mundo, y des a mans a to si traur à sa pudre de V. V. q. e esa tir-

gran carelleron tan pe zerre "

4 Locus V V sea erer ngar de aque los polvos han pal la tolos es what momente general ene Plus ge II , in 1215

character, that he should be induced peaceably to leave the country.1

. tes could succeed Hectested several · boasted that he had many fine ships of war and three thousand men devoted to him, by whose assistance he could make the estates "dance after his pipe." At the beginning of the following year (1574), he was at last compelled to leave the provinces, which he never again troubled with his presence years afterwards he died of the bite of a mad dog, an end

as a man playing a game which, unfortunately for himself, was a losing one. "I hat poor Prince," said Granvelle, "has been ill advised. I doubt now whether he will ever be able to make his peace, and I think we shall rather try to get rid of him and his brother as if they were Turks. The marriage with the daughter of Maurice, unde mala et quia ifse talis, and his brothers have done him much harm. So have Schwendi and German intimacies. I saw it all very plainly, but he thid not choose to believe me "*

The main rehance of Orange was upon the secret negotia tions which his brother Louis was then renewing with the I rench government. The Prince had felt an almost insurmountable repugnance towards entertaining any relation with that blood stained court, since the massacre of Saint llartholomew. But a new face had recently been put upon that transaction. Instead of glorying in their crime, the King and his mother now assumed a tone of compunction, and averred that the deed had been unpremeditated, that it had been the result of a pame or an ecstasy of fear inspired

^{&#}x27; Hooft, vil. 28r, 282. Bor, vil. 42z. Frankt, Hot, der Ref., v. 538 540 (1 i.). "De tijding van so verstielt een handel koste den Jaince Magten en traenen deese semenschel Abest deel den Staaten wee, en stekte den fleeger wil een trap tet ti ne embergank "-f rawf". Des II

Mercren Signla Hadd, va. 259, 290, Lor, va. 424 431. Wagenser, vi 434 47%

Captral teraprel's to Mwillio, 18 h March, 1573, in Groen van Purst, Anthon, ir. 35°.

by the suddenly-discovered designs of the Huguenots; and that, in the instinct of self-preservation, the King with his family and immediate friends, had plunged into a crime which they now bitterly lamented.1 The French envoys at the different courts of Europe were directed to impress this view upon the minds of the monarchs to whom they were accredited. It was certainly a very different instruction from that which they had at first received. Their cue had originally been to claim a full meed of praise and thanksgiving in behalf of their sovereign for his meritorious exploit. salvos of artillery, the illuminations and rejoicings, the solemn processions and masses by which the auspicious event had been celebrated, were yet fresh in the memory of men. The ambassadors were sufficiently embarrassed by the distinct and determined approbation which they had recently expressed. Although the King, by formal proclamation, had assumed the whole responsibility, as he had notoriously been one of the chief perpetrators of the deed, his agents were now to stultify themselves and their monarch by representing, as a deplorable act of frenzy, the massacre which they had already extolled to the echo as a skilfully-executed and entirely commendable achievement.2

To humble the power of Spain, to obtain the hand of Queen Elizabeth for the Duke d'Alençon, to establish an insidious kind of protectorate over the Protestant princes of Germany, to obtain the throne of Poland for the Duke of Anjou, and even to obtain the imperial crown for the house of Valois—all these cherished projects seemed dashed to the ground by the Paris massacre and the abhorrence which it had created. Charles and Catharine were not slow to discover the false position in which they had placed themselves, while the Spanish jocularity at the immense error committed by France was visible enough through the assumed mask of holy horror.

Philip and Alva listened with mischievous joy to the howl of execration which swept through Christendom upon every

¹ M. Groen van Prinsterer, in the second part of vol. iv. of the Archives de la Maison d'Orange Nassau.—Compare De Thou, fib. lv. t. vi. 590, et seq.

² See the letters in the second part of vol. iv. Archive de la Maison d'Orange.

wind They rejoiced as hearth) in the humiliation of the malefactors as they did in the perpetration of the crime "Your Majesty wrote Louis of Nassau very blunth to king Charles sees how the Spannard your mortal enemy feersts himself full with the devolution of your affairs how he laughs, to split his side, at your unifortunes. This massesene has enabled him to weaken your Majesty more than he could have done by a war of thirty years."

Before the year had revolved, Charles had become thoroughly convinced of the fital impression produced by the event. Bitter and almost abject were his whimings at the Catholic kings desertion of his cause. He knows will wrote Charles to Saint Goard 'that if he can terminate these troubles and leave me alone in the dance, he will have leave and means to establish his authority not only in the Netherlands but elsewhere and that he will render himself more grand and formidable than he has ever been. This is the return they render for the god record from me, which is such as every one knows."

Gaspar ele Schoinleig the adroit and honourable agent of

first project was destined to be soon abandoned. It was reserved neither for Chules nor Philip to divert its succession in Germans from the numerous offspring of Maximilian yet it is instinctive to observe the unit ricopled avid to with which the jartee was sought by both. Lach was willing to effect its purchase by abjuring what were supposed his most cherished principles. I hillip of Spain, whose miss on was to extirpate heress throughout his results and who in persuance of that mission had already perpetua ed more crimes,

^{1.} On S. M. so, 11. ago I was ensembled if the sea choose grass dels doubt on de sea a linea, so at the first outside de sea in leaus, et employee on over the sea linea sea et a belaker restrict les too at an on tombure a suscensi after lemon tasson of a collèsse l'amond de parterit de set a state, and far wat a un or doubt a less prette passées que par le derrier in lance et true la présent LF mignilla placebles, M. M. de se le training parterities a soul de se l'an de la Maria d'Oranne i 15°.

3. Arbanes de la Masson d'Orange in 33°.

and waded more deeply in the blood of his subjects, than monarch had often done before; Philip, for whom his apologists had never found any defence, save that he believed it his duty to God rather to depopulate his territories than to permit a single heretic within their limits—now entered into secret negotiations with the princes of the Empire. He pledged himself, if they would confer the crown upon him, that he would withdraw the Spaniards from the Netherlands; that he would tolerate in those provinces the exercise of the Reformed religion; that he would recognize their union with the rest of the German Empire, and their consequent claim to the benefits of the Passau treaty; that he would restore the Prince of Orange "and all his accomplices" to their former possessions, dignities, and conditions, and that he would cause to be observed, throughout every realm incorporated with the Empire, all the edicts and ordinances which had been constructed to secure religious freedom in Germany.1 In brief, Philip was willing, in case the crown of Charlemagne should be promised him, to undo the work of his life, to reinstate the arch-rebel whom he had hunted and proscribed, and to bow before that Reformation whose disciples he had so long burned and butchered. So much extent and no more had that religious conviction by which he had for years had the effrontery to excuse the enormities practised in the Netherlands. God would never forgive him so long as one heretic remained unburned in the provinces; yet give him the imperial sceptre, and every heretic, without forswearing his heresy, should be purged with hyssop and become whiter than snow.

Charles IX., too, although it was not possible for him to recall to life the countless victims of the Parisian wedding,

offres qu'il leur propose, à sçavoir si les princes veulent consentir à l'eslire Empereur, il promet qu'avant que d'entrer en ceste dignité, il ostera les Espagnols du Pays-Bas; qu'il réunira le dict Pays-Bas au corps de l'Empire, qu'il remettera le Prince d'Orange et tous ses complices en leur bien et premier estat, et qu'il fera observer et maintenir dedans tous les pays de son obéissance, qui auroient esté ou seront incorporez à l'Empire, les mêmes edicts et ordonnances qui ont été establis et se gardent par le reste d'Allemagne sur le faict de la religion."—G. de Schömberg au Duc d'Anjou, Paris, 10me Feb., 1573, in Groen v. Prinsterer, Archives, etc., iv. 30*. See also the same volume, p. 2.

was yet ready to explain those murders to the satisfaction of every unprejudiced mind. This had become strictly necesary. Although the accession of either his Most Christian or Most Catholic Majesty to the throne of the Casars was a rrost improbable event, yet the humbler elective throne actually vacant was indirectly in the gift of the same powers It was possible that the crown of Poland might be secured for the Duke of Anjou. That key unlocks the complicated policy of this and the succeeding year. The Polish election is the clue to the labyrinthian intrigues and royal tergiversa tions during the period of the interregnum. Signmund Augustus, list of the Jagellons, had died on the 7th July, 1572. The prominent candidates to succeed him were the Archduke Ernest, snn of the Emperor, and Henry of Anjou The Prince of Orange was not forgotten. A strong party were in favour of compassing his election, as the most signal triumph which Protestantism could gain, but his ambitinn had not been excited by the prospect of such a prize. His nwn work required all the energies of all his life. His influence, however, was powerful, and eagerly sought by the partizans of Anjou. The Lutherans and Morayans in Poland were numerous, the Protestant party there and in Germany holding the whole balance of the election in their bands

It was difficult for the Prince to overcome his repugnance in the very name of the man whose crime had at once made Prance destorte, and highted the fair prospects under which he and his brother had, the year lefore, entered the Nitherlands. Nevertheless he was willing to listin to the state ments by which the King and his ministers endeavoured, not not from their souls, the guilt of deep deep. It was something, that the murderers now affected to exparte their offence in sackcloth and advise—it was something that, by favouring the pretensions of Anjou, and by I stenning with in dulgence to the repentance of Charles, the sege of Rockelle could be terminated, the Huguenots restored to freedom of conserence, and an alliance with a powerful nation established, by add of which the Netherlands might once rore

^{*} Compare De Thea, to the Plant to 1 1 1 1 2 , to to 1 to 44%

Bartholomew, no!"1 Count Louis told Schömberg roundly, and repeated it many times, that he must have in a very few days a categorical response, "not to consist in words alone, but in deeds, and that he could not, and would not, risk for ever the honour of his brother, nor the property, blood, and life of those poor people who favoured the cause."2

On the 23rd of March, 1573, Schömberg had an interview with Count Louis, which lasted seven or eight hours. In that interview the enterprises of the Count, "which," said Schömberg, "are assuredly grand and beautiful," were thoroughly discussed, and a series of conditions, drawn up partly in the hand of one, partly in that of the other negotiator, definitely agreed upon.3 These conditions were on the basis of a protectorate over Holland and Zeland for the King of France, with sovereignty over the other places to be acquired in the Netherlands. They were in strict accordance with the articles furnished by the Prince of Orange. Liberty of worship for those of both religions, sacred preservation of municipal charters, and stipulation of certain annual subsidies on the part of France, in case his Majesty should not take the field, were the principal features.4

Ten days later, Schömberg wrote to his master that the Count was willing to use all the influence of his family to procure for Anjou the crown of Poland,5 while Louis, having thus completed his negotiations with the agent, addressed a long and earnest letter to the royal principal.6 He painted the favourable position in which the King had been placed previously to the fatal summer of 1572. The Queen of England was then most amicably disposed towards him, and inclined to a yet closer connection with his family. The German princes were desirous to elect him King of the Romans, a dignity for which his grandfather had so fruitlessly contended. The Netherlanders, driven to despair by the tyranny of their own sovereign, were eager to throw them-selves into his arms. All this had been owing to his edict

¹ Vide Raumer. Gesch. Eur., ii. 265.

² Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., iv. 38*.

³ Ibid., iv. 43*, et seq.

⁵ Ibid., iv. 53*, 54*.

June 1st, 1573.-Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., iv. 81*-90*.

of religious pacification. How changed the jucture now I "Your Majesty to-day," said Louis, earnestly and plunh, "is near to ruin. The state, erunibling on every side and almost abandoned, is a prev to any one who wishes to suze upon it, the more so, because your Myesty, having by the late excess and by the wars previously made, endeavoured to force men's consciences, is now so destinute not only of nobulity and soldery, but of that which constitutes the strongest enlumn of the throne the love and good wishes of the lieges, that your Majesty resembles an ancient building propped up, day after day, with pides, but which it will be impossible long to prevent from falling to the earth." Certainly, here were wholesome truths told in straightfurward style.

The Count proceeded to remind the King of the joy which the "Spaniard, his mortal enemy," had conceived from the desolution of his affairs, being assured that he should, by the trnubles in I rance, be enabled to recomplish his own pur poses without striking a blow. This, he observed, had been the secret of the courtesy with which the writer himself had been treated by the Duke of Alva at the surrender of Mons Louis assured the King, in continuation, that if he persevered in these oppressive courses inwards his subjects of the new religion, there was no hope for him, and that his two brothers would, to no purpose, take their departure for I ngland and for Poland, leaving him with a difficult and dangerous war upon his hands. So long as he maintained a hostile attitude towards the Protestants in his own kin, dom, his fair words would produce no effect elsewhere "We are beginning to be yexed," said the Count, "with the manner of negotiation practised by France Men do not proceed roundly to business there, but angle with their dissimulation as with a hook "

He bluntly reminded the King of the deceit which he had

^{1 &}quot;Quelle resemble à une viel lust ment qu'en appriye tous les j'uns de que ques pelloise ma ser in on ne le peul empeubre de tomber "m George, Print", Archivos, et . (v. 85"

^{*} Letter of Coop Louis to Charles IV. June 10: 15°2. Grown v. Prants, Arch ves, e.c., iv. 85°

[&]quot; "Descourrant quient pe pricents peut ten tement et ne sertien q e de disamplatire, comme une hamegen."—I al., ir 57".

sent of the estates. How could the nation now consent to the daily impositions which were practised? Had Amsterdam and Middelburg remained true; had those important cities not allowed themselves to be seduced from the cause of freedom, the northern provinces would have been impreg-"Tis only by the Netherlands that the Netherlands are crushed," said the appeal. "Whence has the Duke of Alva the power of which he boasts, but from yourselvesfrom Netherland cities? Whence his ships, supplies, money, weapons, soldiers? From the Netherland people. Why has poor Netherland thus become degenerate and bastard? Whither has fled the noble spirit of our brave forefathers, that never brooked the tyranny of foreign nations, nor suffered a stranger even to hold office within our borders? If the little province of Holland can thus hold at bay the power of Spain, what could not all the Netherlands-Brabant, Flanders, Friesland, and the rest united—accomplish?"1 In conclusion, the estates-general were earnestly adjured to come forward like brothers in blood, and join hands with Holland, that together they might rescue the fatherland and restore its ancient prosperity and bloom.2

At almost the same time the Prince drew up and put in circulation one of the most impassioned productions which ever came from his pen. It was entitled, an "Epistle, in form of supplication, to his royal Majesty of Spain, from the Prince of Orange and the estates of Holland and Zeland."3 The document produced a profound impression throughout Christendom. It was a loyal appeal to the monarch's loyalty—a demand that the land privileges should be restored, and the Duke of Alva removed. It contained a startling picture of his atrocities and the nation's misery, and, with a few energetic strokes, demolished the pretence that these sorrows had been caused by the people's guilt. In this connection the Prince alluded to those acts of condemnation which the Governor-General had promulgated under the name of pardons, and treated with scorn the hypothesis that any crimes had been committed for Alva to forgive.

¹ Address, etc., Bor, vi. 461. ² *Ibid.*, vi. 464. ³ "Sendbrief in forme van supplicatie aen Cofingklijke Majesteit van Spangien, van wegen des Prinzen van Orangien en der Staten van Holland en Zeland," etc., etc., in *Bor*, vi. 464-472.

take God and your Majesty to witness," said the epistle, "that if we have done such misdeeds as are charged in the pardon, we neither desire nor deserne the pardon. Lake the most abject creatures which crawl the earth, we will be content to atone for nur misdeeds with our lives. We will not murniur, O merciful King, if we be seized one after another, and torn limb from limb, if it can be proved that we have committed the enmes of wheh we have been accused."

After having thus set forth the tyranny of the government and the ignocence of the people, the Prince, in his own name and that of the estates, amounced the determination at which they had arraved. "The tyrant," he continued, "would rither stain every niver and brook with one blood, and hang our bodies upon every tree in the country, than not feed to the full his vengeance, and steep himself to the lips in our mixery. Therefore we have taken up arms against the Duke of Afva and his adherents to free ourselves, our wives, and children, from his bloodthirsty hands. If he prove too strong for us, we will rather the an honourable death and leave a praiseworthy fame, than bend our neeks, and reduce our dear fullierland to such share. Herein are all our cities pledged to each other to stand every steep, to dare the utmost, to endure every possible mixery, vea, rather to set fire to all our homes, and be consumed with them into ashes together, than ever submit to the decrees of this cruel tyrint."

The happy termination of the siege of Alkmaar was fol lowed, three days afterwards, by another signal success or the part of the partiots. Count Bossu, who had constituted or collected a considerable fleet at Amsterdam, had, early in October, suited into the Augher Zee, notwitherinding the sunken wreeks and other obstructions by which it is patinots had endeadoured to tender the passage of the Y impracticable. The partiols of North Hollard had, however, not been idle, and a feet of five-and twenty vessels, trider Admiral Dirkzoos, was soon era sign in the same waters. A few skirmiches took place, Let Bossu's ships, which were langer, and provided with beavier cannon, were appared by your related for the, close quarters which the

the, shape I at, 455, 456. II

The Spanish Admiral, Hollander as he was, knew the mettle of his countrymen in a close encounter at sea, and preferred to trust to the calibre of his cannon. On the 11th October, however, the whole patriot fleet, favoured by a strong easterly breeze, bore down upon the Spanish armada, which, numbering now thirty sail of all denominations, was lying off and on in the neighbourhood of Horn and Enkhuizen. After a short and general engagement, nearly all the Spanish fleet retired with precipitation, closely pursued by most of the patriot Dutch vessels. Five of the King's ships were eventually taken, the rest effected their escape. Only the Admiral remained, who scorned to yield, although his forces had thus basely deserted him.1 His ship, the "Inquisition," 2 for such was her insolent appellation, was far the largest and bestmanned of both the fleets. Most of the enemy had gone in pursuit of the fugitives, but four vessels of inferior size had attacked the "Inquisition" at the commencement of the action. Of these, one had soon been silenced, while the other three had grappled themselves inextricably to her sides and prow. The four drifted together, before wind and tide, a severe and savage action going on incessantly, during which the navigation of the ships was entirely abandoned. scientific gunnery, no military or naval tactics were displayed or required in such a conflict. It was a life-and-death combat such as always occurred when Spaniard and Netherlander met, whether on land or water. Bossu and his men, armed in bullet-proof coats of mail, stood with shield and sword on the deck of the "Inquisition," ready to repel all attempts to board. The Hollander, as usual, attacked with pitch hoops, boiling oil, and molten lead. Repeatedly they effected their entrance to the Admiral's ship, and as often they were repulsed and slain in heaps, or hurled into the sea. The battle begun at three in the afternoon, and continued without intermission through the whole night. The vessels, drifting together, struck on the shoal called the Nek, near Wydeness. In the heat of the action the occurrence was hardly heeded. In the morning twilight, John Haring, of Horn, the hero who had

¹ Bor, vi. 456. Hoofd, viii. 326, 327. Letters of Alva to Philip, and of Bossu to Alva.—Correspondence de Philippe II., ii. 1274, and pp. 420, 421, notes.

² Bor, vi. 456. Hoofd, viii. 326.

kept one thousand soldiers at by upon the Diemer dike. clambered on board the "Inquisition, and hauled her colours down. The gallant but premature achievement cost him his life. He was shot through the body and died on the diek of the ship, which was not quite reads to strike her flag. In the course of the forenoon, however, it became obvious to I ossu that further resistance was idle. The ships were aground near a hostile coast his own fleet was hopelessly dispersed. three quarters of his eren were dead or disabled while the ressels with which he was engined were constantly recruited by borts from the shore, which brought fresh men and ammu nition and removed their killed and wounded o clock Admiral Bossu surrendered and with three hundred prisoners was carried into Holland Bossu was himself in prisoned at Horn in which city he was received on his arrival, with great demonstrations of popular hatred. The massacre of Rotterdam due to his cruelty and treachers, had not yet been forgotten or forgiven "

This victory, following so hard upon the triumph at Alkmar, was as gratifying to the patnots as it was falling to Alsa As his administration drew to a close it was marked by disaster and disgrace on land and sea. The bulliant exploits he which he had struck terror into the heart of the Netherlanders, at Jemmingen and in Brahant, had been officed by the valour of a handful of Hollanders, without discipling or experience. To the patriots, the opportunity capture of so considerable a personage as the Admird and Governor of the northern province was of great ulvaniane. cuted now escaped with the r lives. Moreover, Sain'e Aide gonde, the eloque s' patnor and confidential friend of Orange, who was taken prisoner a few weeks later in an action at Maeslandsluis, was preserved from mentable electruction by the same cause. The Prince has eved to assure the Di ke of Alva that the same measure would be c'ealt to Bossu as shou' I be meted to Sain's Aldegorde " It was therefore impressible

H v (2 v = 33)

¹ R. r. H. s. ft. Let ers of Alra and of Bona. a Wood. w. Mend on a. 214. 2 H. will, a july 32. Correspondence de PhD type. H., F. 1283. Meteren iv 85. Let vi. 422.

for the Governor-General to execute his prisoner, and he was obliged to submit to the vexation of seeing a leading rebel and heretic in his power, whom he dared not strike. Both the distinguished prisoners eventually regained their liberty.

The Duke was, doubtless, lower sunk in the estimation of all classes than he had ever been before during his long and generally successful life. The reverses sustained by his army, the belief that his master had grown cold towards him, the certainty that his career in the Netherlands was closing without a satisfactory result, the natural weariness produced upon men's minds by the contemplation of so monotonous and unmitigated a tyranny during so many years, all con-tributed to diminish his reputation. He felt himself odious alike to princes and to plebeians. With his cabinet councillors he had long been upon unsatisfactory terms. President Tisnacq had died early in the summer, and Viglius, much against his will, had been induced, provisionally, to supply his place.1 But there was now hardly a pretence of friendship between the learned Frisian and the Governor. Each cordially detested the other. Alva was weary of Flemish and Frisian advisers, however subservient, and was anxious to fill the whole council with Spaniards of the Vargas stamp. He had forced Viglius once more into office, only that, by a little delay, he might expel him and every Netherlander at the same moment. "Till this ancient set of dogmatizers be removed," he wrote to Philip, "with Viglius, their chief, who teaches them all their lessons, nothing will go right. 'Tis of no use adding one or two Spaniards to fill vacancies; that is only pouring a flask of good wine into a hogshead of vikegar; it changes to vinegar likewise.2 Your Majesty will soon be able to reorganize the council at a blow; so that Italians or Spaniards, as you choose, may entirely govern the country." 3

Such being his private sentiments with regard to his confidential advisers, it may be supposed that his intercourse with his council during the year was not like to be amicable.

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1234, p. 359, note.

2 Ibid., 1234.—"Yendo los poniendo poco à poco, los que estàn gastan à los que entran, que est como hechar un jarro de buen vino en cuba de vinagre, que lo convierte luego en vinagre."

³ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1234.

Moreover, he had kept himself, for the most part, at a distance from the seat of government. During the military operations in Holland, his head-quarters had been at Amsterdam Here, as the year drew to its close, he had become as unpopular as in Brussels. The time serving and unpatriotic burghers, who, at the beginning of the spring, set up his bust in their houses. now broke his images and tore his portraits from their walls, for it was evident that the power of his name was gone both with prince and people. Let, certainly, those herce demon strations which had formerly surrounded his person with such an atmost here of terror had not slackened or become less fre quent than heretofore. He continued to prive that he could ie barbarous, both on a grand and minute scale a preceding years he could ordain wholesale massacres with breath and superintend in person the execution of judi iduals. This was illustrated among other instances, by the ruci fate of Uttenhoose That unfortunate nobleman, who ad been taken prisoner in the course of the summer, was ceused of having been engaged in the capture of Bull and as, therefore, condemned by the Duke to be masted to leath before a slow fire. He was accordingly fistened n a chain, a few feet in length, to a stake, around thich the fagots were I gl ted. Here he was kept in slow miture for a long time resulted by the gales of the lated no ipaniards who surrounded him-until the executioner and is assistants more haniane than their superior, dequited it he section with the sexars—a mitigation of punction on which was ill received to that. The Governor had box ver, no mason to remain langer in Ams ordam. Ha len had fillen, ilkmaar was a eved and Landen-den and in its second siege to furn h so s mal a chapter to the bir n of the war-was beloat red' " was too, let lend with wh to be imperfectly suffered was to be reduced by a first har than by active operators. Den frames balles accordingly left in command of the atmed which has been af er no memorable core or was to sed as a 1 em be Telateri.

The Duke had contract as forendar as on or as

land, Hidghdinder Chin. Hand Hold, sine

amount of debt, both public and private. He accordingly, early in November, caused a proclamation to be made throughout the city by sound of trumpet, that all persons having demands upon him were to present their claims, in person, upon a specified day. During the night preceding the day so appointed, the Duke and his train very noiselessly took their departure, without notice or beat of drum.2 By this masterly generalship his unhappy creditors were foiled upon the very eve of their anticipated triumph; the heavy accounts which had been contracted on the faith of the King and the Governor, remained for the most part unpaid, and many opulent and respectable families were reduced to beggary.3 Such was the consequence of the unlimited confidence which they had reposed in the honour of their tyrant.

On the 17th of November, Don Luis de Requesens y Cuñiga, Grand Commander of Saint Jago, the appointed successor of Alva, arrived in Brussels, where he was received with great rejoicings. The Duke, on the same day, wrote to the King, "kissing his feet" for thus relieving him of his functions. There was, of course, a profuse interchange of courtesy between the departing and the newly-arrived Governors. Alva was willing to remain a little while, to assist his successor with his advice, but preferred that the Grand Commander should immediately assume the reins of office. To this Requesens, after much respectful reluctance, at length consented. On the 29th of November he accordingly took the oaths, at Brussels, as Lieutenant-Governor and Captain-General, in presence of the Duke of Aerschot, Baron Berlaymont, the President of the Council, and other functionaries.4

¹ Hoofd, viii. 329, 330.
2 Ibid.—Compare Correspondance Charles IX. and Mondoucet; Com. Roy. de l'Hist., iv. 340, sqq.—" Et craignant," says the envoy, "toutes sortes de personnes à qu'il est deu argent que se tenir ainsi toutes sortes de personnes à qu'il est deu argent que se tenir ainsi reserré ne soit ung commencement pour peu à peu se partir tout en ung coup sans dire adieu, manquant son credit en Auvers et ailleurs comme ilz voient qu'il faict. Ce que je ne puis croyre qu'il veuille fairc, et que avec la disgrace des affaires publicques qu'il laisse en mauvais estat, il veuille ainsi engager son particulier. Nous verrons," etc., etc.

³ Hoofd, viii. 329, 330. Bor, vi. 474. Hoofd, viii. 331. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1283, 1284.

1573]

departure if they dired "1 On his journey from the Netherlands, he is said to have boasted that he had caused eighteen thousand six hundred inhabitants of the provinces to be executed during the period of his government. The number of those who had perished by battle, siege, starvation, and massacre, defied computation. The Duke was well received by his royal master, and remained in favour until a new adventure of Don I redence brought father and son into disgrace. Havir, deceived and

quil re se ser le m? itter au mente pour mater sie et sicalla e i ---- il las sa le het sars energes pa set entre 1' s à ce nue je veres s'e erain e des imparture ex et demandement d'argent dont al est f et preme " -Corre pondan e Char et Il and North Com ler et Illia.

Iv 340, 51 Correspondence de Chatles IV, et Mondoner Com, I we de Illu it 343 57 mThe D he used nearly the larguage which the poet, at a I tiefs et epich was placed fa the eric hief sorther tyme.

[.] Diete it 20 etes ate l'eet ete totalice nimite ; yee -For 1 1111

[&]quot;I'v at any Her?", van 332 Berdan, h. h. ta. hie ed'Orange M.

abandoned a maid of honour, he suddenly espoused his cousin, in order to avoid that reparation by marriage which was demanded for his offence. In consequence, both the Duke and Don Frederic were imprisoned and banished, nor was Alva released till a general of experience was required for the conquest of Portugal.2 Thither, as it were with fetters on his legs, he went. After having accomplished the military enterprise entrusted to him, he fell into a lingering fever, at the termination of which he was so much reduced that he was only kept alive by milk, which he drank from a woman's breast.3 Such was the gentle second childhood of the man who had almost literally been drinking blood for seventy years. He died on the 12th of December, 1582.4

The Duke's military fame was unquestionable when he came to the provinces, and both in stricken fields and in long campaigns he showed how thoroughly it had been

deserved; yet he left the Netherlands a baffled man.

As a commander, therefore, he gained, upon the whole, no additional laurels during his long administration of the Netherlands. As a financier, he exhibited a wonderful

ignorance of the first principles of political economy.

As an administrator of the civil and judicial affairs of the country, he at once reduced its institutions to a frightful simplicity. He strode with gigantic steps over haughty statutes, and popular constitutions; crushing alike the magnates who claimed a bench of monarchs for their jury, and the ignoble artizans who could appeal only to the laws of their land. From the pompous and theatrical scaffolds of Egmont and Horn, to the nineteen halters prepared by Master Karl, to hang up the chief bakers and brewers of Brussels on their own thresholds—from the beheading of the twenty nobles on the Horse-market, in the opening of the Governor's career, to the roasting alive of Uitenhoove at its close-from the block on which fell the honoured head of Antony Straalen, to the obscure chair in which the ancient gentlewoman at Amsterdam suffered death for an act of vicarious mercy-from one year's end to another's-from

¹ Vie du Duc d'Albe, ii. Hoofd, 332.

² Vie du Duc d'Albe. Hoofd, ubi sup. (³ Von Raumer, Gesch. Europas., iii. 170.

⁴ Vie du Duc d'Albe. Hoofd, ubi sup.

the most signal to the most squalid scenes of sacrifice, the the task imposed by the sovereign

With all the blood shed at Mons, and Naarden, and Mech lin and by the Council of Lumults, daily, for six years long still crying from the ground he taxed himself with a mix placed and foolish tenderness to the people. He assured the King that when Alkmar should be taken he would not spare a living soul among its whole population and as his parting advice he recommended that every cits in the Netherlands should be burned to the green, except a few which could be occupied permanently by the royal troops On the whole, so finished a picture of a perfect and absolute tyranny has rarely been presented to mankind by history as in Alva's administration of the Aetherlands.

The tens of thousands in those miserable provinces who fell victims to the gallows, the sword the stake the firms grave, or to ham, banishment, have never been counted for those statistics of harbanty are often effaced from human record Lnough, however, is known, and enough has been recited in the preceding pages. No mode in which human beings have ever caused their fellow-creatures to suffer, was nontited from daily practice. Men women, and children old and young nobles and paupers, opulent burghers, hospital patients, lunatics, dead bodies, all were indiscriminately made in funnish food for the scaffold and the stake. Men were tortured, beheaded langed by the neck and by the less, burned before dow fires, pinched to death with red hot to its, broken upon the wheel, started, and flaved alive fluer skins, stapped from the living body, were stretched upon drums, to bedieaten in the march of their brethren to the gallows. The bodies of many who had died a natural death were estumed, and their fes eving remains hanged

Carespon lance de l'Al pre II . tt. 1206.

rangen en spannen int lærned, ber in bed en prederen ererf sipmen is in't bean en en bis hen kangen h prem hacken saesteaken met afgrije. Le tiemen en je nigen en nemnen en de restens en, so net ed cals conclete arms as as he find als cost unitaring on union, murner anument of transformation and in firmer ten Santiana. er , in Hoe sil 4".
" Send sief etc., live sa 45"

upon the gibbet, on pretext that they had died without receiving the sacrament, but in reality that their property might become the legitimate prey of the treasury.1 Marriages of long standing were dissolved by order of government, that rich heiresses might be married against their will to foreigners whom they abhorred.2 Women and children were executed for the crime of assisting their fugitive husbands and parents with a penny in their utmost need, and even for consoling them with a letter in their exile. Such was the regular. course of affairs as administered by the Blood-Council. The additional barbarities committed amid the sack and ruin of those blazing and starving cities, are almost beyond belief; unborn infants were torn from the living bodies of their mothers; women and children were violated by thousands; and whole populations burned and hacked to pieces by soldiers in every mode which cruelty, in its wanton ingenuity, could devise. Such was the administration of which Vargas affirmed, at its close, that too much mercy, "nimia misericordia," had been its ruin.5

The character of the Duke of Alva, so far as the Netherlands are concerned, seems almost like a caricature. As a creation of fiction, it would seem grotesque: yet even that hardy, historical scepticism, which delights in reversing the judgment of centuries, and in re-establishing reputations long since degraded to the dust, must find it difficult to alter this man's position. No historical decision is final; an appeal to a more remote posterity, founded upon more accurate evidence, is always valid; but when the verdict has been pronounced upon facts which are undisputed, and upon testimony from the criminal's lips, there is little chance of a reversal of the sentence. It is an affectation of philosophical candour to

in the Besançon papers, together with that compact mass of horror, long before the world under the title of "Sententien van Alva," in which a

¹ Sendbrief, etc., Bor, vi. 167. ³ *Ibid.*⁴ *Ibid.*

² *Ibid.*⁵ Meteren, iv. 86.

⁶ The time is past when it could be said that the cruelty of Alva, or the enormities of his administration, have been exaggerated by party violence. Human invention is incapable of outstripping the truth upon this subject. To attempt the defence of either the man or his measures at the present day is to convict oneself of an amount of ignorance or of bigotry against which history and argument are alike powerless. The publication of the Duke's letters in the correspondence of Simancas and

extenuate vices which are not only avowed, but claimed as virtues.

portion only of the sentences of death and lamishment pronounced by limit during his reign, have been copied from the oficial recordis—these in themselves would be a sufficient partification of all the charges ever brought by the most latter contempurary of Holian I on Flanders. Me the most latter contempurary of Holian I on Flanders. Me the measurance the "Register des Condamnes et Banna & Cause des Troubles des Pays, Bax," in three, tegether with the Records of the "Conseil des Troubles," in forty three folio volumes, in the longal Arthure at Bracket. After going through all these chronicles of impairs, the most determined interior dopleter will probably throw up the exist.

PART IV.

COMMANDER. 1573-1576.

ADMINISTRATION OF THE GRAND

Apart from this hope, however, there was little encouragement to be derived from anything positively known of the new functionary, or the policy which he was to represent. Don Luis de Requesens and Cuñiga, Grand Commander of Castile and late Governor of Milan, was a man of mediocre abilities, who possessed a reputation for moderation and sagacity which he hardly deserved. His military prowess had been chiefly displayed in the bloody and barren battle of Lepanto, where his conduct and counsel were supposed to have contributed, in some measure, to the victorious result. His administration at Milan had been characterized as firm and moderate.2 Nevertheless his character was regarded with anything but favourable eyes in the Netherlands. Men told each other of his broken faith to the Moors in Granada, and of his unpopularity in Milan, where, notwithstanding his boasted moderation, he had, in reality, so oppressed the people as to gain their deadly hatred. They complained, too, that it was an insult to send, as Governor-General of the provinces, not a prince of the blood, as used to be the case, but a simple "gentleman of cloak and sword."3

It had been industriously circulated that a change of policy was intended. It was even supposed by the more sanguine that the Duke had retired in disgrace. A show of coldness was manifested towards him on his return by the King, while Vargas, who had accompanied the Governor, was peremptorily forbidden to appear within five leagues of the court. The more discerning, however, perceived much affectation in this apparent displeasure. Saint Goard, the keen observer of Philip's moods and measures, wrote to his sovereign that he had narrowly observed the countenances of both Philip and Alva; that he had informed himself as thoroughly as possible with regard to the course of policy intended; that he had arrived at the conclusion that the royal chagrin was but dissimulation, intended to dispose the

¹ Strada, viii. 405-408. Mendoza, x. 222, 223. ² *Ibid*. Groen v. Prinsterer, iv. 259, 260.

² Ibid. Groen v. Prinsterer, iv. 259, 200. ³ Correspondance de Mondoucet et Charles IX. Com. Roy. d'Hist.

Letter of Saint Goard to Charles IX., 4th of April, 1574, Archives, etc., iv. 361.

Netherlanders to thoughts of an impossible peace, and that he considered the present metals a breathing time, in which still more active preparations might be made for crushing the rebellion. It was now evident to the world that the resolt had reached a stage in which it could be terminated only by absolute conquest or concession.

To conquer the people of the provinces, except by exterminition, seemed difficult—to judge by the seven years of execution, sieges and campaigns which had now passed without to definite result. It was, therefore, thought expedient to employ concession. The new Covernor accordingly, in case the Netherlanders would abandon every object for which they had been so heroically contending, was em powered to concede a pardon. It was expressly enjoined upon him, however, that no conciliatory measures should be adopted in which the King's absolute supremacy, and the total prohibition of every form of worship but the Roman Catholic, were not assumed as a basis. Now, as the people had been contending at least ten years long for constitu-tional rights against prerogative, and at least seven for liberty of conscience against painstry, it was easy to foretell how much effect any negotiations thus commenced were likely to produce

Yet, no doul t, in the Netherlands there was a most earnest longing for peace. The Catholic portion of the population were destrous of a reconciliation with their brethren of the new religion. The universal vengeance which had descended upon herest had not struck the heretics only. It was died cult to find a fireside, Protestant or Catholic which had not been made desolate by execution, bantshirert, or confeation. The common people and the grand seem or were take weary of the war. Not only Aerisch of and Viglius let Noncarmes and Berlaymert, were desured as the prace should be at last compassed upon liberal terms, and the Prince of Orange faily and unconditionally partioned. I were the

Letter d'Sant Louis to Chailes IV, 41 of A et 154 A chies, e c., 6 pt

^{*} Let red 14.7 IL to I on more, with March, the Correspond after the Common let Tac in 1.3. * The red I of more to I Illag, III. Galdar? Correspondence the

^{*} Le et el l'errorets in Phas, II. Galhar? Curre, relacte de 122 pt II. au 1703.

Spanish commanders had become disgusted with the monotonous butchery which had stained their swords. Julian Romero, the fierce and unscrupulous soldier upon whose head rested the guilt of the Naarden massacre, addressed several letters to William of Orange, full of courtesy and good wishes for a speedy termination of the war, and for an entire reconciliation of the Prince with his sovereign. 1 Noircarmes also opened a correspondence with the great leader of the revolt, and offered to do all in his power to restore peace and prosperity to the country. The Prince Inswered the courtesy of the Spaniard with equal, but barren, courtesy; for it was obvious that no definite result could be derived from such informal negotiations. To Noircarmes he responded in terms of gentle but grave rebuke,2 expressing deep regret that a Netherland noble of such eminence, with so many others of rank and authority, should so long have supported the King in his tyranny. He, however, expressed his satisfaction that their eyes, Nowever late, had opened to the enormous iniquity which had been practised in the country, and he accepted the offers of friendship as frankly as they had been made. Not long afterwards, the Prince furnished his correspondent with a proof of his sincerity, by forwarding to him two letters which had been intercepted,3 from certain agents of government to Alya, in which Noircarmes and others who had so long supported the King against their own country, were spoken of in terms of menace and distrust. The Prince accordingly warned his new correspondent that, in spite of all the proofs of uncompromising loyalty which he had exhibited, he was yet moving upon a dark and slippery pathway, and might even, like Egmont and Horn, find a scaffold as the end and the reward of his career. So profound was that abyss of dissimulation which constituted the royal policy towards the Netherlands, that the most unscrupulous partisans of government could only see doubt and danger with regard to their future destiny, and were sometimes only saved by an opportune death from disgrace and the hangman's hands.

Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 81-87.

² See the correspondence in Groen v. Prinst., Archives etc., iv. 301,

^{302.} Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 94, et seq.

Such, then, were the sentiments of many eminent per soniges, even among the most devoted logalists. All longed for peace, many even definitely expected it, upon the arrival of the Grand Commander. Moreover, that functionary dis-covered, at his first glance into the distributely state of the exchequer, that at least a short respite was desirable before proceeding with the interminable measures of hostility against the rebellion. If any man had been ever disposed to give Alva credit for administrative ability, such delusion must have vanished at the spectacle of confusion and bankruptey which presented itself at the termination of his government. He resolutely declined to the his successor any information whatever as to his financial position. So fir from furnishing a detailed statement, such as might naturally be expected upon so momentous an occasion, he informed the Grand Commander that even a sketch was entirely out of the question and would require more time and labour than he could then afford' He took his departure accordingly, leaving Requesers in profound ignorance as to his past accounts an ignorance in which it is probable that the Di ke himself shated to the fullest extent. His enemies stoutly maintained that, however loosely his accounts had been kept, he had been very careful to make no mustakes against himself, and that he had retired full of wealth if not of honor, from his long and terrible admin stration. His own le ters, on the enutrary, accused the king of ingratitude, own in permitting an old solder to rum himself, not only in health, but in fortune, for want of proper recon pease during an arduo is administration. At any rate it is very certain that the reb like had already been an expensive mater to the Crown The ares in the Setherlands numbered more than sixts two thousand men, eight thousand being spen and the rest Wallooms and Germans. Tons millions of dollars had already been sunk and it seemed preliable that it would require nearly the whole annual produce of the American mires to sus ain the war. The transatlar e god and

Le refference Communitariets

silver, disinterred from the depths where they had been buried for ages, were employed, not to expand the current of a healthy, life-giving commerce, but to be melted into blood. The sweat and the torture of the King's pagan subjects in the primeval forests of the New World, were made subsidiary to the extermination of his Netherland people, and the destruction of an ancient civilization. this end had Columbus discovered a hemisphere for Castile and Aragon, and the new Indies revealed their hidden treasures?

Forty millions of ducats had been spent. Six and a half millions of arrearages' were due to the army, while its current expenses were six hundred thousand a month.2 The military expenses alone of the Netherlands were accordingly more than seven millions of dollars yearly, and the mines of the New World produced, during the half century of Philip's reign, an annual average of only eleven.3 Against this constantly-increasing deficit, there was not a stiver in the exchequer, nor the means of raising one.4 The tenth penny had been long virtually extinct, and was soon to be formally abolished. Confiscation had ceased to afford a permanent revenue, and the estates obstinately refused to Such was the condition to which the unregrant a dollar. lenting tyranny and the financial experiments of Alva had reduced the country.

It was therefore obvious to Requesens that it would be useful at the moment to hold out hopes of pardon and reconciliation. He saw, what he had not at first comprehended, and what few bigoted supporters of absolutism in any age have ever comprehended, that national enthusiasm, when profound and general, makes a rebellion more expensive to the despot than to the insurgents. "Before my arrival," wrote the Grand Commander to his sovereign, "I did not understand how the rebels could maintain such considerable fleets, while your Majesty could not support a single one. It appears, however, that men who are fighting

¹ Letter of Requesens to Philip II. Correspondance de Philippe II., п. 1294. ² *Ibid*.

³ Humboldt. Essai sur la Nouvelle Espagne, iii. 428 (ed. 2nd).

Letter of Requesens. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1285.

for their lives, their firesides, their property, and their false religion, for ' rations only

new Govern vailing disorder was, not that this national enthusiasm should be respected, but that it should be decented deceived no one but himself however. He censured Noir carmes and Romero for their intermedding but held out hopes of a general pacification. He repudiated the idea of any reconciliation between the king and the Prince of Orange, but proposed at the same time a settlement of tle had not yet learned that the resolt and Wilham of Orange were one Although the Prince himself had reneatedly offered to withdraw for ever from the country. if his absence would expedite a settlement satisfactors to the provinces, there was not a patnot in the Setherlands who could contemplate his departure without despair. Moreover, they all knew better than did Requesens, the inevit able result of the pacific measures which had been daily for shados ed

The appointment of the Grand Commander was in truth a despirate attempt to deceive the Netherlanders. He approved distinctly and heartily of Aliva's policy, but wrote to the King that it was desirable to amuse the people with the idea of another and a milder scheme. He affected to believe, and perhaps really did believe, that the nation would accept the destinction of all their institutions, provided that pointent heretics were allowed to be reconciled to the Mother Church, and obstinate ones permitted to go into perpetual exilt, taking with them a small portion of their worldly goods. For leang willing, so make this last and almost incredit? concession he begged juridon's netreb of the King Heensy all tenders, and the ought not, he thought, to be too severely bitmed, for his loyal's was known. The world was aware tow of en he had risked his life for his Majesty, and how glady and how many more times hewas reads to risk! in figure.

^{*}Correspondence do 15 Jan 111, at 1224 * Phil at 1994

^{*}Corn work and to Coll some le Taiz , morers.

*Let et all a normal Corn of the de la ell form

[&]quot;A mi yarere ha territo mort a sarre " etc

religion had, after all, but very little to do with the troubles, and so he confidentially informed his sovereign. Egmont and Horn had died Catholics, the people did not rise to assist the Prince's invasion in 1568, and the new religion was only a lever by which a few artful demagogues had attempted to overthrow the King's authority.1

Such views as these revealed the measure of the new Governor's capacity. The people had really refused to rise in 1568, not because they were without sympathy for Orange, but because they were paralyzed by their fear of Alva. Since those days, however, the new religion had increased and multiplied everywhere, in the blood which had rained upon it. was now difficult to find a Catholic in Holland and Zeland who was not a government agent.2 Yet the Grand Commander persuaded himself that religion had little or nothing to do with the state of the Netherlands. Nothing more was necessary, he thought, or affected to think, in order to restore tranquillity, than once more to spread the net of a general amnesty.

The Duke of Alva knew better. That functionary, with whom, before his departure from the provinces, Requesens had been commanded to confer, distinctly stated his opinion that there was no use of talking about pardon. Brutally, but candidly, he maintained that there was nothing to be done but to continue the process of extermination. It was necessary, he said, to reduce the country to a dead level of unresisting misery, before an act of oblivion could be securely laid down as the foundation of a new and permanent order of society." He had already given his advice to his Majesty, that every town in the country should be burned to the ground, except those which could be permanently occupied by the royal troops. The King, however, in his access of clemency at the appointment of a new administration, instructed the Grand Commander not to resort to this measure unless it should become strictly necessary.4 Such were the opposite opinions of the old and new Governors with regard to the pardon. The learned Viglius sided with Alva, although manifestly

Letter of Requesens. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1293.
 Letter of Prince of Orange, 28th September, 1574, in Groen v.

Prinst., Archives, v. 73.

Correspondance de Phihppe II., ii. 1293. 4 *Ibid.*, ii. 1287.

against his will. "It is both the Duke's opinion and my own," wrote the Commander, "that Vighus does not dare to express his real opinion, and that he is secretly desirous of an arrange ment with the rebels " With a good deal of inconsistency, ther Governor was offended, not only with those who opposed his plans, but with those who favoured them. He was angry with Vighus, who, at least numinally, disapproved of the pardon, and with Noirearmes, Aerselint, and others, who manifested a wish for a nacification. Of the chief characteristic ascribed to the people by Julius C

farours nor mures, the mander's ommon, had

never forget injunes, but their memory, said be, was so good that they recollected many which they had never received.

On the whole, however, in the embarrassed condition of

affurs, and while waiting for further supplies, the Communiter was secretly disposed in try the effect of a pardon. The object was to deceive the people and to gain time, for there was no intention of conceding liberty of conscience, of with drawing foreign troops, or of assembling the states general It was however, not possible to apply these hypocritical measures of conciliation immediately. The war was in full career and could not be arrested even in that wintry season The patnets held Mondragon closely bevieged in Middelburg," the last point in the Isle of Walcheren which held for the Kine There was a considerable treasure in money and merchandise shut up in that city, and, moreover, so desersing and distinguished an officer as Mondragon could not be abandoned to his fate. At the same time, fartine was pressing him sorely, and, by the end of the year, garnson and town people had nothing but rats, ence, dogs, cats, and such repulsive substitutes for food, to support life withal. It was necessary to take ininiediate measures to releve the place

On the other hand, the situation of the patrois was not very encouraging. Their superiority on the sea was un questionable, for the Hollanders and Zelanders were the ber

Compley Line de la figur II (iii 1203)
 Italy in 1204, and possible step
 Description
 Description
 Legar of the la blumbar in Green a finitely Arthres, etc., in TT. 174.

sailors in the world, and they asked of their country no payment for their blood but thanks. The land forces, however, were usually mercenaries, who were apt to mutiny at the commencement of an action if, as was too often the case, their wages could not be paid. Holland was entirely cut in twain by the loss of Harlem and the leaguer of Leyden, no communication between the dissevered portions being possible, except with difficulty and danger.1 The estates, although they had done much for the cause, and were prepared to do much more, were too apt to wrangle about economical details. They irritated the Prince of Orange by huxtering about subsidies to a degree which he could hardly brook.2 He had strong hopes from France. Louis of Nassau had held secret interviews with the Duke of Alençon and the Duke of Anjou, now King of Poland, at Blamont.3 Alençon had assured him secretly, affectionately, and warmly, that he would be as sincere a friend to the cause, as were his two royal brothers. The Count had even received one hundred thousand livres in hand, as an earnest of the favourable intentions of France,4 and was now busily engaged, at the instance of the Prince, in levying an army in Germany for the relief of Leyden and the rest of Holland, while William, on his part, was omitting nothing, whether by representations to the estates or by secret foreign missions and correspondence, to further the cause of the suffering country.3

At the same time, the Prince dreaded the effect of the promised pardon. He had reason to be distrustful of the general temper of the nation when a man like Sainte Aldegonde, the enlightened patriot and his own tried friend, was influenced, by the discouraging and dangerous position in which he found himself, to abandon the high ground upon which they had both so long and so firmly stood. Sainte Aldegonde had been held a strict prisoner since his capture at Maeslandsluis, at the close of Alva's administration. It

¹ Bor, vii. 478.

² Bor, vii. Kluit, Hist. Holl. Staatsreg., vi., Hoofd, ix. and Bijlage,

i. 401-415. Groen v. Prinst., iv. 263-278. De Thou, t. vii. liv. vii. 28-37.

Hoofd, ix. 343, 344.

⁴ Archives et Correspondance, iv. 281.

⁵ Bor, viii. 479, 488, 490. Hoofd, ix. 334, 344. ⁶ Bor, vii. 481, 482. Archives et Correspondance, iv. 237.

was, no doubt, a predicament attended with much keen suffering and positive danger. It had hitherto been the uniform policy of the government to kill all prisoners, of whatever rank. Accordingly, some had been drowned, some had been hanged, some beheaded, some poisoned in their dunceons-all had been murdered. This had been Alva's course. The Grand Commander also highly approved of the system, but the capture of Count Bossu by the namots had necessitated a suspension of such rigour. It was certain that Bossu's head would fall as soon as Sainte Alde gonde's, the Prince having expressly warned the government of this inevitable result. Notwithstanding that security, however, for his eventual restoration to liberty, a Netherland rubel in a Spanish prison could hardly feel himself at case. There were so many foot marks into the cave and not a single one coming forth. Yet it was not singular, however, that the Prince should read with regret the somewhat insincere easuistry with which Sainte Aldegonde sought to persuade himself and his fellow-countrymen that a reconciliation with the manarch was desirable, even upon unworthy terms. He was somewhat shocked that so valuant and eloquent a supporter of the Reformation should coolly express his opinion that the King would probably refuse liberty of conscience to the Netherlanders, but would, no doubt, permit heretics to gn into banishment "Perhaps, after we have gone into exile," added Sam'e Aldegonde, almost with Juseness, "God may tive us an opportunits of dning such good service to the king, that he will lend us a more favourable car, and, perad senture, permit our teturn to the country."

The most pressing matter, upon the Grand Commanders arrival, was obstanted in relieve the city of Middelburg. Mondragon, after so reaunch a decroce, would soon be chilged to captulate, unless he should promptly receive supplies. Requesens, accordingly, collected sevents five styral Representation which were placed normally under the command of Admiral de Girnes, but in reality under that Claim Roy exist. Another feet of them yessels had be-

Compate and 102 gell . Last int

Server of Server of Secret Aldready, and

^{100 - -}

le Teal, L. 25, er my

assembled at Antwerp under Sancho d'Avila. Both, amply freighted with provisions, were destined to make their way to Middelburg by the two different passages of the Honde and the Eastern Scheld.' On the other hand, the Prince of Orange had repaired to Flushing to superintend the operations of Admiral Boisot, who already, in obedience to his orders, had got a powerful squadron in readiness at that place. Late in January, 1574, d'Avila arrived in the neighbourhood of Flushing, where he awaited the arrival of Romero's fleet. United, the two commanders were to make a determined attempt to reinforce the starving city of Middelburg.2 At the same time, Governor Requesens made his appearance in person at Bergen-op-Zoom to expedite the departure of the stronger fleet, but it was not the intention of the Prince of Orange to allow this expedition to save the city. The Spanish generals, however valiant, were to learn that their genius was not amphibious, and that the Beggars of the Sea were still invincible on their own element, even if their brethren of the land had occasionally quailed.

Admiral Boisot's fleet had already moved up the Scheld and taken a position nearly opposite to Bergen-op-Zoom.4 On the 20th of January the Prince of Orange, embarking from Zierick Zee, came to make them a visit before the impending action. His galley, conspicuous for its elegant decorations, was exposed for some time to the artillery of the fort, but providentially escaped unharmed. He assembled all the officers of his armada, and, in brief but eloquent language, reminded them how necessary it was to the salvation of the whole country that they should prevent the city of Middelburg—the key to the whole of Zeland, already upon the point of falling into the hands of the patriots-from being now wrested from their grasp. On the sea, at least, the Hollanders and the Zelanders were at home. The officers and men, with one accord, rent the air with their cheers. They swore that they would shed every drop of blood in their veins but they would sustain the Prince and the country; and they solemnly vowed not only to serve, if necessary, without wages, but to sacrifice all that they possessed in the

¹ Bor, vii. 479. Hoofd, ix. 335. ² Bor, Hoofd, Meteren, ubi sup. Meteren, v. 38.

⁴ Bor, vii. 479-3 Mendoza, xi. 225. Bor, Meteren, ubi sup.

world rather than abandan the cause of their fatherland. Having by his presence and his language aroused their valour to so high a putch of enthusiasm, the Prince departed for Delft, to make arrangements to drive the Spamards from the siege of Leyden.

On the 20th of January, the fleet of Romero sailed from Bergen, disposed in three divisions, each numbering twentyfive vessels of different sizes. As the Grand Commander stood on the dyke of Schakerloo to witness the denatture, a general valute was fired by the fleet in his honour, but with most unfortunate augury. The discharge, by some accident, set fire to the magazines of one of the ships, which blew up with a temble explosion, even soul on board perishing. The expedition, nevertheless, continued its way. Opposite Romerswael, the fleet of Boisot awaited them, drawn up in bittle array." As an indication of the spirit which animated this hardy race, it may be mentioned that Schot, captain of the flag ship, had been left on shore, dying of a pestilential fever. Admiral Borsot had appointed a Unishinger, Khaf Rlaafroon, in his place. Just before the action, Lowever, Schot, "scarecly able to blow a feather from his mouth," staggered on board his ship, and claimed the command. There was no disputing a precedency which I e had risen from his death hed to vindicate. There was however, a short discussion, as the enemy's fleet approached, between these rival captains regarding the manner in which the Spanisrds should be received. Khafzoon was of opinion that most of the men should go below till after the enemy a first discharge. Schot insisted that all should remain on deck, ready to grapple with the Spanish fleet, and to braid them without the kast delay. The sentiment of Schot pre-

A Levier of the In Al ofter in Archaes de In March d'Orang, in pp.—11 Elleberg remarging les selfais pre fros due nome o corespondates qualité avect présid anniera à ma la c. pas, ma la deux ser pourse de lini angle, et que plantité par d'alan termé la crose, since a vert mie la de servicin a la naissa incresar ma? quasir à exchanger tent en collègique de controlle avecte.

P Archies della Massen d'Orange, in 24% et ser. P Hoddi in, Jung Dong vin 4750. Need van au 2050. Meistern, vo

^{*} If x f t, is, 33%—"Zen basit als hir era solve sandra in old blacen kin quan met nich angemesen kubasen werder if kiberpa".

vailed, and all hands stood on deck, ready with boarding-

pikes and grappling-irons.1

The first division of Romero came nearer, and delivered its first broadside, when Schot and Klaafzoon both fell mortally wounded. Admiral Boisot lost an eye,2 and many officers and sailors in the other vessels were killed or wounded. This was, however, the first and last of the cannonading. As many of Romero's vessels as could be grappled with in the narrow estuary found themselves locked in close embrace with their enemies. A murderous hand-to-hand conflict succeeded. Battle-axe, boarding-pike, pistol, and dagger were the weapons. Every man who yielded himself a prisoner was instantly stabbed and tossed into the sea by the remorseless Zelanders. Fighting only to kill, and not to plunder, they did not even stop to take the gold chains which many Spaniards were on their necks. It had, however, been obvious from the beginning that the Syanish fieet were not likely to achieve that triumph over the patriots which was necessary before they could relieve Middelburg. The battle continued a little longer; but after fifteen ships had been taken and twelve hundred royalists slain, the remainder of the enemy's fleet retreated into Bergen." Romero himself, whose ship had grounded, sprang out of a port-hole and swam ashore, followed by such of his men as were able to imitate him. He landed at the very feet of the Grand Commander, who, wet and cold, had been standing all day upon the dyke of Schakerloo, in the midst of a pouring rain, only to witness the total defeat of his armada at last." "I told your excellency," said Romera coelly, as he climbed, all dripping, on the bank, "that I was a landfighter, and not a sailor. If you were to give me the command of a hundred fleets. I believe that none of them would fare better than this has done."3 The Governor and his discomfitted, but philosophical lieutenant, then returned to Bergen, and thence to Brussels, acknowledging that the city of

² Mil Poz. vii. 479. 1 Hoofd, with such

³ Meteren, v. So. Hooki, in 33h Fon vil 479. Mendern al

⁴ Cabrera, x. 780. Hooli, Meteren, all saft 4 Vide Excellencia bien sabia que yo no era marinero sino infante, no me entregue mas armadas, porque si ciento me diesse es de temer que las pierda todas."—Merdina, xi. 227.

Middelburg must full, while Sancho d'Avila, herring of the disaster which had befallen his countrymen brought his fleet, with the greatest expedition, back to Antwerp the gallant Mondragon was abandoned to his fat.

That fate could no longer be protracted. The city of Middelburg had reached and passed the starvation point.

oration, Orange iditional that he Middel saarden, that he ish with

every soldier and burgher in the flames together, rather than nhandon himself to the enemy s mercy. The Prince knew that the brave Spaniard was entirely capable of executing his threat. He granted honourable conditions, which on the 18th Tebrury, were drawn up in five articles, and signed It was agreed that Mondragon and his troops should leave the place, with their arms ammunition and all their per sonal property. The current who remained were in take eath of fidelity in the Prince, as stadholder for his Majesty and were to may besides a subsidy of three hundred thousand florins. Minidragon was furthermore to procure the discharge of Sainte Aldegonde and of four other prisoners of rink, or, failing in the attemp, was to return within two months, and constitute himself in wher of war. The Catholic prie s were to take away from the city none of their property but their clo her. In accordance with this ca, tulation, Mondragon, and these who wished to accompany him left the cia on the 21st of February, and were conveyed to the Flemish store at Neur It will be seen in the sequel that the Governor neither granted him the release of the five prisoners, nor permitted him to return, according to his

the endang and Mererine et a Horel high.

Ministron a teneric, dat hy en de enter de las ere tre
high plassen and tend enden e elem de lessa mererine val
and his tendelas menne. Hen haalm ""-Horel is 133.

^{*} I w a 1 450. Meteren, a Ky. Ven a 26 226. * Re, Meteren Hadt Vendun, nie 200 Ca ven, a 251

parole. A few days afterwards, the Prince entered the city, reorganized the magistracy, received the allegiance of the inhabitants, restored the ancient constitution, and liberally remitted two-thirds of the sum in which they had been mulcted.¹

The Spaniards had thus been successfully driven from the Isle of Walcheren, leaving the Hollanders and Zelanders masters of the sea-coast. Since the siege of Alkmaar had been raised, however, the enemy had remained within the territory of Holland. Leyden was closely invested, the country in a desperate condition, and all communication between its different cities nearly suspended.² It was comparatively easy for the Prince of Orange to equip and man his fleets. The genius and habits of the people made them at home upon the water, and inspired them with a feeling of superiority to their adversaries. It was not so upon land. Strong to resist, patient to suffer, the Hollanders, although terrible in defence, had not the necessary discipline or experience to meet the veteran legions of Spain, with confidence, in the open field. To raise the siege of Leyden, the main reliance of the Prince was upon Count Louis, who was again in Germany. In the latter days of Alva's administration, William had written to his brothers, urging them speedily to arrange the details of a campaign, of which he forwarded them a sketch.3 As soon as a sufficient force had been levied in Germany, an attempt was to be made upon Maestricht. If that failed, Louis was to cross the Meuse, in the neighbourhood of Stochem, make his way towards the Prince's own city of Gertruidenberg, and thence make a junction with his brother in the neighbourhood of Delft. They were then to take up a position together between Harlem and Leyden. In that case it seemed probable that the Spaniards would find themselves obliged to fight at a great disadvantage, or to abandon the country. "In short," said the Prince, "if this enterprise be arranged with due diligence and discretion, I hold it as the only certain means for putting a speedy end to the war, and for driving these devils of Spaniards out of the country, before the Duke of Alva has time to raise another army to support them."4

¹ Bor, vii. 481. ² Ibid., vii. 478. ³ Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 246, 247, seq. ¹ Ibid.

In pursuance of this plan, Louis had been actively engaged all the earlier part of the winter in levying troops and raising supplies. He had been assisted by the French princes with considerable sums of mones, as an earnest of what he was in future to expect from that source. He had made an unsuccessful attempt to effect the capture of Requestrs on his was to take the kovernment of the Netherlands. He had then passed to the frontier of I rance, where he had held his int portant interview with Cathatine de Medici and the Duly of Anjou, if in on the point of departure to ascend the throne of Poland. He had received liberal presents, and still more liberal promises. Amou had assured him that he would go as far as any of the German princes in rendering active and sincere assistance to the Protestant cause in the Netherlands. The Due d Alengon -soon, in his brother's absence, to suc ceed to the chieftainship of the new alliance between the "politiques" and the Huguenots had also pressed his hand, whispering in his cur, as he did so, that the government of I rance now belonged to lum, as it had recently done to Amou, and that the Prince trusht reckon upon his friends in with entir security'

These fine words, which cost norling when whispered in secret, were not devined to fructify into a sert in the harvest, for the mutual jealouss of France and I redund, lest either should acquire ascendance in the Netherlands, nade both governments predignt of promises, while the com mon fear entertained by it mo the jower of Spain rendered both law, and, moneter, and misch revorsalhes. Co in John, how ever, was indefaugable in irranging the frances of the proposed espection, and in leving contributions among his numericus retained and on Angolis passage from Pelands, to acquir if for him ell two thousand Germaniand French carelin, with o had served to essent that Princ, and who, he by now thrown out of employe est, were glad to have a job effect their living general who was the pit to be a in fined. An three thousand of carely and is a treasand for were according

I Letter of Court lacas - Promid for an Anthony evan mil

[·] Heeft a 334 "eden at #31

sembled,1 from those ever-swarming nurseries of mercenary warriors, the smaller German states. With these, towards the end of February, Louis crossed the Rhine in a heavy snow-storm, and bent his course towards Maestricht. All the three brothers of the Prince accompanied this little army, besides Duke Christopher, son of the Elector Palatine.²

Before the end of the month the army reached the Meuse, and encamped within four miles of Maestricht, on the opposite side of the river.3 The garrison, commanded by Montesdocca, was weak, but the news of warlike preparations in Germany had preceded the arrival of Count Louis. Requesens, feeling the gravity of the occasion, had issued orders for an immediate levy of eight thousand cavalry in Germany, with a proportionate number of infantry. At the same time he had directed Don Bernardino de Mendoza, with some companies of cavalry, then stationed in Breda, to throw himself without delay into Maestricht. Don Sancho d'Avila was entrusted with the general care of resisting the hostile expedition. That general had forthwith collected all the troops which could be spared from every town where they were stationed, had strengthened the cities of Antwerp, Ghent, Nimwegen, and Valenciennes, where there were known to be many secret adherents of Orange; and with the remainder of his forces had put himself in motion, to oppose the entrance of Louis into Brabant, and his junction with his brother in Holland. Braccamonte had been despatched to Leyden, in order instantly to draw off the forces which were besieging the city. Thus Louis had already effected something of importance by the very news of his approach.4

Meantime the Prince of Orange had raised six thousand infantry, whose rendezvous was the Isle of Bommel. He was disappointed at the paucity of the troops which Louis had been able to collect, but he sent messengers immediately to him, with a statement of his own condition, and with directions to join him in the Isle of Bommel, as soon as Maestricht

¹ Meteren, v. 90.—Compare Bor, vii. 489; Mendoza, xi. 231.

² Bor, vii. 489, 490. ³ Bor, vii. 490. Mendoza, xi. 231, 233. Archives et Correspondance,

Mendoza, xi. 232, 233. Hoofd, ix. 344. Bor, vii. 488-490. teren, v. 90.

should be reduced. It was, however, not in the destiny of Louis in reduce Maestricht His expedition had been marked with disaster from the beginning. A dark and threatening prophecy had, even before its commencement, envirapped Louis, his brethren, and his little army in a funeral pall More than a thousand of his men had deserted before he reached the Meuse. When he encamped, opposite Maestricht, he found the river neither frozen nor open, the see obstructing the navigation, but being too weak for the weight of an arms While hearts thus delayed and embarrassed. Mendoza arrived in the city with reinforcements. It seemed already necessary for Louis to abandon his hopes of Maestneht, but he was at least desirous of crossing the meet in that neighbourhood in onler to effect his junction with the Prince at the carliest possible moment. While the stream was still encumbered with ice, however the enemy removed all the boats. On the 3rd of March Avila arrived with a large body of troops at Maestricht, and on the 18th Mendoza crossed the tiver in the night, giving the patriots so severe an er arrisa is, that seven hundred were killed, at the expense of only seven of his own party. Harassed but not dispinted, by these disasters, Louis broke up his camp on the 21st, and took a position fifth r down the river, at Fauquemont and Gulpen castles in the Duchy of Limburg. On the 3nl of April, Braceamonte arrived at Macericht, with twenty five companies of Spaniards and three of cavalry, while on the same day Mondranon reached the seene of action with his sixteen companies of seterans

It was now obvious in Louis, not only that he should not take Maesincht, but that his eventual junction with 1 s brother was at least doubtful, every sold or who could possibly be spared seeming in motion to appear his progress. He was to be a re, notice of numbered, but the enemy was increasing and his own force of minimizing dails. Moreover, the Spaniant's were highly it scipt and and expenenced treater. while his own sold ers were mercenaries, afrea to clar orous and insubordinate. On the Sibist April be again she ed his entanti ment and took his course along the rate lunk of the

Menter & us 91

t file, a light. Ment la lalight. I Menten an ann aghi agri Hillian tabil i e le la an

just returning the defiance, and preparing a general onset, when the Seigneur de Hierges and Baron Chevreaux arrived on the field. They brought with them a reinforcement of more than a thousand men, and the intelligence that Valdez was on his way with nearly five thousand more. As he might be expected on the following morning, a short deliberation was held as to the expediency of deferring the action. Count Louis was at the head of six thousand foot and two thousand cavalry. Avila mustered only four thousand infantry and not quite a thousand horse.2 This inferiority would be changed on the morrow into an overwhelming superiority. Meantime, it was well to remember the punishment endured by Aremberg at Heiliger-Lee, for not waiting till Meghem's arrival. This prudent counsel was, however, very generally scouted, and by none more loudly than by Hierges and Chevreaux, who had brought the intelligence. It was thought that at this juncture nothing could be more indiscreet than discretion. They had a wary and audacious general to deal with. While they were waiting for their reinforcements, he was quite capable of giving them the slip. He might thus effect the passage of the stream and that union with his brother which had been thus far so successfully prevented. This reasoning prevailed,3 and the skirmishing at the trench was renewed with redoubled vigour, an additional force being sent against it. After a short and fierce struggle it was carried, and the Spaniards rushed into the village, but were soon dislodged by a larger detachment of infantry, which Count Louis cent to the rescue. The battle now became general at this point.

Nearly all the patriotic infantry were employed to defend the post; nearly all the Spanish infantry were ordered to assail it. The Spaniards, dropping on their knees, according to custom, said a Paternoster and an Ave Maria, and then rushed, in mass, to the attack. After a short but sharp conflict, the trench was again carried, and the patriots com-pletely routed. Upon this, Count Louis charged with all his cavalry upon the enemy's horse, which had hitherto

Mendoza, ubi sup. Hoofd, ix. 348.

Mendoza, xi. 240. Bentivoglio, viii. 141.

Hoofd, ix. 348. Bentivoglio, Mendoza, ubi sup. Bor, vii. 491,

Mendoza, xi. 242. Hoofd. 492. Cabrera, x. 784, 785.

remained motionless. With the first shock the mounted arquebusiers of Schenk, constituting the sanguard, were broken, and fled in all directions. So great was their panic, as Louis drove them before him, that they never stopped till they had swum or been drowned in the river, the sur vivors carrying the news to Grave and to other cities that the royalists had been completely routed. This was, however, very far from the truth. The patnot cavalry, mostly cara luncers, wheeled after the first discharge, and retired to reload their pieces but before they were ready for another attack, the Spanish lancers and the German black troopers, who had all remained firm, set upon them with great spirit. A fierce, bloods, and confused action succeeded, in which the patriols were completely overthrown.

Count Louis, finding that the day was lost, and his army cut to pieces, railied round him a little hand of troopers, among whom were his brother Count Henry, and Duke Christopher, and together they made a final and desperate than e' It was the last that was ever seen of them on earth. They all went down together, in the midst of the fight, and were never heard of more. The lattle terminated. as usual in those conflicts of mutual Latred, in a homble butchers, hardly any of the patriot army being left in tell the tale of their disaster. At least four thousand were killed, including those who were slain on the field, those who were suffecated in the marshes or the river, and those who were burned in the farm houses where they had taken refuse." It was uncertain which of those various modes of death had been the lot of Count Louis, his brother, and his friend The misters was never solved. They had, probably, all died as the feld, but, anyyed of their clothing, with their faces tramfied a son his the Looks of bosses, it was not pool by to divinguely them from the less illustrious dead. It was the of mon of many that they had been drowned in the men, of others, that they had been harned. There was a same

¹ Ment en al 247244 Books in 31% Merren, e os 2 Books is 35% 368 Menthes at 244 Jen 107 and 446. 3 Bents of 8 and 148 occumente Calenda in 78178 , Menthen that where they me to Mendry het bey elitera tames

were himly serve of the to Dr. h has ween about to ab which " Vertern, v. 51. how am 471, 472. H all her ring any adven-

tale that Louis, bleeding but not killed, had struggled forth from the heap of corpses where he had been thrown, had crept to the river-side, and, while washing his wounds, had been surprised and butchered by a party of rustics. The story was not generally credited, but no man knew, or was destined to learn, the truth.

A dark and fatal termination to this last enterprise of Count Louis had been anticipated by many. In that superstitious age, when emperors and princes daily investigated the future, by alchemy, by astrology, and by books of fate, filled with formulæ, as gravely and precisely set forth as algebraical equations; when men of every class, from monarch to peasant, implicitly believed in supernatural portents and prophecies, it was not singular that a somewhat striking appearance, observed in the sky some weeks previously to the battle of Mookerheyde, should have inspired many persons with a shuddering sense of impending evil.

Early in February five soldiers of the burgher guard at Utrecht, being on their midnight watch, beheld in the sky

The Walloon historian, occasionally cited in these pages, has a more summary manner of accounting for the fate of these distinguished personages. According to his statement, the leaders of the Protestant forces dined and made merry at a convent in the neighbourhood upon Good Friday, five days before the battle, using the sacramental chalices at the banquet, and mixing consecrated wafers with their wine. punishment for this sacrilege, the army was utterly overthrown, and the devil himself flew away with the chieftains, body and soul.

"Oires Dieu permit que cinq jours après ne restait de leurs princi-paulx chess ung seul vif; que plus est entre les corps morts plusieurs de ces seigneurs n'ont été retrouvés nonobstant toute curieuse recherche; à ceste cause l'on creut du comenchement que ils estoient eschappés, et depuis que ils étoient emportés en corps et en âme."-Renom de France,

MS., ii. c. xxx.

¹ Francisci Haraei Ann. Tumult. Belg., iii. 203. Strada alludes to

the story without confirming it.—viii. 383.

The conjuring books, in many folio volumes, containing the tables of wizard logarithms, by which Augustus of Saxony was accustomed to steer his course upon the sea of life, and by the aid of which he considered himself competent to ascertain all future events, and their effect upon his destiny, may still be seen in the library of Dresden. No doubt the Elector consulted these tables most anxiously at the time when Count Louis and Duke Christopher were marching towards the Meuse. With still more intensity he studied their combinations when the projected marriage between the Prince of Orange and Charlotte of Bourbon was first announced to him.

above them the representation of a furious battle. The sky was extremely dark, except directly over their heads, where, for a space equal in extent to the length of the city, and in breadth to that of an ordinary chamber, two armies, in battle array, were seen advineing upon each other. The one moved rapidly up from the north west, with banners wiving, spears fixthing, trumpets sounding, accompanied by heavy utilities and by squadrinis of eavity. The other came slowly forward from the south-east, as if from an entrenched camp, to encounter their assailants. There was a fierce action for a few moments, the shouts of the combatants, the heavy discharge of cannon, the rattle of musketty, the tramp of heavy timed foot solders, the rush of cavalry, being distinctly heard. The firmament trembled with the shock of the contending hosts, and was laind with the rapid discharges of their artillery. After a short, facre engagement, the north western army was leaten hack in disorder, but rafled again, after a breatting time, formed again into solid column, and again advanced.

time, formed again into solid column and again advanced. Their foce arraved as the witnesses aftirmed, in a squar and closely serined grove of spears and muskets, again waited the attack. Once more the aerial cohorts closed upon each other, all the signs and sounds of a desperate encounter being distinctly recognized by the cager witnesses. The struggle scemed but short. The lances of the south-eastern army seemed to snap "fishe heigh stalks," while, that firm columns all want down together in riass, hencath the one-tift their remaines. The overthrow was complete, victors and vanquished had faded, the clear blue space, surrounded by black clouds, was empty, when suddenly its whole extent, where the conflict had so late's rigod, was streaked with blood, flowing athwart the sky in b oud crimson rireary, no was it till the five witnesses had fully watched and pondered over these portents that the six on entitely vanished.

so impressed were the grave magistrates of Utrecht with the account given pest day by the sent nels, that a formal chain mattern of the circumstances was made, the deposition of each winess, under outh, duly recorded, and a vast deal

^{1 16 +} m 472

^{*} Hot I had at relacation or permising that he could hard your tidence was no the magnitus on of Litter's considered the a frect work) of a farmal tries option.—is 352.

of consultation of soothsayers' books and other auguries employed to elucidate the mystery. It was universally considered typical of the anticipated battle between Count Louis and the Spaniards. When, therefore, it was known that the patriots, moving from the south-east, had arrived at Mookerheyde, and that their adversaries, crossing the Meuse at Grave, had advanced upon them from the north-west, the result of the battle was considered inevitable; the phantom battle of Utrecht its infallible precursor.

Vague rumours of the catastrophe had spread far and wide. It was soon certain that Louis had been defeated, but, for a long time, conflicting reports were in circulation as to the fate of the leaders. The Prince of Orange, meanwhile, passed days of intense anxiety, expecting hourly to hear from his brothers, listening to dark rumours, which he refused to credit and could not contradict, and writing letters day after day, long after the eyes which should have read the

friendly missives were closed.1

The victory of the King's army at Mookerheyde had been rendered comparatively barren by the mutiny which broke forth the day after the battle.² Three years' pay were due to the Spanish troops, and it was not surprising that upon this occasion one of those periodic rebellions should break forth, by which the royal cause was frequently so much weakened, and the royal governors so intolerably perplexed. These mutinies were of almost regular occurrence, and attended by as regular a series of phenomena. The Spanish troops, living so far from their own country, but surrounded by their women, and constantly increasing swarms of children, constituted a locomotive city of considerable population, permanently established on a foreign soil. It was a city walled in by bayonets, and still further isolated from the people around by the impassable moat of mutual hatred. It was a city obeying the articles of war, governed by despotic authority, and yet occasionally revealing, in full force, the

¹ Archives et Correspondance, iv. 372.

² Bor, vii. 494, et seq. Meteren, v. 91. Hoofd, ix. 352-359. Mendoza, xi., xii. 246, 247. Bentivoglio, viii. 146-149. The account given by the last-mentioned historian is the clearest and most elegantly written account of this mutiny which exists. As a specimen of a system, from which many important consequences were destined to flow at different periods, the subject demands especial attention.

irrepressible democratic element. At periods which could almost be calculated, the military populace were wont to rise upon the privileged classes, to deprive them of office and liberty, and to set up in their place commanders of their own election. A governor in-chief, a sergeant major, a board of councillors, and various other functionaries, were chosen by acclamation and universal suffrage. The I letto, or chief officer thus appointed, was clothed with supreme power, but forbidden in exercise it. He was surrounded by councillors. who watched his every motion, read all his correspondence, and assisted at all his conferences, while the councillors were themselves narrowly watched by the commonalty movements were however, in general, marked by the most exemplary order Anarchy became a system of government. rebellion enacted and enforced the strictest rules of disci pline, theft, drunkenness, violence to women, were severely numshed ' As soon as the mutiny broke forth, the first ubject was to take possession of the nearest city, where the I lettn was usually established in the Town House, and the soldiers quartered upon the citizens. Nothing in the shape of food or lodging was too good for these marauders. Men who had high for years on camp rations-coarse knaves who had held the plough till compelled to handle the muske'-now slept in time linen, and demanded from the trembling hunghers the daintiest wands. They are the land hare, like a swarm of loct six. 'Chickens and pannelges," says the thrifts chronicler of Antwerp, "capons and I beaunts, hares and rabbu's, two kinds of wines - for sauces, capers and olifes, citrons and oranges, sprees and sweetn cats. wheaten breid for their dogs, and even wine to wash the feet of their liones; " "-such was the entertainment demanded and obtained in the mulinous troops. They were very willing both to enjoy the luxury of this forage, and to and ce the critisms, from weatiness of a fielding compelled hospital via to sal mit to a taxation lin which the risi tary old mis in git bell juildired. A city thus occup ed was at the revers of a fore in sold ers,

A cut if its occupied was also ments of a fore in sold ens, which had repressed all authority but that of so furgoord law. The fungs offers were degraded, perhaps munified, while three docen to supply their places had only a normal

control. The Eletto, day by day, proclaimed from the balcony of the Town House the latest rules and regulations. If satisfactory, there was a clamour of applause; if objectionable, they were rejected with a tempest of hisses, with discharges of musketry. The Eletto did not govern; he was a dictator who could not dictate, but could only register decrees. If too honest, too firm, or too dull for his place, he was deprived of his office and sometimes of his life. Another was chosen in his room, often to be succeeded by a series of others, destined to the same fate. Such were the main characteristics of those formidable mutinies, the result of the unthriftiness and dishonesty by which the soldiery engaged in these interminable hostilities were deprived of their dearlyearned wages. The expense of the war was bad enough at best, but when it is remembered that of three or four dollars sent from Spain, or contributed by the provinces for the support of the army, hardly one reached the pockets of the soldier, the frightful expenditure which took place may be imagined. It was not surprising that so much peculation should engender revolt.

The mutiny which broke out after the defeat of Count Louis was marked with the most pronounced and inflammatory of those symptoms. Three years' pay was due to the Spaniards, who, having just achieved a signal victory, were disposed to reap its fruits, by fair means or by force. On receiving nothing but promises, in answer to their clamorous demands, they mutinied to a man, and crossed the Meuse to Grave,2 whence, after accomplishing the usual elections, they took their course to Antwerp. Being in such strong force, they determined to strike at the capital. Rumour flew before them. Champagny, brother of Granvelle, and royal governor of the city, wrote in haste to apprise Requesens of the approaching danger. The Grand Commander, attended only by Vitelli, repaired instantly to Antwerp. Champagny advised throwing up a breastwork with bales of merchandise, upon the esplanade, between the citadel and the town,3 for it was at this point, where the connection between the forti-

¹ Requesens to Philip. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1292,

p. 457.
² Mendoza, Bentivoglio, Bor, Hoofd, Meteren, uhi sup.

³ Bor, vii. 494.

fications of the easile and those of the city had never been thoroughly completed, that the invasion might be expected Requesens hesitated. He trembled it a conflict with his own soldier. If successful, he could only be so by trampling upon the flower of his army. If defeated, what would become of the kings authority, with rebellious troops trumphant in rebellious provinces? Sorely perplexed the Commander could think of no expedient. Not knowing what to do, be did nothing. In the meantime Champagny, who felt himself odious to the soldiery, retreated to the New town and burneaded himself, with a few followers in the house of the Bultie merchants.

On the 26th of April, the mutinous troops in perfect order, marched into the city, effecting their entrance precisely at the weak point where they had been expected. Numbering at least three thousand, they encamped on the esplanade, where Requesens appeared before them alone on horseback, and made them an oration They listened with composure, but answered briefly and with one accord "Dineros y non palabras, dollars not speeches. Requesens promised profusely, but the time was past for promises. Hard silver dollars would alone content an army which after three years of bloodshed and starvation, had at last taken the law into their own hands Requesens withdrew to consult the Broad Council of the city. He was without money himself, but he demanded four hundred thousand crowns of the city. This was at first refused but the troops knew the strength of their position, for these mutinies were never repressed, and rarely punished. On this occasion the Commander was afruid to employ force, and the burghers, after the army had been quartered upon them for a time, would gladly pay a heavy ransom to be rid of their odious and expensive guests. The mutineers foreseeing that the work might last a few weeks. and determined to proceed leisurely, took possession of the great square The Lletto, with his staff of councillors, was quartered in the Iown House, while the soldiers distributed themselves among the houses of the most opulent citizens, no one escaping a billet who was rich enough to receive

Rentivogl » Ror, Meteren e al
 Oostersfe Hu u"—R.r. vin 494. Meteren. Hoofd.

Meteren, v 92 Hoofd Lor w's rup

such company: bishop or burgomaster, margrave or merchant.¹ The most famous kitchens were naturally the most eagerly sought, and sumptuous apartments, luxurious dishes, delicate wines, were daily demanded. The burghers dared not refuse.²

The six hundred Walloons, who had been previously quartered in the city, were expelled, and for many days the mutiny reigned paramount. Day after day the magistracy, the heads of guilds, all the representatives of the citizens, were assembled in the Broad Council. The Governor-General insisted on his demand of four hundred thousand crowns, representing, with great justice, that the mutineers would remain in the city until they had eaten and drunk to that amount, and that there would still be the arrearages, for which the city would be obliged to raise the funds. On the 9th of May, the authorities made an offer, which was duly communicated to the Eletto. That functionary stood forth on a window-sill of the Town House, and addressed the soldiery. He informed them that the Grand Commander proposed to pay ten months' arrears in cash, five months' in silks and woollen cloths, and the balance in promises, to be fulfilled within a few days.3 The terms were not considered satisfactory, and were received with groans of derision. The Eletto, on the contrary, declared them very liberal, and reminded the soldiers of the perilous condition in which they stood, guilty to a man of high treason, with a rope round every neck. It was well worth their while to accept the offer made them, together with the absolute pardon for the past, by which it was accompanied. For himself, he washed his hands of the consequences if the offer were rejected. The soldiers answered by deposing the Eletto, and choosing another in his room.4

Three days after, a mutiny broke out in the citadel—an unexampled occurrence.⁵ The rebels ordered Sanchod'Avila.

¹ Bor, vii. 494, 495. Hoofd. Meteren.

² Meteren, v. 92. Bor, vii. 494, 495. Hoofd, ix. 355, 356. Bentivoglio, viii. 148.

Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup. 4 Hoofd, ix. 359.
5 "Los soldados del Castillo se amotinaron, alteración que jamas ha hecho la nación Española, hallandose en Castillo."—Mendoza, xii. 247.

the commandant to deliver the keys of the fortress refused to surrender them but with his life. They then con tented themselves with compelling his lieutenant to leave the citadel, and with sending their Eletto to confer with the Grand Commander, as well as with the Eletto of the army After accomplishing his mission, he returned, accompanied by Chiappin Vitelli as envoy of the Governor General No sooner, however had the Eletto set foot on the drawbndge than he was attacked by Ensign Salvatierra of the Spanish garrison , who stabbed him to the heart and threw him into the most. The ensign who was renowned in the army for his ferocious courage and who wore embroidered upon his trunk hose the inscription, "I castigador de los Flamencos." then rushed upon the sergeant major of the mutineers. despatched him in the same was, and tossed him likewise into the most. These preliminaries being settled, a satis fictory arrangement was negotiated between Vitelli and the rebellious garrison. Pardon for the past, and payment upon the same terms as those officed in the eity, were recepted, and the mutiny of the citadel was quelled. It was, how ever, necessary that Salvatierra should conecal himself for a long time, to escape being torn to pieces by the incensed soldury

Meantime, affairs in the city were more difficult to adjust The mutineers raised an altar of chests and bales upon the public square, and celebrated mass under the open sky, solemnly swearing to be true to each other to the last. The socians of carousing and merry making were renewed at the expense of the citizens, who were again exposed to nightly alarms from the boisterous mirth and ceaseless mischief making of the sol hers. Before the end of the month the Broad Council, exhausted by the incubus which had afflicted them so many weeks, acceded to the demand of Requesens, The four hundred thousand crowns were furnished, the Grand Commander accepting them as a loan, and giving in terain Commander accepting them as a roun and group in return bonds duly signed and countersigned, together with a mortgage upon all the royal dofusans. The citizens received the documents, as a matter of form, but they had handled

¹ Meteren, 5 92, \$1100fd 1x, 359 "The chasaser of the Flemings. ! Ihd.

Mendora Meteren, Hoofd.

⁴ Hoofd, ix 350.

such securities before, and valued them but slightly. The mutineers now agreed to settle with the Governor-General, on condition of receiving all their wages, either in cash or cloth, together with a solemn promise of pardon for all their acts of insubordination. This pledge was formally rendered, with appropriate religious ceremonies, by Requesens, in the cathedral.1 The payments were made directly afterwards, and a great banquet was held on the same day, by the whole mass of the soldiery, to celebrate the event. The feast took place on the place of the Mere, and was a scene of furious revelry. The soldiers, more thoughtless than children, had arrayed themselves in extemporaneous costumes, cut from the cloth which they had at last received in payment of their sufferings and their blood. Broadcloths, silks, satins, and gold-embroidered brocades, worthy of a queen's wardrobe, were hung in fantastic drapery around the sinewy forms and bronzed faces of the soldiery, who, the day before, had been clothed in rags. The mirth was uproarious; and scarce was the banquet finished before every drum-head became a gaming-table, around which gathered groups eager to sacrifice

in a moment their dearly-bought gold.²

The fortunate or the prudent had not yet succeeded in entirely plundering their companions, when the distant booming of cannon was heard from the river. Instantly, accoutred as they were in their holiday and fantastic costumes, the soldiers, no longer mutinous, were summoned from banquet and gaming-table, and were ordered forth upon the dykes. The patriot, Admiral Boisot, who had so recently defeated the fleet of Bergen, under the eyes of the Grand Commander, had unexpectedly sailed up the Scheld, determined to destroy the fleet of Antwerp, which upon that occasion had escaped. Between the forts of Lillo and Callao, he met with twenty-two vessels under the command of Vice-Admiral Haemstede. After a short and sharp action, he was completely victorious. Fourteen of the enemy's ships were burned or sunk, with all their crews, and Admiral Haemstede was taken prisoner. The soldiers opened a warm fire of musketry upon Boisot from the dyke, to which he responded with his cannon. The distance of the combatants,

² Hoofd, ix. 359, 360.

however, made the action unimportant, and the patriots retried down the river, after achieving a complete victory. The Grand Commander was further than ever from obtaining that foothold on the sea, which, as he had informed his sovereign, was the only means by which the Netherlands could be reduced.

1 Bor, vii 495, 496 Hoofd, ix 359, 360. Bentivogho, vii. 149. Letter of the Prince of Orange, in Archives, etc., v 11, 12

CHAPTER II.

THE LEYDEN DRAMA.

First siege of Leyden-Commencement of the second-Description of the city-Preparations for defence-Letters of Orange-Act of amnesty issued by Requesens-Its conditions-Its reception by the Hollanders-Correspondence of the Glippers-Sorties and fierce combats beneath the walls of Leyden-Position of the Prince-His project of relief-Magnanimity of the people-Breaking of the dykes-Emotions in the city and the besieging camp—Letter of the estates of Holland—Dangerous illness of the Prince—The "wild Zelanders"—Admiral Boisot commences his voyage—Sanguinary combat on the Land-Scheiding-Occupation of that dyke and of the Green Way-Pauses and progress of the flotilla-The Prince visits the fleet-Horrible sufferings in the city-Speech of Van der Werf-Heroism of the inhabitants-The Admiral's letters—The storm—Advance of Boisot—Lammen fortress— An anxious night-Midnight retreat of the Spaniards-The Admiral enters the city-Thanksgiving in the great church-The Prince in Leyden-Parting words of Valdez-Mutiny-Leyden University founded -The charter-Inauguration ceremonies.

THE invasion of Louis of Nassau had, as already stated, effected the raising of the first siege of Leyden. That leaguer had lasted from the 31st of October, 1573, to the 21st of March, 1574, when the soldiers were summoned away to defend the frontier. By an extraordinary and culpable carelessness, the citizens, neglecting the advice of the Prince, had not taken advantage of the breathing time thus afforded them to victual the city and strengthen the garrison. They seemed to reckon more confidently upon the success of Count Louis than he had even done himself; for it was very probable that, in case of his defeat, the siege would be instantly resumed. This natural result was not long in following the battle of Mookerheyde.

On the 26th of May, Valdez reappeared before the place, at the head of eight thousand Walloons and Germans, and Leyden was now destined to pass through a fiery ordeal.

³ Ibid., vii. 504.

This city was one of the most beautiful in the Netherlands Placed in the midst of broad and fruitful pastures, which had been reclaimed by the hand of industry from the bottom of the sea, it was fringed with smiling villages, blooming gardens, fruitful orchards The ancient and at last, decrepit Rhine, flowing languidly towards its sandy death bed, had been multiplied into innumerable artificial currents, by which the city was completely interlaced. These waters streets were shaded by lime trees poplars, and willows, and crossed by one hundred and forty five bridges, mostly of hammered stone. The houses were elegant, the squares and streets spacious, air, and clean, the churches and public edifices imposing, while the whole aspect of the place suggested thrift, industry, and comfort Upon an artificial elevation, in the centre of the city, rose a ruined tower of unknown antiquity By some it was considered to be of Roman origin, while others preferred to regard it as a work of the Anglo-Saxon Hengist raised to commeniorate his conquest of Lugland' Surrounded by fruit trees, and overgrown in the centre with oaks, it afforded, from its mouldering battle ments, a charming prospect over a wide expanse of level

Valdez lost no t

of Maeslandshus.

if yet the ocean had begun to roll over the land

a the

that

many an eye was to be strained anxiously seaward, watching

OSSESSION Fise bun Chester.

dred Lnglish, unde abandoned the fortress of Valkenburg and fled towards Leyden Refused admittance by the citizens, who now,

Guiceanlini Descript Holl, et Zelardic. Lor, vii. 502 Benti vegho, viii. 151

" Putatur Freistas Britanno Orbe redux posuisse victor "etc., etc.,

according to the celebrated poem of John Van der Dies the accom-plished and valunt Commandant of the city. The tower, which is doubless a I oman one presents, at the present day, alreast precieit the same appearance as that described by the con emporaneous historians of the same. The verses of the Con mandant st the Arglo-Naxon conquenes of Butain went from a common one in the sixteenth century

with reason, distrusted them, they surrendered to Valdez, and were afterwards sent back to England.¹ In the course of a few days, Leyden was thoroughly invested, no less than sixty-two redoubts, some of them having remained undestroyed from the previous siege, now girdling the city, while the besiegers already numbered nearly eight thousand, a force to be daily increased. On the other hand, there were no troops in the town, save a small corps of "freebooters," and five companies of the burgher guard. John Van der Does, Seigneur of Nordwyck, a gentleman of distinguished family, but still more distinguished for his learning, his poetical genius, and his valour, had accepted the office of military commandant.²

The main reliance of the city, under God, was on the stout hearts of its inhabitants within the walls, and on the sleepless energy of William the Silent without. The Prince, hastening to comfort and encourage the citizens, although he had been justly irritated by their negligence in having omitted to provide more sufficiently against the emergency while there had yet been time, now reminded them that they were not about to contend for themselves alone, but that the fate of their country and of unborn generations would, in all human probability, depend on the issue about to be tried. Eternal glory would be their portion if they manifested a courage worthy of their race and of the sacred cause of religion and liberty. He implored them to hold out at least three months, assuring them that he would, within that time, devise the means of their deliverance. The citizens responded, courageously and confidently, to

¹ Mendoza, xii. 251, who says that the lives of these English prisoners were spared at his express solicitation. He was at that juncture sent by the Grand Commander on a mission to Queen Elizabeth, and obtained this boon of his superior as a personal favour to himself.

Hoofd, ix. 362. Bor, vii. 505. Guicciardini.—"Janum Dousam, virum nobilem, Toparcham Nordovicenum, utraque lingua doctissimum, et poetam egregium."—Desc. Holl., ed. usa., 238, 239. "Juan Duse, Señor de Nortwyck—gentil poeta en la lengua Latina."—Mendoza, xii. 254. "Giovanni Douza poeta nobile di quel tempo ne componimenti latini e molto nobile ancora per qualità di fangue e per altre prerogative di merito."—Bentivoglio, viii. 153.

³ Archives et Correspondance, v. 10.

⁴ Letter of Orange in Bor, vii. 505.

these missives, and assured the Prince of their firm confidence in their own fortitude and his exertions 1

It was now thought expedient to publish the amnests which had been so long in preparation, and this time the trap was more liberally baited. The pardon which had passed the seals upon the 8th of March, was foroially issued by the Grand Commander on the 6th of June 1 By the terms of this document the Ling invited all his erring and repentant subjects to return to his arms and to accept a full forgiveress for their past offences, upon the sole condition that they should once more throw themselves upon the bosom of the Mother Church There were but few exceptions to the imnesty, a small number of individuals, all men tioned by name being alone excluded, but although these terms were ample the act was liable to a few stern objections It was easier now for the Hollanders to go to their graves than to mass, for the contest, in its progress, had now entirely assumed the aspect of a religious war. Instead of a limited number of heretics in a state which although constitutional. was Catholic, there was now hardly a Papist to be found among the natives To accept the pardon then was to concede the victory, and the Hollanders had not yet dis covered that they were conquered. They were resolved too, not only to be conquered, but annihilated before the Roman Church should be re-established on their soil, to the entire exclusion of the Reformed worship. They responded with steadfast enthusiasm to the sentiment expressed by the Prince of Orange, after the second siege of Layden had been commenced, "As long as there is a living man left in the country, we will contend for our liberty and our religion 4 The single condition of the amnesty assumed, in a phrase, what Spain had fruitlessly striven to establish by a hundred battles, and the Hollanders had not faced their enemy on land and sea for seven years to succumb to a 1 hrase at last

¹ Letter of Orange in For vis 503 Hoofd ix 363, 364.
2 Bor vis 510. Meteren v 93 Hoofd ix 368.

The pardon is given in full by Bor via 510-513.

^{6 &}quot;Comme au si de nostre cortel nous sommes sey resolus de ne quirer la telleme de sa l'ard e et de nos re l'orte jusques au derner horne e "— Arcares de la Vaison d'Orange 1 x 27

For a moment the Prince had feared lest the pardon might produce some effect upon men wearied by interminable suffering, but the event proved him wrong. It was received with universal and absolute contempt. No man came forward to take advantage of its conditions, save one brewer in Utrecht, and the son of a refugee pedlar from Leyden. With these exceptions, the only ones recorded, Holland remained deaf to the royal voice. The city of Leyden was equally cold to the messages of mercy which were especially addressed to its population by Valdez and his agents. Certain Netherlanders, belonging to the King's party, and familiarly called "Glippers," despatched from the camp many letters to their rebellious acquaintances in the city. In these epistles the citizens of Leyden were urgently and even pathetically exhorted to submission by their loyal brethren, and were implored "to take pity upon their poor old fathers, their daughters, and their wives." But the burghers of Leyden thought that the best pity which they could show to those poor old fathers, daughters, and wives, was to keep them from the clutches of the Spanish soldiery; so they made no answer to the Glippers, save by this single line, which they wrote on a sheet of paper, and forwarded, like a letter, to Valdez:

"Fistula dulce canit, volucrem cum decipit auceps." 2

According to the advice early given by the Prince of Orange, the citizens had taken an account of their provisions of all kinds, including the live stock. By the end of Jung, the city was placed on a strict allowance of food, all the provisions being purchased by the authorities at an equitable price. Half a pound of meat and chalf a pound of bread was allotted to a full-grown man, and to the rest a due proportion. The city being strictly invested, no communication, save by carrier pigeons, and by a few swift and skilful

¹ Bor, vii. 516.
² Jan Fruytiers. Corte Beschryvinghe van der strenghe Belegeringhe en wondebaerlijcke Verlossinge der stadt Leyden—met byvoeghing alle der Brieven die an de van der Stadt geschreven zijn.—Ghedruckt tot Delf., A.D. 1577. This contemporary and very rare volume is much the best authority for the details of the memorable siege which it describes. It was the main source of the historian Pieter Bor. Compare Meteren, v. 94. Hoofd, x. 364.

messengers, called jumpers, was possible Sorties and fierce combats were, lowever, of daily occurrence, and a handsome bounty was offered to any man who brought into the city gates the head of a Spaniard The reward was paid many times, but the population was becoming so extied and so apt, that the authorities felt it dangerous to permit the continuance of these conflicts Lest the city, little by little, should lose its few disciplined defenders, it was now proclaimed, by sound of church bell, that in future no man should leave the gates?

The Prince had his head-quarters at Delft and at Rotter dam Between those two cities, an important fortress, called Polderwaert, secured him in the control of the alluvial quadrangle, watered on two sides by the Yssel and the Meuse On the 29th June, the Spaniards, feeling its value, had made an unsuccessful effort to carry this fort by storm They had been beaten off, with the loss of several hundred men, the Prince remaining in possession of the position, from which alone he could hope to relieve Leyden 1 He still held in his hand the keys with which he could unlock the ocean gates and let the waters in upon the land, and he had long been convinced that nothing could save the city but to break the dykes. Leyden was not upon the sea, but he could send the sea to Leyden, although an army fit to encounter the besieging force under Valdez could not be levied. The battle of Mookerbeyde had, for the present, quite settled the question of land relief, but it was possible to besiege the besiegers with the waves of the ocean. The Spaniards occupied the coast from the Hague to Vlaar dingen, but the dykes along the Meuse and Yssel were in possession of the Prince He determined that these should be pierced, while, at the same time, the great sluices at Rotterdam, Schiedam, and Delftshaven should be opened. The damage to the fields, villages, and growing crops would be enormous, but he felt that ro other course could rescue Leyden, and with it the whole of Holland, from destruction His clear expositions and impassioned eloquence at last overcame all resistance. By the middle of July the estates

¹ Jan Fruntierse Bor, via 552. Meteren, v. Hoofd, ix 366.
8 Bor, via 548.

¹ Hor, viz 548. Meteren, v 94 Hoofl, ix 370.

fully consented to his plan, and its execution was immediately undertaken. "Better a drowned land than a lost land," cried the patriots, with enthusiasm, as they devoted their fertile fields to desolation. The enterprise for restoring their territory, for a season, to the waves, from which it had been so patiently rescued, was conducted with as much regularity as if it had been a profitable undertaking. A capital was formally subscribed, for which a certain number of bonds were issued, payable at a long date. In addition to this preliminary fund, a monthly allowance of forty-five guldens was voted by the estates, until the work should be completed, and a large sum was contributed by the ladies of the land, who freely furnished their plate, jewelry, and costly furniture to the furtherance of the scheme.

Meantime, Valdez, on the 30th July, issued most urgent and ample offers of pardon to the citizens, if they would consent to open their gates and accept the King's authority; but his overtures were received with silent contempt, notwithstanding that the population were already approaching the starvation Although not yet fully informed of the active measures taken by the Prince, yet they still chose to rely upon his energy and their own fortitude, rather than upon the honeyed words which had formerly been heard at the gates of Harlem and of Naarden. On the 3rd of August, the Prince, accompanied by Paul Buys, chief of the commission appointed to execute the enterprise, went in person along the Yssel, as far as Kappelle, and superintended the rupture of the dykes in sixteen places. The gates at Schiedam and Rotterdam were opened, and the ocean began to pour over the land. While waiting for the waters to rise, provisions were rapidly collected, according to an edict of the Prince, in all the principal towns of the neighbourhood, and some two hundred vessels, of various sizes, had also been got ready at Rotterdam, Delftshaven, and other ports.4

The citizens of Leyden were, however, already becoming impatient, for their bread was gone, and of its substitute,

^{1 &}quot;Liever bedorven dan verloren land."—Fruytiers, 16. Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup.

² Bor, vii. 549. Hoofd, ix. 370, 371.

³ Hoofd, ix. 370.

⁴ Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 549, 550 Hoofd, ix. 371.

malt cake, they had but slender provision. On the 1sth of August they received a letter from the Prince, encouraging them to resistance, and assuring them of a speedy relief, and on the 21st they addressed a despatch to him in reply, stating that they had now fulfilled their original promise, for they had held out two months with food, and another month without food. If not soon assisted, human strength could do no more, their malt cake would last but four days, and after that was gone, there was nothing left but starvation. Upon the same day, however, they received a letter, dictated by the Prince, who now lay in bed at Rotterdam with a violent fever, assuring them that the dykes were all pierced, and that the water was rising upon the "Land scheiding," the great outward barrier which separated the city from the sea He said nothing, however, of his own illness, which would have cast a deep shadow over the joy which now broke forth among the burghers?

The letter was read publicly in the market place, and to increase the cheerfulness, Burgomaster Van der Werf, knowing the sensibility of his countrymen to music, ordered the city musicians to perambulate the streets, playing lively melodies and martial airs. Salvos of cannon were likewise fried, and the starving city for a bine space put on the aspect of a holiday, much to the astonishment of the besigning forces, who were not yet aware of the Prince's efforts. They perceived very soon, however, as the water everywhere about Leyden had risen to the depth of ten inches, that they stood in a perilous position. It was no trifling danger to be thus attacked by the waves of the ocean, which seemed about to obey with docility the command of William the Silent Valdez became apisious and uncomfortable at the strange aspect of affurs, for the besieging army was now in its turn beleaguered, and by a stronger power than man s. He con sulted with the most experienced of his officers, with the country people, with the most distinguished among the Glippers, and denived encouragement from their views con

^{1 &}quot;Te weten, de eerste twe maendern met brood, en de derde maend met armoede "-fan Frustiers

Letter of Flyde Nuynhem and N Brunynck to Coun' John of Nassau, in Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v 38 40. Hor, vii 550. 2 Hoofl, in 372 Bor, vii 551.

cerning the Prince's plan. They pronounced it utterly futile and hopeless. The Glippers knew the country well, and ridiculed the desperate project in unmeasured terms.

Even in the city itself, a dull distrust had succeeded to the first vivid gleam of hope, while the few royalists among the population boldly taunted their fellow-citizens to their faces with the absurd vision of relief which they had so fondly welcomed. "Go up to the tower, ye Beggars," was the frequent and taunting cry, "go up to the tower, and tell us if ye can see the ocean coming over the dry land to your relief" 1-and day after day they did go up to the ancient tower of Hengist, with heavy heart and anxious eye, watching, hoping, praying, fearing, and at last almost despairing of relief by God or man. On the 27th they addressed a desponding letter to the estates, complaining that the city had been forgotten in its utmost need, and on the same day a prompt and warm-hearted reply was received, in which the citizens were assured that every human effort was to be made for their relief. "Rather," said the estates, "will we see our whole land and all our possessions perish in the waves, than forsake thee, Leyden. We know full well, moreover, that with Leyden, all Holland must perish also." They excused themselves for not having more frequently written, upon the ground that the whole management of the measures for their relief had been entrusted to the Prince, by whom alone all the details had been administered, and all the correspondence conducted.2

The fever of the Prince had, meanwhile, reached its height. He lay at Rotterdam, utterly prostrate in body, and with mind agitated nearly to delirium, by the perpetual and almost unassisted schemes which he was constructing. Relief, not only for Leyden, but for the whole country, now apparently sinking into the abyss, was the vision which he pursued as he tossed upon his restless couch. Never was illness more unseasonable. His attendants were in despair, for it was necessary that his mind should for a time be spared the agitation of business. The physicians who attended him agreed, as to his disorder, only in this, that it was the result

^{1 &}quot;Gaet en op den toren gy Geuskens en siet het Maeswater te gemoot," etc., etc.—Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 551. Hoofd, ix. 374.

2 See the letter in Bor, vii. 551, 552.

of mental fatigue and melancholy, and could be cured only by removing all distressing and perplexing subjects from his thoughts, but all the physicians in the world could not have succeeded in turning his attention for an instant from the great cause of his country Leyden lay, as it were, anxious and despairing at his feet, and it was impossible for him to close his ears to her cry Therefore, from his sick bed he continued to dictate words of counsel and encouragement to the city, to Admiral Boisot, commanding the flect, minute directions and precautions. Fowards the end of August a vague report had found its way into his sick climber that Leyden had fallen and although he refused to credit the tale, jut it served to harass his mind, and to heighten fever Cornelius van Mierop, Receiver General of Holland, had occasion to visit him at Rotterdam, and strange to relate, found the house almost deserted Penetrating, unattended, to the Prince's bed chamber, he found him lying quite alone Inquiring what had become of all his attendants, he was answered by the Prince, in a very feeble voice, that he had sent them all away The Receiver General seems, from this. to have rather hastily arrived at the conclusion that the Prince's disorder was the pest, and that his servants and friends had all deserted him from cowardice. This was very far from being the case. His private secretary and his maltre d liftel watched, day and night, by his couch, and the best physicians of the eity were in constant attendance. By a singular accident, all had been despatched on different errands. at the express desire of their master, but there had never been a suspicion that his disorder was the pest, or pestilential Nerves of steel and a frame of adamant could alone have resisted the constant anxiety and the consuming fatigue to which he had so long been exposed His illness had been aggravated by the rumour of Leyden's fall, a fiction which Cornelius Mierop was now enabled flatly to contradict. The Prince began to mend from that hour By the end of the

¹ Letters of N Brunynck, Arth. et Correspond, v 39 46 Bor, vii 551, 552

Bot, vii 551 Hoofl, ix 372, 373.—Such was the information given by him to the hidorian Bot, whose account is followed by Hoofd and others. The ligiters of Secretary Ilmaynel, and of hyaphem prove, on the contrary, the solicits le with which the Prince was attended in his illness.—Archives et Correspondance, 7 \$ 56.

it, a sad testimonial of the ferocity engendered by this war for national existence.

The great dyke having been thus occupied, no time was lost in breaking it through in several places, a work which was accomplished under the very eyes of the enemy. The fleet sailed through the gaps; but, after their passage had been effected in good order, the Admiral found, to his surprise, that it was not the only rampart to be carried. The Prince had been informed, by those who claimed to know the country, that, when once the Land-scheiding had been passed, the water would flood the country as far as Leyden, but the "Green-way," another long dyke, three-quarters of a mile further inward, now rose at least a foot above the water, to oppose their further progress. Fortunately, by a second and still more culpable carelessness, this dyke had been left by the Spaniards in as unprotected a state as the first had been. Promptly and audaciously Admiral Boisot took possession of this barrier also, levelled it in many places, and brought his flotilla, in triumph, over its ruins. Again, however, he was doomed to disappointment. A large mere, called the Fresh-water Lake, was known to extend itself directly in his path about midway between the Landscheiding and the city. To this piece of water, into which he expected to have instantly floated, his only passage lay through one deep canal. The sea which had thus far borne him on, now diffusing itself over a very wide surface, and under the influence of an adverse wind, had become too shallow for his ships. The canal alone was deep enough, but it led directly towards a bridge, strongly occupied by the enemy. Hostile troops, moreover, to the amount of three thousand, occupied both sides of the canal.² The bold Boisot, nevertheless, determined to force his passage, if possible. Selecting a few of his strongest vessels, his heaviest artillery, and his bravest sailors, he led the van himself, in a desperate attempt to make his way to the mere. He opened

carmina nitgegeven," etc.—Bor, vii. 554.

One of the "carmina" thus alluded to by the historian, was a Laure poem by the Commandant Van der Does, in which the progress of the piege is described with much spirit and elegance.

² Bor, vii., 555. Hoofd, ix. 376.

daer na van vele loswaerdige luiden gesien en zijn daer na ook, eeinige carmina nitgegeven," etc.—Bor. vij. 554.

a hot fire upon the bridge, then converted into a fortress, while his men engaged in hand to hand combat with a succession of skirmishers from the troops along the canal. After losing a few men, and ascertaining the impregnable position of the enemy, he was obliged to withdraw, defeated, and almost despiring the letter and near the great dischard hand proved.

easterly, causing the sea rather to sink than to rise Lverything wore a gloom; aspect, when, fortunately, on the 18th, the wind shifted to the north west and for three days blew a The waters rose rapidly, and before the second day was closed the armada was affoat again. Some fugitives from Zoetermeer village now arrived, and informed the Admiral that, by making a détour to the right, he could completely circumvent the bridge and the mere They guided him, accordingly, to a comparatively low dyke, which led between the villages of Zoctermeer and Benthuyzen A strong force of Spaniards was stationed in each place, but, seized with a panic, instead of sallying to defend the barrier, they fled in wardly towards Leyden, and halted at the village of North Aa 1 It was natural that they should be amazed. Nothing is more appalling to the imagination than the rising ocean tide. when man feels himself within its power, and here were the waters, hourly deepening and closing around them, devouring the earth beneath their feet, while on the waves rode a flotilla, manned by a determined race, whose courage and ferocity were known throughout the world. The Spanish soldiers, brave as they were on land, were not sailors, and in the naval contests which had taken place between them and the Hollanders had been almost invariably defeated. It was not surprising, in these amphibious skirmishes, where discipline was of little avail, and habitual audacity faltered at the vague dangers which encompassed them, that the foreign troops should lose their presence of mind.

Three barriers, one within the other, had now been passed, and the flotilla, advancing with the advancing waves, and driving the enemy steadily before it, was drawing nearer

Bor, Hoof I, ubi suf —Compare Mendora,
 Bor, Hoofd, ubi suf —Mendora, xu, 262,

to the beleaguered city. As one circle after another was passed, the besieging army found itself compressed within a constantly contracting field. The "Ark of Delft," an enormous vessel, with shot-proof bulwarks, and moved by paddle-wheels' turned by a crank, now arrived at Zoetermeer, and was soon followed by the whole fleet. After a brief delay, sufficient to allow the few remaining villagers to escape, both Zoetermeer and Benthuyzen, with the fortifications, were set on fire, and abandoned to their fate. blaze lighted up the desolate and watery waste around, and was seen at Leyden, where it was hailed as the beacon of hope. Without further impediment, the armada proceeded to North Aa, the enemy retreating from this position also, and flying to Zoeterwoude, a strongly-fortified village, but a mile and three-quarters from the city walls. It was now swarming with troops, for the bulk of the besieging army had gradually been driven into a narrow circle of forts, within the immediate neighbourhood of Leyden. Besides Zoeterwoude, the two posts where they were principally established were Lammen and Leyderdorp, each within three hundred rods of the town. At Leyderdorp were the head-quarters of Valdez; Colonel Borgia commanded in the very strong fortress of Lammen.2

The fleet was, however, delayed at North Aa by another barrier, called the "Kirk-way." The waters, too, spreading once more over a wider space, and diminishing under an east wind, which had again arisen, no longer permitted their progress, so that very soon the whole armada was stranded anew. The waters fell to the depth of nine inches, while the vessels required eighteen and twenty. Day after day the fleet lay motionless upon the shallow sea. Orange, rising from his sick bed as soon as he could stand, now came on board the fleet. His presence diffused universal joy; his words inspired his desponding army with fresh hope. He rebuked the impatient spirits who, weary of their compulsory idleness, had shown symptoms of ill-timed ferocity, and those eight hundred mad Zelanders, so frantic in their hatred to the foreigners, who had so long profaned their land, were as docile as children to the Prince. He recon-

¹ Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 556. Hoofd, ix. 377. Mendoza, xii. 262. ² Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Mendoza.

notited the whole ground, and assued orders for the im mediate destruction of the Kirk way, the last important barrier which separated the fleet from Leyden Then, after a long conference with Admiral Boisot, he returned to Delft 1

Meantime, the besiefed city was at its last gasp. The burghers had been in a state of uncertainty for many days, being aware that the fleet had set forth for their relief, but knowing full well the thousand obstacles which it had to surmount. They had guessed its progress by the illumina tion from the blazing villages, they had heard its salvos of artillery, on its arrival at North Aa, but since then, all had been dark and mournful again, liope and fear, in siekening alternation, distracting every breast. They knew that the wind was unfavourable, and at the dawn of each day every eye was turned wisifully to the vanes of the steeples. So long as the easterly breeze prevailed, they felt, as they anyously stood on towers and housetops, that they must look in vain for the welcome ocean \ \ et, while thus patiently waiting, they were literally starving, for even the miscry endured at Harlem had not reached that depth and intensity of agony to which Leyden was now reduced Bread, malt cake, horseflesh had entirely disappeared, dogs, eats, rats, and other vermin, were esteemed luxuries. A small number of cows, kept as long as possible for their milk, still remained, but a few were killed from day to day, and distributed in minute proportions, hardly sufficient to support life among the famishing population Starving wretelics swarmed daily around the shumbles where these cattle were slaughtered. contending for any morsel which might fall, and lapping eagurly the blood as it ran along the pavement, while the hides, chopped and boiled, were greedily devoured. Women and children, all day long, were seen searching gutters and dunghills for morsels of food, which they disputed fiercely with the famishing dogs. The green leaves were stripped from the trees every living herb was converted into human food, but these expedients could not avert starvation. The duly mortality was fruhtful-infants starved to death on the maternal breasts which famine had parched and withered,

¹ Bor, vn 566

mothers dropped dead in the streets, with their dead children in their arms. In many a house the watchmen, in their rounds, found a whole family of corpses, father, mother, children, side by side, for a disorder called the plague, naturally engendered of hardship and famine, now came, as if in kindness, to abridge the agony of the people. The pestilence stalked at noonday through the city, and the doomed inhabitants fell like grass beneath its scythe. From six thousand to eight thousand human beings sank before this scourge alone, yet the people resolutely held out—women and men mutually encouraging each other to resist the entrance of their foreign foe—an evil more horrible than pest or famine.

The missives from Valdez, who saw more vividly than the besieged could do, the uncertainty of his own position, now poured daily into the city, the enemy becoming more prodigal of his vows, as he felt that the ocean might yet save the victims from his grasp. The inhabitants, in their ignorance, had gradually abandoned their hopes of relief, but they spurned the summons to surrender. Leyden was sublime in its despair. A few murmurs were, however, occasionally heard at the steadfastness of the magistrates, and a dead body was placed at the door of the burgomaster, as a silent witness against his inflexibility. A party of the more faint-hearted even assailed the heroic Adrian van der Werf with threats and reproaches as he passed through the streets. A crowd had gathered around him, as he reached a triangular place in the centre of the town, into which many of the principal streets emptied themselves, and upon one side of which stood the church of Saint Pancras, with its high brick tower, surmounted by two pointed turrets, and with two ancient lime-trees at its entrance. There stood the burgomaster, a tall, haggard, imposing figure, with dark visage, and a tranquil but commanding eye. He waved his broad-leaved felt hat for silence, and then exclaimed, in language which has been almost literally preserved, "What

² Hoofd, ix. 381, 382. Bor, vii. 557.

¹ Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 557. Hoofd, ix. 381. Meteren, v. 94. Mendoza's estimate of the entire population, as numbering only fourteen thousand before the siege (xii. 256), is evidently Erroneous. It was probably nearer fifty thousand.

would ye, my friends? Why do ye murmur that we do not break our yows and surrender the city to the Spaniards? a fate more hornble than the agony which she now endures I tell you I have made an eath to hold the city, and may God give me strength to keep my eath! I can die but once, whether by your hands, the enemys, or by the hand of God. My own fate is indifferent to me, not so that of the city entrusted to my care. I know that we shall stare if not soon relieved, but starvation is preferable to the dis honoured death which is the only alternative. Your menaces move me, not, my life is at your disposal, here is my sword, plunge it into my breast, and divide my flesh among you lake my body to appease your lunger, but expect no sur render, so long as I reman alsee."

The words of the stout burgomaster inspired a new courage in the hearts of those who heard him, and a shout of applause and defiance arose from the famishing but enthusiastic crowd They left the place, after exchanging new vows of fidelity with their magistrate, and again ascended tower and battlement to watch for the coming fleet From the ramparts they hurled renewed defiance at the enemy " Le call us rat eaters and dog-eaters,' they cried, "and it is true So long, then, as ye hear dog bark or cat mew within the walls, ye may know that the city holds out. And when all has penshed but ourselves be sure that we will each devour our left arms, retaining our right to defend our women, our liberty, and our religion against the foreign tyrant Should God in His wrath, doom us to destruction and deny us all relief, even then will we maintain ourselves for ever against your entrance When the last hour has come, with our hands we will set fye to the city, and pensh, men, women, and children together, in the flames rather than suffer our homes to be polluted, and our liberties to be crushed * Such words of defiance, thundered daily from the battlements, sufficiently informed Valdez as to his chance of con quering the city, either by force or fraud, but at the same time, he felt comparatively relieved by the inactivity of Boisot's ficet, which still las stranded at North Aa well," shouted the Spaniards, densively, to the citizens, "as

¹ Jan Fruytiers. Hoof I ix. 379. Meteren v 94 1 Jan Fruytiers 25 Meteren v 94 Hoof 1, ix 379 380.

well can the Prince of Orange pluck the stars from the sky

as bring the ocean to the walls of Leyden for your relief."

On the 28th of September, a dove flew into the city, bringing a letter from Admiral Boisot.² In this despatch, the position of the fleet at North Aa was described in encouraging terms, and the inhabitants were assured that in a very few days at furthest, the long-expected relief would enter their gates. The letter was read publicly upon the market-place, and the bells were rung for joy. Nevertheless, on the morrow, the vanes pointed to the east, the waters, so far from rising, continued to sink, and Admiral Boisot was almost in despair. He wrote to the Prince, that if the spring-tide, now to be expected, should not, together with a strong and favourable wind, come immediately to their relief, it would be in vain to attempt anything further, and that the expedition would, of necessity, be abandoned. The tempest came to their relief. A violent equinoctial gale, on the night of the 1st and 2nd of October, came storming from the north-west, shifting after a few hours full eight points, and then blowing still more violently from the south-west. The waters of the North Sea were piled in vast masses upon the southern coast of Holland, and then dashed furiously landward, the ocean rising over the earth, and sweeping with unrestrained power across the ruined dykes.3

In the course of twenty-four hours the fleet at North Aa, instead of nine inches, had more than two feet of water. No time was lost. The Kirk-way, which had been broken through according to the Prince's instructions, was now completely overflowed, and the fleet sailed at midnight, in the midst of the storm and darkness. A few sentinel vessels of the enemy challenged them as they steadily rowed towards Zoeterwoude. The answer was a flash from Boisot's cannon,

^{1 &}quot;Dat hat den Prinse so onmogelijk was om Leyden te ontsetten als het henluiden mogelijk was te sterren metter hand te reiken en

grijpen."—Bor, vii. 557.

Bor, vii. 557.—See also the text of the letter transmitted on the same day and in the same manner, from the Admiral to the Commandant Nordtwyck, in Groen v. Prinsterer. The tone of the letter is spirited, cheerful, and almost jocular. The writer claims the hospitality of the Commandant, assuring him that he shall soon arrive in Leyden, to be a guest in his house.—Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 67, 68.

³ Bor, vii. 557.

lighting up the black waste of waters. There was a fierce naval midnight battle; a strange spectacle among the branches of those quiet orchards, and with the chimney stacks of half submerged farm houses rising around the contending vessels 1 The neighbouring village of Zoeterwoude shook with the discharges of the Zelanders' cannon, and the Spaniards assembled in that fortress knew that the rebel Admiral was at last affoat and on his course. The enemy's vessels were soon sunk, their crews hurled into the waves On went the fleet, sweeping over the broad waters which lay between Zoeterwoude and Zwieten As they approached some shallows, which led into the great mere, the Zelanders dashed into the sea, and with sheer strength shouldcred every vessel through Two obstacles lay still in their path -the forts of Loeterwoude and Lammen, distant from the city five hundred and two hundred and fifty yards respec tively Strong redoubts, both well supplied with troops and artillery, they were likely to give a rough reception to the light flotilla, but the panic, which had hitherto driven their foes before the advancing patriots, had reached Zoeterwoude, Hardly was the fleet in sight when the Spaniards, in the early morning, poured out from the fortress, and fled precipitately to the left, along a road which led in a westerly direction towards the Hague Their narrow path was rapidly vanishing in the waves, and hundreds sank beneath the constantly decpening and treacherous flood The wild Zelanders, too, sprang from their vessels upon the crumbling dyke and drove their retreating focs into the sea. They hurled their har poons at them, with an accuracy acquired in many a polar clase, they plunged into the waves in the keen pursuit, attrcking them with boat hook and dagger. The numbers who thus fell beneath these corsairs, who neither gave nor took quarter, were never counted, but probably not less than a thousand perished. The rest effected their escape to the Hague "

The first fortress was thus seized, dismantled, set on fire, and passed, and a few strokes of the ears brought the whole fleet close to Lammen This last obstacle rose formulable and frowing directly across their path Swarming as it was

¹ Bor, vii. 557 Hoofd, ix 382. Meteren, v 05 Mendora, xii. 263 8 Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 558. Hoofd, ix. 353. Mendora, xii. 264

with soldiers, and bristling with artillery, it seemed to defy the armada either to carry it by storm or to pass under its guns into the city. It appeared that the enterprise was, after all, to founder within sight of the long expecting and expected haven. Boisot anchored his fleet within a respectful distance, and spent what remained of the day in carefully reconnoitring the fort, which seemed only too strong. conjunction with Leyderdorp, the head-quarters of Valdez, a mile and a half distant on the right, and within a mile of the city, it seemed so insuperable an impediment that Boisot wrote in despondent tone to the Prince of Orange. announced his intention of carrying the fort, if it were possible, on the following morning, but if obliged to retreat, he observed, with something like despair, that there would be nothing for it but to wait for another gale of wind. If the waters should rise sufficiently to enable them to make a wide détour, it might be possible, if, in the meantime, Leyden didnot starve or surrender, to enter its gates from the opposite side.2

Meantime, the citizens had grown wild with expectation. A dove had been despatched by Boisot, informing them of his precise position, and a number of citizens accompanied the burgomaster, at nightfall, toward the tower of Hengist —"Yonder," cried the magistrate, stretching out his hand towards Lammen, "yonder, behind that fort, are bread and meat, and brethren in thousands. Shall all this be destroyed by the Spanish guns, or shall we rush to the rescue of our friends?" "We will tear the fortress to fragments with our teeth and nails," was the reply, "before the relief, so long expected shall be wrested from us." It was resolved that a sortie, in conjunction with the operations of Boisot, should be made against Lammen with the earliest dawn. Night descended upon the scene, a pitch dark night, full of anxiety to the Spaniards, to the armada, to Leyden. Strange sights and sounds occurred at different moments to bewilder the anxious sentinels. A long procession of lights issuing from the fort was seen to flit across the black face of the waters, in the dead of night, and the whole of the city wall, between the Cow-gate and the Tower of Burgundy, fell with a loud crash. The horror-struck citizens thought that the Spaniards

¹ Bor, vii. 559. Hoofd, ix. 384. Meteren, v. 95.
² Bor, vii. 559. Hoofd, ix. 385. Bor, vii. 559.

were upon them at last; the Spamards imagined the noise to indicate a desperate sortic of the citizens. Everything was

vague and mysterious.

Day dawned, at length, after the feverish night, and the Admiral prepared for the assault. Within the fortress reigned Admirat prepared to the assault. Whill the forces regimed a death-like stillness, which inspired a stekening suspicion. Had the city, indeed, been carried in the night, had the massacre already commenced, had all this labour and audacity been expended in vain? Suddenly a man was descried, wading breast high through the water from Lammen towards the fleet, while at the same time, one solitary boy was seen to wave his cap from the summit of the fort. After a moment of doubt, the happy mystery was solved. The Spaniards had fled, panie-struck, during the darkness Their position would still have enabled them, with firmness, to frustrate the enterprise of the patnots, but the hand of God, which had sent the ocean and the tempest to the deliverance of Levden, had struck her enemies with terror likewise. The lights which had been seen moving during the night were the lanterns of the retreating Spaniards, and the boy who was now waying his triumphant signal from the battlements had alone witnessed the spectacle. So confident was he in the conclusion to which it led him, that he had volunteered at daybreak to go thither all alone. The magistrates. fearing a trap, hesitated for a moment to believe the truth. which soon, however, became quite evident Valdez, flying himself from Leyderdorp, had ordered Colonel Borgia to retire with all his troops from Lammen. Thus, the Spaniards had retreated at the very moment that an extraordinary accident had laid bare a whole side of the city for their entrance The noise of the wall, as it fell, only inspired them with fresh alarm; for they believed that the citizens had sallied forth in the darkness, to aid the advancing flood in the work of destruction. All obstacles being now removed, the fleet of Boisot swept by Lammen, and entered the city on the morning of the 3rd of October. Leyden was relieved.

The quays were lined with the famishing population, as

Jan Fruytiers. sBor, vii. 559. Meteren, v. 95. Mendoza, vii. 265.
 Jan Fruytiers. Lor, vii. 559. Hoofd, ix. 385.
 Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 560. Hoofd, Meteren, wir.

the fleet rowed through the canals, every human being who could stand coming forth to greet the preservers of the city. Bread was thrown from every vessel among the crowd. The poor creatures who for two months had tasted no wholesome human food, and who had literally been living within the jaws of death, snatched eagerly the blessed gift, at last too liberally bestowed. Many choked themselves to death, in the greediness with which they devoured their bread; others became ill with the effects of plenty thus suddenly succeeding starvation; -but these were isolated cases, a repetition of which was prevented. The Admiral, stepping ashore, was welcomed by the magistracy, and a solemn procession was immediately formed. Magistrates and citizens, wild Zelanders, emaciated burgher guards, sailors, soldiers, women, children,-nearly every living person within the walls, all repaired without delay to the great church, stout Admiral Boisot leading the The starving and heroic city, which had been so firm in its resistance to an earthly king, now bent itself in humble gratitude before the king of kings. After prayers, the whole vast congregation joined in the thanksgiving hymn. Thousands of voices raised the song, but few were able to carry it to its conclusion, for the universal emotion, deepened by the music, became too full for utterance. The hymn was abruptly suspended, while the multitude wept like children. This scene of honest pathos terminated, the necessary measures for distributing the food and for relieving the sick were taken by the magistracy. A note dispatched to the Prince of Orange, was received by him at two o'clock, as he sat in churcheat It was of a somewhat different purport from that of the letter which he had received early in the same day from Boisot; the letter in which the Admiral had informed him that the success of the enterprise depended, after all, upon the desperate assault upon a nearly impregnable fort. The joy of the Prince may be easily imagined, and so soon as the sermon was concluded, he handed the letter just received to the minister, to be read to the congregation. Thus, all participated in his joy, and united with him in thanksgiving.

The next day, notwithstanding the urgent entreaties of his friends, who were anxious lest his life should be endangered

¹ Jan Fruytiers. Hoofd, ix. 386. Bor, vii. 560. Meteren, v. 95.

by breathing, in his scarcely convalescent state, the air of the city where so many thousands had been dying of the pesti lence, the Prince repaired to Leiden He, at least, had nev ir doubted his own or his country's fortitude could, therefore, most sincerely congratulate each other, now that the victors had been achieved "If we are doomed to perish," he had said a little before the commencement of the siege, "in the name of God, be it so! At any rate, we shall have the honour to have done what no nation ever did

still cost the Spaniards the half of Spain, in money and in men, before they can make an end of us"

The termination of the terrible siege of Leyden was a convincing proof to the Spaniards that they had not yet made an end of the Hollanders It furnished, also, a sufficient pre sumption that until they had made an end of them, even unto the last Hollander, there would never be an end of the struggle in which they were engaged. It was a slender consolution to the Governor General, that his troops had been vanguished, not by the enemy, but by the ocean. An enemy whom the ocean obeyed with such docility might well be deemed invincible by man In the head-quarters of Valdez. at Leyderdorp, many plans of Leyden and the neighbourhood were found lying in confusion about the room Upon the table was a burned farewell of that General to the scenes of his discomfiture, written in a Latin worthy of Juan Vargas; "Vale civitas, valete castelli parvi, qui relicti estis propter aquam et non per vim inimicorum " In his precipitate retreat before the advancing rebels, the commander had but just found time for this elegant effusion, and for his parting instructions to Colonel Borgia that the fortress of Lammen was to be f

to writing,

censure an been briber

many repeated, and a few believed. On the 4th of October,

Letter to Count John, 7th May, 1574 Archives, etc., 17 385 398.

the day following that on which the relief of the city was effected, the wind shifted to the north-east, and again blew a tempest. It was as if the waters, having now done their work, had been rolled back to the ocean by an Omnipotent hand, for in the course of a few days, the land was bare again, and the work of reconstructing the dykes commenced.¹

After a brief interval of repose, Leyden had regained its former position. The Prince, with advice of the estates, had granted the city, as a reward for its sufferings, a ten day's annual fair, without tolls or taxes, and as a further manifestation of the gratitude entertained by the people of Holland and Zeland for the heroism of the citizens, it was resolved that an academy or university should be forthwith established within their walls. The University of Leyden, afterwards so illustrious, was thus founded in the very darkest period of the country's struggle.

The university was endowed with a handsome revenue, principally derived from the ancient abbey of Egmont, and

¹ Bor, vii. 560. Meteren, v. 95. Hoofd, ix. 383. Mendoza, xii. 265.—The best authority, after Fruytiers, for the history of this memorable siege, is Bor, who was living at Utrecht at the time. He afterwards, in writing his Chronicle, used the account drawn up by Jan Fruytiers, from information and documents furnished by the magistrates and many persons present at the siege. Bor had also enjoyed frequent communications with the Seigneur de Nordtwyck, commandant of the city during the siege, with Dirk de Montfort, at whose house the Prince of Orange lodged on the 4th of October, and with other individuals. He had read in the original every letter which he quotes in his history. also, with amusing gravity, a variety of acrostics, anagrams, and other poetical effusions, wonderful specimens all of the uncouth gambols by which the poets of that day and country were in the habit of exhibiting their enthusiasm. Among other productions of the muse elicited by the triumphant termination to the siege, he alludes with emotion to a poem which he hoped was soon to see the light. This was ar Ode on the Siege of Leyden, "in six hundred and eleven stanzas of eight lines each," which the reader was at liberty "to sing or to read," as best suited him. To sing six hundred and eleven stanzas, eight lines each, of a Dutch poem, one would think almost as formidable a doom as to endure the horrors of the siege which it celebrated .- Bor, vii. 561. Don Bernardino de Mendoza is the chief Spanish authority.—Compare Bentivoglio, lib. viii. 151-156; and Cabrera, Hist. Don Filipe Segundo, lib. x. cap. xvii., xix., xxi. The last historian sees nothing worthy of admiration or respect in the conduct of the Hollanders, and he is incensed with Geronimo Franchi for having wasted nearly the whole of one book on ² Bor, vii. 561. an account of the memorable relief. * Ibid., viii. 503. 3 Ibid., viii. 593. Meteren, v. 95.

was provided with a number of professors colored f - al genius, learning and

scholars of the Nethe

1574]

institution was founded was certainly a masterpiece of pon derous irony, for as the fie ion of the Kings sovereignty was still maintained Philip was gravely made to establish the university, as a reward to Leyden for rebellion to lum "Considering said this wonderful charter," "that dunng these present wearsome wars within our provinces of Holland and Zeland, all good instruction of youth in the sciences and liberal arts is likely to come into entire Considering the differences of religion-con sidering that we are inclined to gratify our city of Leiden with its burchers, on account of the heary burthens sustained by them during this u ir with such faithfulness-we have resolved, after rively deliberating with our dear cousin II illiam. Prince of Oringe stadholder to erect a free public school and university, etc. etc. etc. So ran the document establishing this famous academy all needful regulations for the government and police of the institution being entrusted by Philip to his above-mentioned dear cousin of Omnoe '

R 11

Wit less pedantry, interposed as it was between the acts of the longest and dreamest tragedy of modern time. On the 5th of Lebruary, 1575 the city of Leyden, so lately the victim of famine and postilence, had crowned itself with flowers At seven in the morning after a solemn religious celebration in the Church of St. Peter," a grand procession was formed It was preceded by a military escort consisting of the burgher militia and the five companies of infantry stationed in the Then came, drawn by four horses, a splendid tnumphal chanot, on which sat a female figure, arrayed in snow white This was the Holy Gospel. She was attended by the I our Evangelists, who walked on foot at each side of her Next followed Justice with sword and scales, mounted, blindfold, upon a unicorn while those learned

¹ See the text of a e Octros by which the University was established. in Nor via 591 593-Bor vm 594

¹¹

doctors, Julian, Papinian, Ulpian, and Tribonian, rode on either side, attended by two lackeys and four men at arms. After these came Medicine, on horseback, holding in one hand a treatise of the healing art, in the other a garland of drugs. The curative goddess rode between the four eminent physicians, Hippocrates, Galen, Dioscorides, and Theophrastus, and was attended by two footmen and four pikebearers. Last of the allegorical personages came Minerva, prancing in complete steel, with lance in rest, and bearing her Medusa shield. Aristotle and Plato, Cicero and Virgil, all on horseback, with attendants in antique armour at their back, surrounded the daughter of Jupiter, while the city band, discoursing eloquent music from hautboy and viol, came upon the heels of the allegory. Then followed the mace-bearers and other officials, escorting the orator of the day, the newly-appointed professors and doctors, the magistrates and dignitaries, and the body of the citizens generally

completing the procession.

Marshalled in this order, through triumphal arches, and over a pavement strewed with flowers, the procession moved slowly up and down the different streets, and along the quiet canals of the city. As it reached the Nuns' Bridge, a barge of triumph, gorgeously decorated, came floating slowly down the sluggish Rhine. Upon its deck, under a canopy enwreathed with laurels and oranges, and adorned with tapestry, sat Apollo, attended by the Nine Muses, all in classical costume; at the helm stood Neptune with his trident. The Muses executed some beautiful concerted pieces; Apollo twanged his lute. Having reached the landing-place, this deputation from Parnassus stepped on shore, and stood awaiting the arrival of the procession. Each professor, as he advanced, was gravely embraced and kissed by Apollo and all the Nine Muses in turn, who greeted their arrival besides with the recitation of an elegant Latin poem. classical ceremony terminated, the whole procession marched together to the cloister of Saint Barbara, the place prepared for the new university, where they listened to an eloquent oration by the Rev. Caspar Kolhas, after which they partook of a magnificent banquet. With this memorable feast, in the place where famine had so lately reigned, the ceremonies were concluded.

¹ Bor, viii. 594, 595

CHAPTER III.

BARREN DIPLOMACY AND SUBMARINE LAURELS

Latter days of the Blood Council—Informal and insucere negotiations for pease—Characteristics of the negotiations and of their diplomatic correspondence—Ir: Junius—Secret conferences between Dr. Lenninus and Orange—Steedfastress of the Prince—Changesun the internal govern ment of the northern provinces—Generosity and increasing power of the municipalities—Incipient jealous in regret to Orange robust—Illus offer of resignation refused by the estates—Its elevation of almost inhinited power—Keneved meditation of Maximilian—Views and positions of the partites—Advice of Orange—Opening of negotiations at Ireda—Proposition—A document proposition—A document on the partites—Advice of Orange—Opening of negotiations and counter proposition—A document of the partites—Advice of Orange—Opening of negotiations as a likela—Informer diplomacy, and unastification results—Informer diplomacy and unastification results—Informer diplomacy and unastification of the proposition—Advice deplomacy and unastification of the proposition—Advice diplomacy and unastification of the proposition and counterproposition—Adviced planton and the prince of Orange—Act defining his powers—Charlotte de Boulhom—Charlotte, fortunes, and the proposition and counterproposition—Adviced planton and the prince of Orange—Act defining his powers—Charlotte de Boulhom—Charlotte, fortunes, and the proposition and counterproposition and counterproposition

Great Powers the sovereignty should be offered—Secret international relations—Mission to England—Unsatisfactory negotiations with I liza beth—Position of the Grand Commander—Siege of Zienekeee—Generosity of Count John—Desperate project of the France—Death and character of Kequesees.

THE Council of Troubles, or, as it will be for ever denominated in history, the Council of Blood, still easted, although the Grand Commander, upon his arrival in the Netherlands, had advised his sovereign to consent to the immediate abolition of so othous an institution. Philip, accepting the advice of his Governor and his cabinet, had accordingly authorized him, by a letter of the 10th of March, 1574, to take that step if he continued to believe it advisable.

3 Gachard, Notice, etc., 24 26.

¹ Lettre de Requesens à thilippe II., Dec., 30, 1673, apud Gachard, Notice, etc., 21.

Requesens had made use of this permission to extort money from the obedient portion of the provinces. An assembly of deputies was held at Brussels on the 7th of June. 1574, and there was a tedious interchange of protocols, reports, and remonstrances.1 The estates, not satisfied with the extinction of a tribunal which had at last worn itself out by its own violence, and had become inactive through lack of victims, insisted on greater concessions. They demanded the departure of the Spanish troops, the establishment of a council of Netherlanders in Spain for Netherland affairs, the restoration to offices in the provinces of natives and natives only; for these drawers of documents thought it possible, at that epoch, to recover by pedantry what their brethren of Holland and Zeland were maintaining by the sword. It was not the moment for historical disquisition, citations from Solomon, nor chopping of logic; yet with such lucubrations were reams of paper filled, and days and weeks occupied.3 The result was what might have been expected. The Grand Commander obtained but little money; the estates obtained none of their demands; and the Blood-Council remained, as it were, suspended in mid-air. It continued to transact business at intervals during the administration of Requesens,4 and at last, after nine years of existence, was destroyed by . the violent imprisonment of the Council of State at Brussels. This event, however, belongs to a subsequent page of this history.

Noircarmes had argued, from the tenor of Sainte Aldegonde's letters, that the Prince would be ready to accept his pardon upon almost any terms. Noircarmes was dead, but Sainte Aldegonde still remained in prison, very anxious for his release, and as well disposed as ever to render services in any secret negotiation. It will be recoilected that, at the capitulation of Middelburg, it had been distinctly stipulated by the Prince that Colonel Mondragon should at once effect the liberation of Sainte Aldegonde, with certain other

2 Ibid.

¹ Bor, viii. 517-523, seq. ² Ibid.

³ Vide Bor, vii. 517-523, seq.

⁴ Gachard, Notice, etc., 27, 28, and note, p. 27.

⁵ Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 362-373.

⁶ He died March 4th, 1574, at Utrecht, of poison, according to suspicion. -Bor, vii. 492.

prisoners, or bimself return into confinement. He had done neither the one nor the other. The putnots still languished in prison, some of them being subjected to exceedingly harsh treatment, but Mondragon, although repeatedly summoned as an officer and a gentleman, by the Prince, to return to cap tusty, had been forbidden by the Grand Commander to redcem his pledge. 1

Sainte Aldegonde was now released from prison upon parole, and despatched on a secret mission to the Prince and estates,2 . As before, he was instructed that two points were to be left untouched—the authority of the King and the question of religion. The result of negotiations upon such a basis was easily to be foreseen Breath, time, and paper were profusely wasted and nothing gained. The Prince assured his friend, as he had done secret agents previously sent to him, that he was himself ready to leave the land, if by so doing he could confer upon it the blessing of peace. but that all hope of reaching a reasonable conclusion from the premises established was futile. The emoy treated also with the estates, and received from them in return an elaborate report which was addressed immediately to the King The style of this paper was bold and hlunt, its substance bitter and indigestible. It informed Philip, what he had heard often enough before, that the Spaniards must go and the exiles come back, the inquisition be abolished and the ancient privileges restored, the Roman Catholic religion renounce its supremacy, and the reformed religion receive permission to exist unmolested, before he could call himself master of Holland With this paper, which was en trusted to Sainte Aldegonde, by him to be delivered to the Grand Commander, who was, after reading it, to forward it to its destination, the negotiator returned to his prison

 ¹⁷th Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit, in. DXGII
 DXIIV DXLV —Compare Groen v Prinst, Archives, etc., v 71, 72
 Bor, vii. 534. Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit,

m 400, seq Ibid Ibid

[&]quot;Quant à luy if etoit content, si ceulx là le treuvoient bon de se re tirer du pays, aîn que tant meula ils puissent parrenir à ce que dessus," etc.—Ga kard, Gind nume le Taest, in. 400.

^{*} Hor, vn. 535. * See the * Vertooning "in Bor, vii. 535 seg

Commander to treat secretly with the Prince. He was, how ever, not found ver tractable when the commissioners opened the subject of his own pardon and reconclination with the King, and he absolutely refused to treat at all except with the co operation of the estates. He, moreover, objected to the use of the word "pardon" on the ground that he had never done anything requiring his Majesty's forgiveness. If adversity should visit him he cared but little for it he had lived long enough he said and should die with some glory, regretting the disorders and oppressions which had taken place, but conscious that it had not been in his power to remedy them. When reminded by the commissioners of the king's power, he replied that he knew his Majesty to be very mighty, but that there was a king more powerful still even God the Creator, who, as he humbly hoped, was upon his sada.

declared it almost impossible for himself or the estries to hold up formal communication with the Spanish government, is such communications were not safe. No trust could be reposed either in safe-conducts or hostinges. I aith had been too often broken by the administration. The promise made by the Duchess of Parina to the nobles, and afterwards violated, the recent treachery of Mondragon, the return of three exchanged prisoners from the Hague, who did next day of poison administered before their release, the frequent uttempts upon his own life—all such constantly recurring ripes made it doubtful, in the opinion of the Prince whether it would be possible to find commissioners to treat with his Majesty's government. All would fear assassimation, after wards to be disacreed by the king and pardoned by the Pope. After much consersation in this vein, the Prince gave the Sprinsh agents warming that he might exentially be holiged to seek the protection of some foreign power for the provinces. In this connection he mid, us, of the memory inconnection is the mid, us, of the memory inconnection is made used.

The letters and documents concerning this secret reg station are published in Gachard, Guillaurie le Taur, s. L. 403 430. See also Bor vii 485

² bee the account by Bone, in Cachard, Cottespondance ele Cuillaume le Tacit in 378 370.

^{*} Hist, 11 3"S 379 350.

able metaphor, so often repeated afterwards, that "the country was a beautiful damsel, who certainly did not lack suitors able and willing to accept her and defend her against the world.". As to the matter of religion, he said he was willing to leave it to be settled by the estates-general; but doubted whether anything short of entire liberty of worship would ever satisfy the people.2

Subsequently there were held other conferences, between the Prince and Doctor Leoninus, with a similar result, all attempts proving fruitless to induce him to abandon his position upon the subject of religion, or to accept a pardon on any terms save the departure of the foreign troops, the assembling of the estates-general, and entire freedom of religion. Even if he were willing to concede the religious question himself, he observed that it was idle to hope either from the estates or people a hand's-breadth of concession upon that point. Leoninus was subsequently admitted to a secret conference with the estates of Holland, where his representations were firmly met by the same arguments as those already used by the Prince.3

These proceedings on the part of Sainte Aldegonde, Champagny, Junius, and Elbertus Leoninus extended through the whole summer and autumn of 1574, and were not terminated until January of the following year.

Changes fast becoming necessary in the internal govern-

¹ Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 387.—Compare Bor, viii. 613.

² Ibid. ³ Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii 403-430. Bor, vii. 565, seq.—Compare Hoofd, ix. 400, 401; Wagenaer, d. vii. 25-27. See also a very ample memoir of the distinguished scholar and diplomatist, Albert de Leeuw (or Elbertus Isoninus), by J. P. Van Cappelle. Bijdragen tot de Ges. d. Nederl., 1-204. He began his active life as law professor at Louvain, in which city he married Barbara de Haze, with whom he lived more than fifty-two years. The lady, however, seems not to have pined away after the termination of this wedlock of more than half a century; for she survived her husband thirty-six years. The biographer shrewdly suspects, therefore, that she must have been a "very young miss when she was married." "Dit meisje moet nog seer jong zijn geweest, toen Leoninus zich met haar in het huwelijk begaf."—V. de Capelle, 93, note 8. He was born at Bommel in 1519 or 1520, and died in 1598, full di years and honours. His public services, on various important occasions, will be often alluded to in subsequent pages.

ment of the provinces, were also undertaken during this year Hitherto the Prince had exercised his power under the con venient fiction of the King's authority, systematically con ducting the rebellion in the name of his Majesty, and as his Majesty's studholder By this process an immense power was lodged in his hands, nothing less, indeed, than the supreme executive and legislative functions of the land, while, since the revolt had become, as it were, perpetual, ample but anomalous functions had been additionally thrust upon him by the estates and by the general voice of the people.

The two provinces, even while deprived of Harlem and Amsterdam, now raised two hundred and ten thousand floring monthly, whereas Alva had never been able to extract from Holland more than two hundred and seventy-one thousand florins yearly. They paid all rather than pay a tenth. In consequence of this liberality, the cities insensibly acquired a greater influence in the government. The coining contest between the centrifugal anstocratic principle, represented by these corporations, and the central popular authority of the stadholder, was already foreshidowed, but at first the estates were in perfect harmon; with the Prince They even urged upon him more power than he desired, and declined functions which he wished them to exercise. On the 7th of September, 1573 it had been formally proposed by the general council to confer a regular and unlimited dictatorship upon him," but in the course of a year from that time, the

brought the whole subject before an assembly of the estates of Holland, on the 20th October, 1574. He stated the in conveniences produced by the anomalous condition of the government He complained that the common people had often fallen into the error that the money rused for public purposes had been levied for his benefit only, and that they had, therefore, been less willing to contribute to the taxes. As the only remedy for these exils, he tendered his resig

¹ Less H II . Mar 15 und 17, 15-6 td. 16, 19.

Rhut, Hist Holl Staatureg, dl i 86.
Kluit, L 78 et s. y Wagenaer, vil. 5, 6.

nation of all the powers with which he was clothed, so that the estates might then take the government, which they could exercise without conflict or control. For himself, he had never desired power, except as a means of being ustful to his country, and he did not offer his resignation from unwillingness to stand by the cause, but from a hearty desire to save it from disputes among its friends. He was ready now, as ever, to shed the last drop of his blood to maintain the freedom of the land.

This straightforward language produced an instanteneous effect. They were embarrassed, for they did not like to relinquish the authority which they had begun to relish, nor to accept the resignation of a man who was indispensable. They felt that to give up William of Orange at that time was to accept the Spanish yoke for ever. At an assembly held at Delft on the 12th of November, 1574, they accordingly requested him "to continue in his blessed government, with the council established near him," 2 and for this end they formally offered to him, "under the name of Governor or Regent," absolute power, authority, and sovereign command. In particular they conferred on him the entire control of all the ships of war, hitherto reserved to the different cities, together with the right to dispose of all prizes and all moneys raised for the support of fleets. They gave him also unlimited power over the domains; they agreed that all magistracies, militia bands, guilds, and communities, should make solemn oath to contribute taxes and to receive garrisons, exactly as the Prince, with his council, should ordain; but they made it a condition that the estates should be convened and consulted upon requests, impositions, and upon all changes in the governing body. It was also stipulated that the judges of the supreme court and of the exchequer, with other high officers, should be appointed by and with the consent of the estates.3

The Prince expressed himself willing to accept the govern-

¹ Resol. Holl., Oct. 20, Nov. 1, bl. 148-176. Kluit, d. i. 96, 97. Wagenaer, vii. 10, 11.

Wagenaer, vii. 10, 11.

² Resol. Holl., Nov. 1574, bl. 178. Wagenaer, vii. 11, 12, 13. Kluit, 97, 98, d. 1.

³ Resol. Holl. Kluit, Wagenaer, ubi sup. Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., v. 90-94.

ment upon these terms He, however, demanded an allow ance of forty five thousand florins monthly for the army expenses and other current outlays! Here, however, the estites refused their consent. In a mercantile spirit, un worthy the occasion and the man with whom they were dealing, they endeavoured to chaffer where they should have been only too willing to comply, and they attempted to reduce the reasonable demand of the Prince to thirty thousand florins 2 The Prince denounced the niggardiness of the estates in the strongest language, and declared that he would rather leave the country for ever, with the maintenance of his own honour, than accept the government upon such disgraceful terms. The estates, disturbed by his vehemence, and struck with its justice, instantly, and without further deliberation, consented to his demand. They granted the forty five thousand florins monthly, and the Prince assumed the government, thus remodelled

During the autumn and early winter of the year 1574, the Emperor Maximilian had been actively exerting himself to bring about a predication of the Netherlands. He was certainly sincere, for an excellent reason "The Emperor muntuns," said Saint Goard, French ambassador at Madrid, "that if peace is not made with the Beggars, the Empire will depart from the house of Austria, and that such is the determination of the electors". On the other hand if Philip were not wears of the war, at any rate his means for carrying it on were diminishing daily. Requesens could raise no money in the Netherlands, his secretary wrote to Sprin, that the exchequer was at its last gasp, and the cabinet of Madad was at its wits' end, and almost incapable of raising ways and means. The peace party was obtaining the upper hand, the fierce policy of Alva regarded with increasing disfavour. "The people here," wrote Sunt Goard

¹ Resol Holl , Nov 13 and 25, 1574, bl 195, 207, 208. Klus, a.

Resol Hell., Nov 25, 1574, bl 207, 208 hesol Holl, Nov 25, 1574, bl 228

They made the offer of thurty th usand in the morning an I granted

from Madrid, "are completely desperate, whatever pains they take to put a good face on the matter. They desire most earnestly to treat, without losing their character." It seemed, nevertheless, impossible for Philip to bend his neck. The hope of wearing the imperial crown had alone made his bigotry feasible. To less potent influences it was adamant; and even now, with an impoverished exchequer, and after seven years of unsuccessful warfare, his purpose was not less rigid than at first. "The Hollanders demand liberty of conscience," said Saint Goard, "to which the King will never consent, or I am much mistaken."

As for Orange, he was sincerely in favour of peace—but not a dishonourable peace, in which should be renounced all the objects of the war. He was far from sanguine on the subject, for he read the signs of the times and the character of Philip too accurately to believe much more in the success of the present than in that of the past efforts of Maximilian. He was pleased that his brother-in-law, Count Schwartzburg, had been selected as the Emperor's agent in the affair, but expressed his doubts whether much good would come of the proposed negotiations. Remembering the many traps which in times past had been set by Philip and his father, he feared that the present transaction might likewise prove a snare. "We have not forgotten the words 'ewig' and 'einig' in the treaty with Landgrave Philip," he wrote; "at the same time we beg to assure his Imperial Majesty that we desire nothing more than a good peace, tending to the glory of God, the service of the King of Spain, and the prosperity of his subjects." 2

This was his language to his brother, in a letter which was meant to be shown to the Emperor. In another, written on the same day, he explained himself with more clearness and stated his distrust with more energy. There were no Papists left, except a few ecclesiastics, he said, so much had the number of the Reformers been augmented, through the singular grace of God. It was out of the question to suppose, therefore, that a measure, dooming all who were not Catholics to exile, could be entertained. None would change their religion, and none would consent, voluntarily, to abandon

² Ibid., v. 61-65.

for ever their homes, friends, and property. "Such a peace," he said, "would be poor and pitiable indeed "1

These, then, were the sentiments of the parties now about to negotiate. The mediator was anxious for a settlement, because the interests of the imperial house required it. The King of Spain was desirous of peace, but was unwilling to concede a hair. The Prince of Orange was equally anxious to terminate the war, but was determined not to abandon the objects for which it had been undertaken. A favourable result, therefore, seemed hardly possible. A whole people 14' 11 at a ge as 1 am and general with Park to a

too far apart to be brought together by the most elastic compromise. The Prince addressed an earnest appeal to the

It was now resolved that all the votes of the assembly should consist of five one for the nobles and large cities of Holland, one for the estates of Zeland, one for the small cities of Holland, one for the cities Bonimel and Buren, and the fifth for William of Orange. The Prince thus effectually held in his hands three votes—his own, that of the small cities, which through his means only had been admitted to the assembly, and thirdly, that of Buren, the capital of his son's carldon. He thus exercised a controlling influence over the coming deliberations. The ten commissioners, who were appointed by the estates for the peace negotiations. were all his frieids. Among them were Sainte Aldegonde, Paul Buis, Charles Boisot, and Doctor Junius The plenipotentianes of the Spanish government were Leonings. the Seigneur de Rassinghem, Cornelius Sais, and Arnold Sasbout 4

The proceedings were opened at Breda upon the and of

¹ Archives et Correspondance, v. 73, 74.
² Box, viii. 503, 506. Revol. Holl., Feb. 6, 1575.
³ Kerol. Hol., Feb. c. 6, 2, 1575, 11, 47, 51.
⁴ Resv.l. Holl., Feb. 12, 1575, 11, 49, 50.

March, 1575.1 The royal commissioners took the initiative, requesting to be informed what complaints the estates had to make, and offering to remove, if possible, all grievances which they might be suffering. The states' commissioners replied that they desired nothing, in the first place, but an answer to the petition which they had already presented to the King. This was the paper placed in the hands of Sainte Aldegonde during the informal negotiations of the preceding year. answer was accordingly given, but couched in such vague and general language as to be quite without meaning. The estates then demanded a categorical reply to the two principal demands in the petition, namely, the departure of the foreign troops and the assembling of the states-general. They were asked what they understood by foreigners and by the assembly of the states-general. They replied that by foreigners they meant those who were not natives, and particularly the Spaniards. By the estates-general they meant the same body before which, in 1555, Charles had resigned his sovereignty The royal commissioners made an extremely unsatisfactory answer, concluding with a request that all cities, fortresses, and castles, then in the power of the estates, together with all their artillery and vessels of war, should be delivered to the King. The Roman Catholic worship, it was also distinctly stated, was to be re-established at once exclusively throughout the Netherlands; those of the reformed religion receiving permission, for that time only, to convert their property into cash within a certain time, and to depart the country.2

Orange and the estates made answer on the 21st March. It could not be called hard, they said, to require the withdrawal of the Spanish troops, for this had been granted in 1559, for less imperious reasons. The estates had, indeed, themselves made use of foreigners, but those foreigners had never been allowed to participate in the government. With regard to the assembly of the states-general, that body had always enjoyed the right of advising with the sovereign on the condition of the country, and on general measures of government. Now it was only thought necessary to summon them, in order that

¹ Bor, viii. 597. ² Resol. Holl., Maart 7, 1575, bl. 121, 122, 123, 125. Maart 17, 1575, bl. 158, et seq. Bor, viii. 597, sqq. Wagenaer, vii. 31

they might give their consent to the King's "requests" Touching the delivery of eities and eitidels, artillery and ships. the proposition was pronounced to resemble that made by the wolves to the sheep, in the fable-that the dogs should be delivered up, as a preliminary to a lasting peace. It was un reasonable to request the Hollanders to abandon their religion or their country The reproach of heresy was unjust, for they still held to the Catholie Apostolic Church, wishing only to purify it of its abuses. Moreover, it was certainly more cruel to expel a whole population than to dismiss three or four thousand Spaniards who for seven long years had been eating their fill at the expense of the provinces. It would be impos sible for the exiles to dispose of their property, for all would, by the proposed measure, be sellers, while there would be no nurchasers

The royal plenipotentiaries, making answer to this communication upon the 1st of April, signified a willingness that the Spanish soldiers should depart, if the states would consent

sworn to maintain the true worship at the moment of assum ing the sovereignty. The dissenters might, however, be allowed a period of six months in which to leave the land. and eight or ten years for the sale of their property. After the hercitics had all departed, his Majesty did not doubt that trade and manufactures would flourish again, along with the old religion As for the Spanish inquisition, there was not, and there never had been, any intention of establishing it in the Netherlands *

No doubt there was something specious in this paper. It appeared to cont⁴In considerable concessions. The Prince and estates had claimed the departure of the Spaniards. It was now promised that they should depart. They had de manded the assembling of the states-general. It was now promised that they should assemble. They had denounced the inquisition It was now averred that the Spanish inquisition was not to be established

¹ Levol. Holl., Mart 21, 1575, 11 166. Bor, vii., 599. Wager 201, 111. 34 32. 1 hesol Holl , Apl., 1575, LL 202. Box, viz. 602.

Nevertheless, the commissioners of the Prince were not deceived by such artifices. There was no parity between the cases of the Spanish soldiery and of the troops in service of the estates. To assemble the states-general was idle, if they were to be forbidden the settlement of the great question at issue. With regard to the Spanish inquisition, it mattered little whether the slaughter-house were called Spanish or Flemish, or simply the Blood-Council. It was, however, necessary for the states' commissioners to consider their reply very carefully; for the royal plenipotentiaries had placed themselves upon specious grounds. It was not enough to feel that the King's government was paltering with them; it was likewise necessary for the states' agents to impress this fact

upon the people.

There was a pause in the deliberations. Meantime, Count Schwartzburg, reluctantly accepting the conviction that the religious question was an insurmountable obstacle to a peace, left the provinces for Germany.1 The last propositions of the government plenipotentiaries had been discussed in the councils of the various cities,2 so that the reply of the Prince and estates was delayed until the 1st of June. They admitted, in this communication, that the offer to restore ancient privileges had an agreeable sound; but regretted that if the whole population were to be banished, there would be but few to derive advantage from the restoration. If the King would put an end to religious persecution, he would find as much loyalty in the provinces as his forefathers had found. It was out of the question, they said, for the states to disarm and to deliver up their strong places, before the Spanish soldiery had retired, and before peace had been established. It was their wish to leave the question of religion, together with all other disputed matters, to the decision of the assembly. Were it possible, in the meantime, to devise any effectual method for restraining hostilities, it would gladly be embraced.3

On the 8th of July, the royal commissioners inquired what guarantee the states would be willing to give, that the decision of the general assembly, whatever it might be,

¹ Bor, viii. 506, 604. ² Wagenaar, vii. 43.

³ Resol. Holl., Apl. 19, 1575, bl. 240; May 20, 23, 1575; June 5, 1575, bl. 240, 305, 314, 316, 355. Bor, viii. 605-608.

should be obeyed. The demand was answered by another, in which the King's agents were questioned as to their own guarantees Hereupon it was stated that his Majesty would give his word and sign manual, together with the word and signature of the Emperor into the bargain In exchange for these promises, the Prince and estates were expected to give their own oaths and seals, together with a number of hostages 'Over and above this, they were requested to deliver up the cities of Brill and Enkhuizen, Illushing and Arnemuyde 1 I he disparity of such guarantees was ridiculous The royal word, even when strengthened by the imperial promise, and confirmed by the autographs of Philip and Maximilian, was not so solid a security, in the opinion of Netherlanders, as to outweigh four cities in Holland and Zeland, with all their population and wealth. To give collateral pledges and hostages upon one side, while the King offered none, was to assign a superiority to the royal word, over that of the Prince and the estates, which there was no disposition to recognize Moreover, it was very eogently urged that to give up the cities was to give as security for the contract, some of the principal contracting parties

This closed the negotiations The provincial plempo tentiaries took their leave by a paper dated 13th July, 1575 which recapitulated the mun incidents of the conference They expressed their deep regret that his Majesty should insist so firmly on the banishment of the Reformers for it was unjust to reserve the provinces to the sole use of a small number of Catholics They lamented that the proposition which had been made, to refer the religious question to the estates, had neither been loyally accepted, nor candidly They inferred therefore, that the object of the royal government and been to amuse the states while time was thus guned for reducing the country into a slavery more abject than any which had yet existed. On the other hand the royal commissioners as solemnly averred that the whole responsibility for the failure of the negotiations be-longed to the estates.4

I esol Ho'l, July 8, 1575, IL 4°
 I esol Holl, July 8, 16, 1575, II 4°8, 506. Wagenser vii. 40.
 P esol Holl, July 16, 12, 506. Wagenser vii. 40, 50. Iker, viii. 610, 4 kesol, Holl, July 16, 1575, II 512. Por viii. 612.

It was the general opinion in the insurgent provinces that the government had been insincere from the beginning, and had neither expected nor desired to conclude a peace. It is probable, however, that Philip was sincere; so far as it could be called sincerity to be willing to conclude a peace, if the provinces would abandon the main objects of the war. With his impoverished exchequer, and ruin threatening his whole empire, if this mortal combat should be continued many years longer, he could have no motive for further bloodshed, provided all heretics should consent to abandon the country. As usual, however, he left his agents in the dark, as to his real intentions. Even Requesens was as much in doubt as to the King's secret purposes as Margaret of Parma had ever been in former times." Moreover, the Grand Commander and the government had, after all, made a great mistake in their diplomacy. The estates of Brabant, although strongly desirous that the Spanish troops should be withdrawn, were equally staunch for the maintenance of the Catholic religion, and many of the southern provinces entertained the same sentiments. Had the Governor, therefore, taken the states' commissioners at their word, and left the decision of the religious question to the general assembly, he might perhaps have found the vote in his favour.2 In this case, it is certain that the Prince of Orange and

¹ See Kluit, Hist. der Holl. Staatsreg., i. 90, 91, note 34.—Compare the remarks of Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., v. 259-262; Bor, viii. 606, 615; Meteren, v. 100; Hoofd, x. 410.—Count John of Nassau was distrustful and disdainful from the beginning. Against his brother's loyalty and the straightforward intentions of the estates, he felt that the whole force of the Macchiavelli system of policy would be brought to bear with great effect. He felt that the object of the King's party was to temporize, to confuse, and to deceive. He, did not believe them capable of conceding the real object in dispute, but he feared lest they might obscure the judgment of the plain and well-meaning people with whom they had to deal. Alluding to the constant attempts made to poison himself and his brother, he likens the pretended negotiations to Venetian drugs, by which eyesight, hearing, feeling, and intellect were destroyed. Under this pernicious influence, the luckless people would not perceive the fire burning around them, but would shrink at a rustling leaf. Not comprehending then the tendency of their own acts, they would "lay bare their own backs to the rod, and bring faggots for their own funeral pile."—Archives, etc., v. 131-137.

² Vigl. ad Hopp., ep. 253. ³ See Wagenaer, vii. 52.

his party would have been placed in a very andward

The internal government of the insurgent provinces had remained upon the footing which we have seen established in the autumn of 1574 but in the course of this summer (1575) however the foundation was laid for the union of Holland and Zeland under the authority of Orange. The selfish principle of municipal anstocracy, which had tended to keep asunder these various groups of cities was now repressed-ly, the energy of the Prince, and the strong determination of the people.

In April 1575 certain articles of union between Holland and Zeland

to draw up

ſ

1575]

provinces 1

The Princes as sovereign, should have absolute power in all matters concerning the defence of the country. He was to appoint military officers high and low, establish and remove barrions punish offenders against the laws of wir. He was to regulate the expenditure of all mone; toted in the estates. He was to minitan the law, in the king's name, as Count of Holland, and to appoint all judicial officers upon nominations by the estates. He was, at the usual times, to appoint and renew the magnitudes of the cures, according to their constitutions. He was to protect the exercise of the Lyangeheal Reformed religion and to appoint and renew the magnitudes of the Eventure of the Roman religion, without per mitting however, that search should be made into the creed of any person. A deliberative and executive council by which the jealousy of the corporations had intended to hamps his government, did not come into more than normal existence.

Mal whener in 10 22 23 25 -Compare Groen v Priest As-

The articles of union having been agreed upon, the Prince, desiring an unfettered expression of the national will, wished the ordinance to be laid before the people in their primary assemblies. The estates, however, were opposed to this democratic proceeding. They represented that it had been customary to consult, after the city magistracies, only the captains of companies and the deans of guilds on matters of government. The Prince, yielding the point, the captains of companies and deans of guilds accordingly alone united with the aristocratic boards in ratifying the instrument by which his authority over the two united provinces was established. On the 4th of June this first union was solemnized.

Upon the 11th of July the Prince formally accepted the government.² He, however, made an essential change in a very important clause of the ordinance. In place of the words the "Roman religion," he insisted that the words "religion at variance with the Gospel," should be substituted in the article by which he was enjoined to prohibit the exercise of such religion.³ This alteration rebuked the bigotry which had already grown out of the successful resistance to bigotry, and left the door open for a general religious toleration.

Early in this year the Prince had despatched Sainte Aldegonde on a private mission to the Elector Palatine. During some of his visits to that potentate he had seen at Heidelberg the Princess Charlotte of Bourbon. That lady was daughter of the Duc de Montpensier, the most ardent of the Catholic Princes of France, and the one who at the conferences of Bayonne had been most indignant at the Queen Dowager's hesitation to unite heartily with the schemes of Alva and Philip for the extermination of the Hugugaots. His daughter,

chives, v. 268-272. See Resol. Holl., June 10, 21, 23, 1575, bl. 381,

Wagenaer, vii. 19. Resol. Holl., May 21, 1575, bl. 311, 313; June 4, 1575, bl. 359.—Compare Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., v. 271, 372.

<sup>271, 372.

2</sup> Resol. Holl., July 12, 15, 18, 19, 20, 1575, bl. 120, 141, 487, 501,

^{514.} Bor, viiì. 641-643. Hoofd, x. 420, 421.

Resol. Holl., July 22, 30, 1575, bl. 528, 542. (Wagenaer, vii. 22.—Compare Groen v. Prinst., Archives, v. 272; Kluit, Holl. Staatsreg., i. 116, 117, note 55.

a woman of beauty, intelligence, and virtue, forced before the canonical age to take the religious vows, had been placed in the convent of Jouarrs, of which she had become Ablysis. Always secretly inclined to the Reformed religion, she had filed secretly from her cloister, in the year of horiors, 1572, and had found refuge at the court of the Elector Palatine, after which step her father refused to receive her letters, to Eontholite a farthing to her support, or even to acknowledge her claims upon him by a single line or message of affection.

Under these circumstances the outcast Princess, who had arrived at years of maturity, might be considered her own mistress, and she was neither morally nor legally bound, when her hand was sought in marriage by the great champion of the Reformation, to east the consent of a parent who loathed her religion, and denied her existence. The legality of the divorce from Anna of Saxony had been settled by a full expression of the ecclesiastical authority which she most respected; I the facts upon which the divorce had been founded having been proced lessond practicities.

founded having been proved beyond penalisenture. Nothing, in truth, could well be more unfortunate in its results than the famous Saxon maringe, the arrangements for which had occasioned so much pondening to Philip, and so much diplomatic correspondence on the part of high personages in Germany, the Netherlands, and Spain Certainly, it was of but little consequence to what church the unhappy Princers belonged, and they must be slightly versed in history or

to have exer

sentiments o regulated nature; almost a funatic from the beginning. The dislike which succjeded to her fantastic fondness for the Prince, as well as her general eccentracty, had soon become the talk of all the court at Brussels. She would pass week after weak without emerging from her chamber, keeping the shutters closed and candles burning, day and night. She quarrelled violently with Countess Lemont for precedence,

Groen v. Prirst , Archives, L. 356.

¹ Archives et Correspondance, v. 111.
2 "Acte de cang Ministres du St. I vangule par lequel ils declarent le matige du Pirice di Orange êtire legrime."—direktivi, ev. 216-226.

so that the ludicrous contentions of the two ladies in antechambers and doorways were the theme and the amusement of society. Her insolence, not only in private but in public, towards her husband became intolerable. "I could not do otherwise than bear it with sadness and patience," said the Prince, with great magnanimity, "hoping that with age would come improvement." Nevertheless, upon one occasion, at a supper party, she had used such language in the presence of Count Horn and many other nobles, "that all wondered that he could endure the abusive terms which she applied to him."

When the clouds gathered about him, when he had become an exile and a wanderer, her reproaches and her violence increased. The sacrifice of their wealth, the mortgages and sales which he effected of his estates, plate, jewels, and furniture, to raise money for the struggling country, excited her bitter resentment. She separated herself from him by degrees, and at last abandoned him altogether. Her temper became violent to ferocity. She beat her servants with her hands and with clubs; she threatened the lives of herself, of her attendants, of Count John of Nassau, with knives and daggers, and indulged in habitual profanity and blasphemy, uttering frightful curses upon all around. Her original tendency to intemperance had so much increased, that she was often unable to stand on her feet. A bottle of wine, holding more than a quart, in the morning, and another in the evening, together with a pound of sugar, was her usual allowance. She addressed letters to Alva, complaining that her husband had impoverished himself "in his good-for-nothing Beggar war," and begging the Duke to furnish her with a little ready money and with the means of arriving at the possession of her dower. An illicit connection with a certain

Papiers d'Etat, vii. 452.
 Letter to the Elector Augustus.—Groen v. Prinst., Archives, ii.

<sup>31, 32.

&</sup>quot;Derhalben auch die Princessin sich dermassen ertzurnedt, das sie ihr der frawen man und die fraw midt einem scheidtholltz gleichfalls auch mit feusten geschlagen und sehr ubel gescholten hab," etc.—

Summarische Verreichnisz und Protocolle der Abgesandten, 85-129.

Act. der Fr. Princessin zu Uranien vorgesliche vorhandlung belangnt,
An. 1572.—MS. Dresden Archives.

"Habe darnach des Abends, als sie gahr und also beweindt gewesen

John Rubens, an exiled magistrate of Antwerp, and father of the celebrated painter, completed the list of her delinque, nees, and justified the marriage of the Pince with Charlotte de Bourbon. It was therefore determined by the Llector of Saxony and the Landgrave William to remove her from the custody of the Massus. This took place with infinite difficulty, at the close of the year 1575. Already, in 1572, Augustus had proposed to the Landgrave that she should be kept in solutary confinement, and that a minister should preach so her daily through the grated aperture by which her food was to be admitted. The Landgrave remonstrated at so inhuman a proposition, which was, however, carried into effect. The wretched Princess, now completely a lunatic, was imprisoned in the electoral pilace, in a chimber where the windows were walled up and a small grating let into the

offirmals eyer gahr hardt im sallte sieden, darauf tringkt sie din e liwan zuvil und werde ungefultug, fluche alle boure flucche, und werfe die steeste und schussel und allem son tiech von sich, "etc. etc. — U.S.

Destin Archres, diet act

"Un! die Fr I miresun, wie sie es genant, den t llen man, nemlich
ein guelte Fasche weins morgens un! alsemals ein guelte flasche zu
abendisreidt mehr dan ein mass haltend liekumen, welches ir sambt
einem Hondt Zuckers bei sich zu nemen nicht zu ist sex, etc., etc., etc.,

Het

Der man sich verweigert hat einen brief so sie an den Duca de

mit mundlicher werbung ruschigken wolle. Ses der Uriel zwei Lugen lark, etc., etc. - MS. Dreidin Archives, diet. act.

'Acta Der Lrau Pinnecus zu Uranne, etc.—Alschriften von E. Annen, Etc.-Villurg, etc.—Schert gan Joh G. tur Anne, Abdolarg der Processus undered heben Algang.—Vis Directen Arriver, 1575-1579, Anne Bakbyren v d. Binnek. Het Huwelijk van W. v. Oranje, 1335–157

upper part of the door. Through this wicket came her food, as well as the words of the holy man appointed to preach daily for her edification.¹

Two years long, she endured this terrible punishment, and died mad,² on the 18th of December, 1577. On the following day she was buried in the electoral tomb at Meissen; a pompous procession of "school children, clergy, magistrates, nobility, and citizens" conducting her to that rest of which she could no longer be deprived by the cruelty of man nor her own violent temperament.³

So far, therefore, as the character of Mademoiselle de Bourbon and the legitimacy of her future offspring were concerned, she received ample guarantees. For the rest, the Prince, in a simple letter, informed her that he was already

1 "Scindt auch der endlichen meinung, wan sie also in geheim vorwahret und ein Predicant verordnet, der sie teglich durch ein fensterlein do ir die speys und tranck gericht werde Irer begangenen sunde mit Vleiss erinnere."—Letter of Elector Augustus to Landgrave William, July 9, 1572.—MS. Dresden Arch. "Ganz gestöaten Geistes."—Ibid. " Desgleichen, habe ich auch angcordnet," writes Secretary Hans Jenitz immediately after the decease of the Princess, "dasz die Fenster durch die Maurer, welche sie zuvor zugemauert, wiederum ausgebrochen werden und sol der Bettmeister mit Reinigung derselben Stube und Kammer sieh E. F. G. besehl nach verhalten. E. F. G. kann ich auch unterthänigst nicht verhalten, dasz keine neue Thür vor solche stube gemaceht worden - sondern man hat durch die alte Thure in dem obern Felde nur ein vier eekieht Loch ausgeschnitten und von starkem cisernen Blech ein enges Gitter dafur gemacht dasz man auswendig auf dem Saal auch verschliessen kann. Es steht auch zu E. F. G. Gefallen, ob man die grosse eiserne bande mit den Vorlege sehlossern, damit die Thuere von aussen verwart gewesen, also daran bleiben lassen, oder wieder aus dem stein aushauen und abfeilen lassen wolle, aber die gegitter vor den Fenstern können meines Bedünckens wohl bleiben."-Hans Jenitz an Churfürstin Anna. Acta: Inventarium über F. Annen, p. 3. Uranien Vorlassensehaft, etc., An. 1577.-1MS. Dresden Archives. Diet. Act.-MS. Dresden Archives.

It ean certainly be eonsidered no violation of the sanctity of archives to make these slender allusions to a tale, the main features of which have already been published, not only by MM. Groen v. Prinsterer and Bakhuyzen, in Holland, but by the Saxon Professor Böttiger, in Germany. It is impossible to understand the character and career of Orange, and his relations with Germany, without a complete view of the Saxon marriage. The extracts from the "geomantic letters" of Elector Augustus, however, given in Böttiger (Hist. Taschenb. 1836, p. 169-173), with their furious attacks upon the Prince and upon Charlotte of Bourbon, seem to us too obscene to be admitted, even in a note to these pages, and in a foreign language.

and in a foreign language.

past his prime, having reached his forty second year, and that his fortune was encumbered not only with settlements for his children by previous marriages but by debts con tracked in the cruse of his oppressed country. A conven-tion of doctors and bishops of France summoned by the Due de Montpensier, afterwards confirmed the opinion that the conventual your of the Princess Charlotte had been conformable neither to the laws of I range nor in the canons of the Frent Council * She was conducted to Brill by Sainte, Aldegonde where she was received by her bride groom, to whom she was united on the 12th of June. The wedding festival was held at Dort with much revely and holiday making ' but without dancing '

In this connection no doubt the Prince ennsulted his in clination onl

the relief of

which made

enjoyed social converse except at long intervals with man or animan, it was natural therefore, that he should contract this marriage. It was equally natural that he should make many enemies by so impolitic a match. The I lecture Palatine, who was in place of guardian to the bride, decidedly disapproved, although he was suspected of favouring the alliance. The Landgrave of Hesse for a time was furious the Hector of Saxony absolutely delirious with rage. The Diet of the I mpire was to be held within a few weeks at I rankfort, where it was very certain that the outraged and influential I lector would make his appearance, overflowing with anger and determined to revenge upon the cause of the Netherland Acformation the injury which he had personally received. I can the wise, considerate, affectionate brother, John of Nassau considered the marriage an act of madness He did what he could, by argument and entreaty, to dissuade the Prince from its completion * although he afterwards voluntarily ennfessed that the Princess Charlotte had been

¹ Memoire poir le Com e de Holen's allant de la part du l'is ce d'Orange com le Com e J. de Nassau II hoctors Iulia n, et aon comuse. Mile de Loutien "-Arh et « v 189-19"

Apologie du Fince d'Orange - Lel Sylvins 3", 38

Archive et Correspos fance v "-5 Let 114 644 Meteren v 160.

Archives et Corre ponunce, v 300.

¹¹¹¹

deeply calumniated, and was an inestimable treasure to his brother.' The French government made use of the circumstance to justify itself in a still further alienation from the cause of the Prince than it had hitherto manifested, but this was rather pretence than reality.

It was not in the nature of things, however, that the Saxon and Hessian indignation could be easily allayed. The Landgrave was extremely violent. "Truly, I cannot imagine," he wrote to the Elector of Saxony, "quo consilio that wiseacre of an Aldegonde, and whosoever else has been aiding and abetting, have undertaken this affair. Nam si pietatem respicias, it is to be feared that, considering she is a Frenchwoman, a nun, and moreover a fugitive nun, about whose chastity there has been considerable question, the Prince has got out of the frying-pan into the fire. Si formam, it is not to be supposed that it was her beauty which charmed him, since, without doubt, he must be rather frightened than delighted, when he looks upon her. Si spem prolis, the Prince has certainly only too many heirs already, and ought to wish that he had neither wife nor children. Si amicitiam, it is not to be supposed, while her father expresses himself in such threatening language with regard to her, that there will be much cordiality of friendship on his part. Let them look to it, then, lest it fare with them no better than with the Admiral, at his Paris wedding; for those gentlemen can hardly forgive such injuries, sine mercurio et arsenico sublimato." 2

The Elector of Saxony was frantic with choler, and almost ludicrous in the vehemence of its expression. Count John was unceasing in his exhortations to his brother to respect the sensitiveness of these important personages, and to remember how much good and how much (evil it was in their power to compass, with regard to himself and to the great cause of the Protestant religion. He reminded him, too, that the divorce had not been, and would not be, considered impregnable as to form, and that much discomfort and detriment was likely to grow out of the whole proceeding, for himself and his family.3 The Prince, however, was immovable

208-213.

¹ Archives et Correspondance, v. 312, 313. ² Itid., v. 227, 228. ³ See the letter of Count John to Prince of Orange, Archives, v.

in his resolution, and from the whole tone of his correspondence and deportment it was obvious this his mirring was one rither of inclination thin of policy. "I can assure you, my brother," he wrote to Count John, "thit my chiracter his always tended to this—to care neither for words nor menaces in any mitter where I can act with a clear conscience, and without doing injury to my neighbour. I ruly, if I had paid regard to the threats of princes, I should never his entirely do the King, my master, in time faith, and even to the advice of many of my relative said frends?"

The exil consequences which had been foreseen were not slow to manifest themselves. There was much discussion of the Prince's marriage at the Diet of I rankfort, and there was even a proposition, formally to declare the Calsimists excluded in Germany from the benefits of the Peace of Passan. The Archduke Rudolph was soon afterwards elected King of the Romans and of Bohemia, although intherto, according to the policy of the Prince of Orange, and in the expectation of lenefit to the cause of the Reformation in Germany and the Nicherlands, there had been a strong disposition to hold out hopes to Henry the Third, and to exeite the fears of Maximilan.

While these important affairs, publicand private, hid been occurring in the south of Holland and in Germiny, a very nefamous transaction had disgraced the cause of the patriot party in the northern quarter. Diedrich Sonoy, Governor of this portion of Holland, a man of great brasery, but of extreme ferecity of character, had discovered an extensive conspiracy among certain of the inhabitants, in aid of an approaching Spanish invasion. Bands of land loupers had been employed, actording to the intimation which he had received or affected to have received to set fire to villages and towns in even direction, to set up beacons, and to conduct a series of signals by which the expeditions about to be organized were to be furthered in their objects. The Governor, determined to show that the Duke of Alva could not be more propriy for more terrible than himself, impro-

See the let eryshed res, etc. 244 252. This Gren's Prints, Arthres, v. 200.

¹ lbr, r. 623 4; Hortl, E 411, 412.

vised, of his own authority, a tribunal in imitation of the infamous Blood-Council. Fortunately for the character of the country, Sonoy was not a Hollander, nor was the jurisdiction of this newly-established court allowed to extend beyond very narrow limits. Eight vagabonds were, however, arrested and doomed to tortures the most horrible, in order to extort from them confessions implicating persons of higher position in the land than themselves. Seven, after a few turns of the pulley and the screw, confessed all which they were expected to confess, and accused all whom they were requested to accuse. The eighth was firmer, and refused to testify to the guilt of certain respectable householders, whose names he had, perhaps, never heard, and against whom there was no shadow of evidence. He was, however, reduced by three hours and a half of sharp torture to confess, entirely according to their orders, so that accusations and evidence were thus obtained against certain influential gentlemen of the province, whose only crime was a secret adherence to the Catholic faith.1

The eight wretches who had been induced by promises of unconditional pardon upon one hand, and by savage torture on the other, to bear this false witness, were condemned to be burned alive, and on their way to the stake they all retracted the statements which had only been extorted from them by the rack. Nevertheless, the individuals who had been thus designated were arrested. Charged with plotting a general conflagration of the villages and farm-houses, in conjunction with an invasion by Hierges and other Papist generals, they indignantly protested their innocence; but two of them, a certain Kopp Corneliszoon, and his son, Nanning Koppezoon, were selected to undergo the most cruel torture which had yet been practised in the Netherlands.2 Sonoy, to his eternal shame, was disposed to prove that human ingenuity to inflict human misery had not been exhausted in the chambers of the Blood-Council, for it was to be shown that Reformers were capable of giving a lesson even to inquisitors in this diabolical science. Kopp, a man advanced in years, was tortured during a whole day. On the following morning he was again brought to the rack, but

Bor, viii. 623, seq. Hoofd, x. 412.
 Bor, viii. 626, seq. Hoofd, x. 413, seq.

r authorert."

the old man was too weak to endure all the agony which his tormentors had provided for him. Hardly had he been placed upon the bed of torture than he calmly expired, to the great indignation of the tribunal. "The devil has broken his neck and carried him off to hell," cried they, ferociously.
"Nevertheless, that shall not prevent lum from being hung and quartered" This decree of impotent vengeance was accordingly executed ' The son of Kopp, however, Nanning Koppezoon, was a man in the full vigour of his years. He bore with perfect fortitude a series of incredible tortures. after which, with his body singed from head to heel, and his fect almost entirely flayed, he was left for six weeks to crawl about his dunceon on his knees. He was then brought back to the torture room, and again stretched upon the rack, while a large earthen vessel, made for the purpose, was placed, inverted, upon his naked body. A number of rats were introduced under this cover, and hot coals were heaped upon the vessel, till the rats, rendered furious by the heat. gnamed into the very bowels of the victim, in their agony to escape. The holes thus torn in his bleeding flesh were filled with red hot coals. He was afterwards subjected to other tortures too foul to relate; nor was it till he had endured all this agony, with a fortitude which seemed supernatural, that he was at last discovered to be human. Scorched, bitten, dislocated in every joint, sleepless, starving, perishing with thirst, he was at last crushed into a false confession, by a promise of absolute forgiveness. He admitted everything

Ther, viii. 627, 628. Houf I, a six Houf I, a 412. Bet fruit. 624) consecutionally farmines diagrams of the machinery level subjected are detailed in a business like marrer, as though the transactions were quite regular and lindable. The Communication of the with pines whele if we the Governor's welfare "Nolke, sixe, virtuous, and very discret in," they say, "we have wheld to approve you of the foregoing, and we now gray that God Almed'y may spire you in a harpy, fealthy, and long-cominged government. —If will be seen, however, that the "a six, various, and very discret Tooremo, who thus carred j.-i. follow-triuen's bowels to be grawed by rail, was not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as not allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly as the allegand to remain much longer in his "bury and bothly an

which was brought to his charge, confessing a catalogue of contemplated burnings and beacon firings of which he had never dreamed, and avowing himself in league with other desperate Papists, still more dangerous than himself.

Notwithstanding the promises of pardon, Nanning was then condemned to death. The sentence ordained that his heart should be torn from his living bosom, and thrown in his face, after which his head was to be taken off and exposed on the church steeple of his native village. His body was then to be cut in four, and a quarter fastened upon different towers of the city of Alkmaar, for it was that city, recently so famous for its heroic resistance to the Spanish army, which was now sullied by all this cold-blooded atrocity. When led to execution, the victim recanted indignantly the confessions forced from him by weakness of body, and exonerated the persons whom he had falsely accused. A certain clergyman, named Jurian Epeszoon, endeavouring by loud praying to drown his voice, that the people might not rise with indignation, the dying prisoner with his last breath solemnly summoned this unworthy pastor of Christ to meet him within three days before the judgment-seat of God. It is a remarkable and authentic fact, that the clergyman thus summoned, went home pensively from the place of execution, sickened immediately, and died upon the appointed day.1

Notwithstanding this solemn recantation, the persons accused were arrested, and in their turn subjected to torture, but the affair now reached the ears of Orange. His peremptory orders, with the universal excitement produced in the neighbourhood, at last checked the course of the outrage, and the accused persons were remanded to prison, where they remained till liberated by the Pacification of Ghent. After their release they commenced legal proceedings against Sonoy, with the view of establishing their own innocence, and of bringing the inhuman functionary to justice. The process languished, however, and was finally abandoned, for the powerful Governor had rendered such eminent service in the cause of liberty, that it was thought unwise to push him to extremity. It is no impeachment upon the character of the Prince that these horrible crimes were not prevented.

¹ Bor, viii. 628, et seq. Hoofd, x. 414. Wagenach, vii. 58. Brandt, Hist. Ref. i. 563. Velius Horn, bl. 440.

It was impossible for him to be omnipresent. Neither is it just to consider the tortures and death thus inflicted upon innocent men in indelible stun upon the cause of liberty. They were the crimes of an individual who had been useful but who like the Count de It Marck, had now contaminated his hind with the blood of the guildless. The new tribunal never took root and was abolished as soon as its initiatory horrors week, known?

On the 19th of July, Oudewater, entirely unprepared for such an event was besieged by Hierges, but the parrison and the population although weak, were brux. He town resisted eighteen days, and on the 7th of August was car ned by assault after which the usual horrors were fully practised—the grurson was put to the sword, and the townspeople fired little better. Men, women and children were murdered intel blood or obliged to purchase their lives by heavy runsoms, while matrons and maids were sold by auction to the soldiers at two or three dollars each? Almost even house in the city was burned to the ground and these horrible but very customary scenes has may be be enerted the army of Hierges took its way to Schoonnoven. That city, not defending itself, secured toler able terms of capitulation and surrendered on the 24th of August.

The Grand Commander had not yet given up the hope of

termination to

Hyris, however covered upon the serboard, before a descent from without could be met with proper co-operation from the land forces within and he was most anxious, therefore, to effect the reconquest of some agriculor of Zeland. The visland of Tholen was still Spanish and had been so since the memorible expedition of Mondragon to South Beveland. I rom this interior portion of the archipelago the Governor now determined to attempt an expedition against the outer and monimportuni curriors. The times principles shadewest. Whele, we

¹ hor vin C 9 641 Houff x 414 419.

Bir vin 646. Hadl x 424 bor vin 44" Meteren v

Duiveland, and Schouwen. Tholen was the first which de tached itself from the continent. Next, and separated from it by a bay two leagues in width, was Duiveland, or the Isla of Doves. Beyond, and parted by a narrower frith, was Schouwen, fronting directly upon the ocean, fortified by its strong capital city, Zierickzee, and containing other villages of inferior consequence.1

Requesens had been long revolving in his mind the means of possessing himself of this important island. He had caused to be constructed a numerous armada of boats and light vessels of various dimensions, and he now came to Tholen to organize the expedition. His prospects were at first not flattering, for the gulfs and estuaries swarmed with Zeland vessels, manned by crews celebrated for their skill and audacity. Traitors, however, from Zeland itself now came forward to teach the Spanish Commander how to strike at the heart of their own country. These refugees explained to Requesens that a narrow flat extended under the sea from Philipsland, a small and uninhabited islet situate close to Tholen, as far as the shore of Duiveland. Upon this submerged tongue of land the water, during ebb-tide, was sufficiently shallow to be waded, and it would therefore be possible for a determined band, under cover of the night, to make the perilous passage. Once arrived at Duiveland, they could more easily cross the intervening creek to Schouwen, which was not so deep and only half as wide, so that a force thus sent through these dangerous shallows might take possession of Duiveland and lay siege to Zierickzee, in the very teeth of the Zeland fleet, which would be unable to sail near enough to intercept their passage.2

The Commander determined that the enterprise should be attempted. It was not a novelty, because Mondragon, as we have seen, had already most brilliantly conducted a similar expedition. The present was, however, a more daring scheme. The other exploit, although sufficiently hazardous, and entirely successful, had been a victory gained

ix. 165.

Meteren, v. 101, 102. ¹ Bor, viii. 648-650. Hoofd, x. 426, 427. Mendoza, xiv. 281. Bentivoglio, ix. 164, et seq.

2 Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, x. 426. Mendoza, xiv. 282. Bentivoglio,

ŧ

over the ser alone. It had been a surprise, and hid been effected without any opposition from human circums. Here, however, they were to deal, not only with the occur and darkness, but with a watchful and determined for the Aclanders were aware that the enterprise was in constemplation, and their vessels lay about the configuous witers in considerable force. Nevertheless, the determination of the Grand Commander was hailed with enthusiasm by his troopy. Having satisfied humself by personal experiment that the enterprise, was possible, and that therefore his brate soldlers could accomplish it he decided that the glory of the achievement should be fairly shared, as before, among the different nations which served the king.

After completing his preparations, Requestins came to Tholen, at which rendezious were assembled three thousand infantry, partly Spaniards partly Germans, partly Wallooms Besides these a picked corps of two hundred sappers and miners was to accompany the expedition in order that no time might be lost in fortifying themselves as soon as they had seized possession of schoolen For hundred mounted troopers were moreover stationed in the town of The len, while the little fleet, which had been prepared at Artwerp lay near that city ready to compense with the land free as soon as they should complete their enterprise In- Line Commander now do ded the whele free mis two jar-One half was to remain in the board under the command of Mondragon the error bal, extenser of by the tal hundred pioneers, were to water through a seal on I' pe hand to Durveland and Schouren Larn w der con see tachment was provided with a force of the tall the selection powder, and rations for the dark and are product at his need. To make the carrier of the carrier Osono d'Ullos, an office Commission for a more and bravery'

On the night so and for the state of the sta

letren with Fre earl tre sales

bound on the car see all the

the appointed hour of midnight, crossed to Philipsland, and stood on the shore to watch the setting forth of the little army. He addressed a short harangue to them, in which he skilfully struck the chords of Spanish chivalry and the national love of glory, and was answered with loud and enthusiastic cheers. Don Osorio d'Ulloa then stripped and plunged into the sea immediately after the guides. He was followed by the Spaniards, after whom came the Germans, and then the Walloons. The two hundred sappers and miners came next, and Don Gabriel Peralta, with his Spanish company, brought up the rear. It was a wild night. Incessant lightning alternately revealed and obscured the progress of the midnight march through the black waters, as the anxious Commander watched the expedition from the shore, but the soldiers were quickly swallowed up in the gloom.2 As they advanced cautiously, two by two, the daring adventurers found themselves soon nearly up to their necks in the waves, while so narrow was the submerged bank along which they were marching, that a mis-step to the right or left was fatal. Luckless individuals repeatedly sank to rise no more. Meantime, as the sickly light of the waning moon came forth at intervals through the stormy clouds, the soldiers could plainly perceive the files of Zeland vessels through which they were to march, and which were anchored as close to the flat as the water would allow. Some had recklessly stranded themselves, in their eagerness to interrupt the passage of the troops, and the artillery played unceasingly from the larger vessels. Discharges of musketry came continually from all, but the fitful lightning rendered the aim difficult and the fire comparatively harmless,

¹ Hoofd, x. 428. Bor, viii. 648-650. Mendoza, xiv. 283, 284. ² Bor, viii. 648-650. Hoofd, x. 428. Bentiv glio, ix. 167.—According to Mendoza, the sky was full of preternatural appearances on that memorable night; literally,

[&]quot;The exhalations whizzing through the air Gave so much light that one might read by them."

Julius Casar.

[&]quot;Viendose en aqual punto cometas y señales en el cielo de grande claridad y tanta que se leian cartas como si fuera de dia, quo ponia admiracion el verlas; juzgando los mas ser cosa fuera del curso natural," etc.: xiv. 284.—Compare Strada, viii. 398.

3 Bentivoglio, ix. 167. Hoofd, x. 429. Wagenaer, vii. 71.

while the Spaniards were, moreover, protected, as to a large part of their bodies, by the water in which they were im-

At times, they halted for breath, or to engage in fierce skirmishes with their nearest assailants. Standing breast high in the waves, and surrounded at intervals by total darkness, they were yet able to your an occasional well directed volley into the hostile ranks. The Zelanders, how fire zeros one, and the norm with fire arms alone. They transfixed some with their fatal harpoons, they dragged others from the path with boat hooks, they beat out the brains of others with heavy flails.' Many were the mortal duels thus fought in the darkness, and, as it were, in the bottom of the sea; many were the deeds of audacity which no eye was to mark save those by whom they were achieved Still, in spite of all immediments and losses, the Spaniards steadily advanced. If other arms proved less available, they were attacked by the fierce taunts and invectives of their often invisible foes, who reviled them as water-dogs, fetching and earrying for a master who despised them, as mercenaries who coined their blood for gold, and were employed by trants for the basest uses. If, stung by these mocking voices, they turned in the darkness to chastise their unseen tormentors, they were certain to be trampled upon by their comrades, and to be pushed from their narrow pathway into the depths of the sea. Thus many penshed,

The night wore on, and the adventurers still fought it out mapfully, but very slowly, the main body of Spaniards, Germans, and Walloons, soon after daylight, reaching the opposite whore, having sustained considerable losses, but in perfect order. The pioneers were not so fortunate. The title rose over them, before they could effect their passage, and swep nearly every one away. The rear guard, under

Peralta, not surprised, like the pioneers, in the middle of their passage, by the rising tide, but prevented, before it was too late, from advancing far beyond the shore from which they had departed, were fortunately enabled to retrace their

Don Osorio, at the head of the successful adventurers, now effected his landing upon Duiveland. Reposing themselves but for an instant after this unparalleled march through the water, of more than six hours, they took a slight refreshment, prayed to the Virgin Mary and to Saint James, and then prepared to meet their new enemies on land. Ten companies of French, Scotch, and English auxiliaries lay in Duiveland, under the command of Charles van Boisot. Strange to relate, by an inexplicable accident, or by treason, that general was slain by his own soldiers, at the moment when the royal troops landed. The panic created by this event became intense, as the enemy rose suddenly, as it were, out of the depths of the ocean to attack them. They magnified the numbers of their assailants, and fled terror-stricken in every direction. Some swam to the Zeland vessels which lay in the neighbourhood; others took refuge in the forts which had been constructed on the island, but these were soon carried by the Spaniards, and the conquest of Duiveland was effected.2

The enterprise was not yet completed, but the remainder was less difficult and not nearly so hazardous, for the creek which separated Duiveland from Schouwen was much narrower than the estuary which they had just traversed. It was less than a league in width, but so encumbered by rushes and briers that, although difficult to wade, it was not navigable for vessels of any kind. This part of the expedition was accomplished with equal resolution, so that, after a few hours' delay, the soldiers stood upon the much-coveted Five companies of states' troops, placed island of Schouwen.

lengua."-Compare Bor. viii. 649. Hoofd, x. 429.

¹ Mendoza, xiv. 285. Bentivoglio, Hoofd, Bor, ubi sup.
² Hoofd, x. 429. Bor, viii. 649. Mendoza, xiv. 282.—The officer, whose career was thus unfortunately closed, was a brother of the famous Admiral Boisot, had himself rendered good service to the cause of his country, and was Governor of Walcheren at the time of his death.-Archives et Correspondance, v. 283.

Mendoza, xiv. 286. Bentivoglio (ix. 168) says, "Poco men d'una

to oppose their landing, fled in the most cowardly manner at the first discharge of the Sprinish muskets, and took refuge in the city of Zierickzee, which was soon afterwards be leadured

The troops had been disembarked upon Duiveland from the armada, which had made its way to the scene of action, after having received, by signal, information that the expectition through the water had been successful. Broinvers haven, on the northern side of Schowen, was immediately reduced, but flommenede resisted till the 25th of October, when it was at hist carried by assault, and delivered over to fire and sword. Of the whole population and garnson not twinty were left alive. Siege was then laid to /icinekree, and Colonel Mondragon was left in charge of the operations. Requesters himself came to Schouwen to give directions con-

cerning this important enterprise.

Chappin Vitelli also came thither in the middle of the winter, and was so much injured by a fall from his litter, while making the tour of the island, that he died on shipboard during his return to Antwerp 1 his officer had grinted his laurels upon more than one occasion, his conduct in the important action near Mons, in which the Huguenot force under Genlis was defeated, having been particularly credit able. He was of a distinguished Umbrian family, and had passed his life in camps, few of the generals who had accompanied Alva to the Netherlands being better known or more odious to the inhabitants. He was equally distinguished for his courage, his crucky, and his corpulance. The last characteristic was so remarkable that he was almost in in strous in his personal appearance. This prohiberant stomach was always supported in a bandage suspended from his neck, yet in spite of this enormous impediment, he was fer sonally active on the battle field, and performed more sorvice, not only as a commander but as a subiltern thru n my a vounger and lighter man

¹ Mer fora, xiv 297 Mor/I, x 429 Benting his he it's 2 Stendora, xiv 297 293, 117 Lenting his fix 100 17 1 ft x, va 652, 119 Mor/I x 411

Merera, v. 163. risda viii 403
Tacta vii. 473 - vii of a serms to have been a nix popular to feel all the series at the series a

formally proposed, either to make terms with their enemy, and that the sooner the better, or else, once for all, to separate entirely from the King of Spain, and to change their sovereign, in order, with the assistance and under protection of another Christian potentate, to maintain the provinces against their enemies. Orange, moreover, expressed the opinion that upon so important a subject it was decidedly incumbent upon them all to take the sense of the city governments. The members for the various municipalities acquiesced in the propriety of this suggestion, and resolved to consult their constituents, while the deputies of the nobility also desired to consult with their whole body. After an adjournment of a few days, the diet again assembled at Delft, and it was then unanimously resolved by the nobles and the cities, "that they would forsake the King and seek foreign assistance; referring the choice to the Prince, who, in regard to the government, was to take the opinion of the estates."1

Thus, the great step was taken, by which two little provinces declared themselves independent of their ancient That declaration, although taken in the midst of doubt and darkness, was not destined to be cancelled, and the germ of a new and powerful commonwealth was planted. So little, however, did these republican fathers foresee their coming republic, that the resolution to renounce one king was combined with a proposition to ask for the authority of another. It was not imagined that those two slender columns, which were all that had yet been raised of the future stately peristyle, would be strong enough to stand alone. The question now arose, to what foreign power application should be made. But little hope was to be entertained from Germany, a state which existed only in name, and France was still in a condition of religious and intestine discord. The attitude of revolt maintained by the Duc d'Alençon seemed to make it difficult and dangerous to enter into negotiations with a country where the civil wars had assumed so complicated a character, that a loyal and useful alliance could hardly be made with any party. The Queen of England, on the other hand, dreaded the wrath of Philip,

¹ Resol. Holl., Jul. 7, 1575, bl. 474; Jul. 9, 1575, bl. 482; Oct. 3, 1575, bl. 668, 669; Oct. 13, 1575, bl. 692. Bor, viii., 651. Wagenaer, vii. 81.

by which her perpetual dangers from the side of Scotland would be aggravated, while she feared equally the extension of French authority in the Netherlands, by which increase heraneighbour would acquire an overshadowing power. She was also ashamed openly to abandon the provinces to their fate, for her realm was supposed to be a bulwark of the Protestant rehigion. Afraid to affront Philip, afraid to refuse the suit of the Netherlands, afraid to concede an aggrandizement to France, what course was open to the English Queen? That which, politically and personally, she loved the best—a course of barren coquetry. This the Prince of Orange foresaw, and although not disposed to leave a stone unturned in his efforts to find assistance for his country, he on the whole rather inclined for France. He, however, better than any man, knew how little cause there was for sanguine expectation from either source.

It was determined, in the name of his highness and the estates, first to send a mission to England, but there had already been negotiations this year of an unpleasant character with that

foremnst N ... 1 . . . (Culemberg, with Sainte Aldegonde, Brisot, Junius, and others, had been formally forbidden by Queen Elizabeth in enter her realm.4 The Prince had, in consequence, sent Aldegonde and Junius on a secret mission to I rance, and the Queen, jealous and anxious, had thereupon sent Daniel Ragers secretly to the Prince. At the same time she had sent an envoy in the Grand Commander, counselling conciliatory measures, and promising to send a special mission to Spain with the offer of her mediation, but it was suspected by those most in the confidence of the Spanish government at Brussels, that there was a great deal of deception in these proceedings. A truce for six months having now been established between the Due d'Alençon and his brother, it was supposed that an alliance between France and England,

De Thou, tom vii, liv 61. See Wageraer, vii. 81.
 Res. Holl., Jul. 13, 1575, 12 492. Meteren, v. 100, 101.
 Bor, viii. 641.
 Wageraer, vii. 82.

Letter from Montion to Card and Granvelle, of date Dec. 11, 15."
-Archard et Correspondence, v. 325, 326.

more of the offer made to her after she had done all in her power to bring about an arrangement between the provinces and Philip."1

After the result of the negotiations of Breda, it is difficult to imagine what method she was likely to devise for accomplishing such a purpose. The King was not more disposed than during the preceding summer to grant liberty of religion, nor were the Hollanders more ready than they had been before to renounce either their faith or their fatherland. The envoys, on parting, made a strenuous effort to negotiate a loan, but the frugal Queen considered the proposition quite inadmissible. She granted them liberty to purchase arms and ammunition, and to levy a few soldiers with their own money, and this was accordingly done to a limited extent. As it was not difficult to hire soldiers or to buy gunpowder anywhere, in that warlike age, provided the money were ready, the states had hardly reason to consider themselves under deep obligation for this concession. Yet this was the whole result of the embassy. Plenty of fine words had been bestowed, which might or might not have meaning, according to the turns taken by coming events. Besides these cheap and empty civilities, they received permission to defend Holland at their own expense, with the privilege of surrendering its sovereignty, if they liked, to Queen Elizabeth—and this was all.

On the 19th of April, the envoys returned to their country, and laid before the estates the meagre result of their negotiations.2 Very soon afterwards, upon an informal suggestion from Henry III. and the Queen Mother, that a more favourable result might be expected, if the same applications were made to the Duc d'Alençon which had been received in so unsatisfactory a manner by Elizabeth, commissioners were appointed to France.3 It proved impossible, however, at that juncture, to proceed with the negotiations, in consequence of the troubles occasioned by the attitude of the Duke. The provinces were still, even as they had been from the beginning, entirely alone.

Bor, viii. 663. Wagenaer, vii. 86.
 Bor, viii. 661-663. Hoofd, x. 434, 435. Re-Metefan, v. 101. sol. Holl., Apr. 19, 1576, bl. 42.

³ Ever. Reid. Ann., lib. i. 18.

Requesens was more than ever straitened for funds, wring ing, with increasing, difficulty, a slender subsidy, from time to time, out of the reluctant estates of Brahant, Flanders, and the other obedient provinces. While he was still at Duiveland.

Commander, on receiving such vehement reproaches instead of his money—may the Lord deliver me from these estates '"
Meantime, the important siege of Zienekze continued and it was evident that the city must fall. There was no money at the disposal of the l'innee. Count John, who was seriously

an account of the great advances made by himself and his brithen in money, plate, furniture, and endorsements of various kinds, for which a partial rembursement was almost indispensable to save him from senous difficulties. The Prince, however, unable to procure lum any assistance, had been obliged once more to entreat him to display the gens, ros ty and the self-denial which the country had never found wanting at his hands or at those of his kindred. The appeal had not been in vain, but the Court was obviously not in a condition to effect anything more at that morem' to relieve the financial distress of the states. The exchequer was cappled. Ho land and Zeland were cut in twain by the occupation of Schowen and the approaching fall of its capital. Germany, Fingland, France, all refused to stretch out that hards to save the heroir but exhaustiess! the promotes. It was at this more of that a deeperate but submer resolution.

I + Deapalles over a Easton"-3" mar to a

Archers a server have a set 304.

Archers a server Hilliad and Zeard fewer errormers amount of torocher for a 1 or the send fewer errormer. The payeds at run was early few a few or that of a horizon, few what of a certain soft or server and a hour A or run had also one further and fey few or to the few or to come or server and a few fewer or to be a few or to come or server the order or to the control of the fewer and a few or to the fewer of the control of the fewer of the control of the fewer of the fewer

took possession of the Prince's mind. There seemed but one way left to exclude the Spaniards for ever from Holland and Zeland, and to rescue the inhabitants from impending ruin. The Prince had long brooded over the scheme, and the heur seemed to have struck for its fulfilment. His project was to collect all the vessels, of every description, which could be obtained throughout the Netherlands. The whole population of the two provinces, men, women, and children, together with all the movable property of the country, were then to be embarked on board this numerous fleet, and to seek a new home beyond the seas. The windmills were then to be burned, the dykes pierced, the sluices opened in every direction, and the country restored for ever to the ocean, from which it had sprung.

It is difficult to say whether the resolution, if Providence had permitted its fulfilment, would have been, on the whole, better or worse for humanity and civilization. The ships which would have borne the Prince and his fortunes might have taken the direction of the newly-discovered Western hemisphere. A religious colony, planted by a commercial and liberty-loving race, in a virgin soil, and directed by patrician but self-denying hands, might have preceded, by half a century, the colony which a kindred race, impelled by similar motives, and under somewhat similar circumstances and conditions, was destined to plant upon the stern shores of New England. Had they directed their course to the warm and fragrant islands of the East, an independent Christian commonwealth might have arisen among those prolific regions, superior in importance to any subsequent colony of Holland,

¹ Bor relates that this plan had been definitely formed by the Prince. His authority is "a credible gentleman of quality," (een geloofswaerdig edelmann van qualiteit) who, at the time, was a member of the estates and government of Holland.—viii. 664. Groen v. Prinsterer, however, rejects the tale as fabulous; or believes, at any rate, that the personage alluded to by Bor took the Prince's words too literally. It is probable that the thought was often in the Prince's mind, and found occasional expression, although it had never been actually reduced to a scheme. It is difficult to see that it was not consistent with his character, supposing that there had been no longer any room for hope. Hoofd, x. 443, adopts the story without hesitation. Wagenaer, vii. §8. 89, alludes to it as a matter of current report.—Compare Van Wyn op Wagen., vii. 33-35.

eramped from its birth by absolute subjection to a far distant

me tropolis

1575]

The unexpected death of Requesens suddenly dispelled there schemes. The stege of Zienekzee had occupied much." of the Covernor's attention, but he had recently written to his sovereign that its reduction was now certain added an urgent request for money, with a sufficient supply of which I . assured Philip that he should be able to bring the war to an immediate conclusion. While waiting for these supplies, he had contrary to all law or reason made an unsuccessful ittem; tto conquer the post of I mbden in Germany A mutiny had at about the same time, broken out among his troops in Harlem and he had furmshed the citizens with arms to defend themselves, giving free permission to use them against the insurgent troops. By this means the mutiny had ened the

d him on

the 151, and terminated his existence on the 5th of March, in the fifty first year of his life.

It is not necessary to review elaborately his career the Requesers was a man of high position by birth and office, but a thoroughly commonplace personnge. His talents either for war or for civil employments were not above mediocrity. His friends disputed whether he were greater in the field or in the council but it is certain that he was gr at in neither. His bisotry was equal to that of Mva, but it was impossible to rival the Duke in cruelty. Moreover, the condition of the country after seven years of torture under his predecessor, made it difficult for him at the time of his arrival to initate the severity which had made the name of Alva infactous. His sudden death arrested, for a moment, the obbatide in the affairs of the Notherlands, which was fast leaving the country bare and desolate, and was followed by a trun of unforeseen transactions, which it is now our duty to describe

1 flor err W 8 W ... Healt x 43" 45" 1 Carl Grary N 175 pc 40%

the inhabitants should be sacredly respected. To attest this assurance, Don Julian gave his hand three several times to Lambert Hortensius. A soldier's word thus plighted, the commissioners, without exchanging any written documents, surrendered the keys, and immediately afterwards accompanied Romero into the city, who was soon followed by five or six hundred musketeers.

To give these guests a hospitable reception, all the housewives of the city at once set about preparations for a sumptuous feast, to which the Spaniards did ample justice, while the colonel and his officers were entertained by Senator Gerrit at his own house.² As soon as this conviviality had come to an end, Romero, accompanied by his host, walked into the square. The great bell had been meantime ringing, and the citizens had been summoned to assemble in the Gast Huis Church, then used as a town hall.3 In the course of a few minutes five hundred had entered the building, and stood quietly awaiting whatever measures might be offered for their deliberation. Suddenly a priest, who had been pacing to and fro before the church door, entered the building, and bade them all prepare for death; but the announcement, the preparation, and the death were simultaneous.4 The door was flung open, and a band of armed Spaniards rushed across the sacred threshold. They fired a single volley upon the defenceless herd, and then sprang in upon them with sword and dagger. A yell of despair arose as the miserable victims saw how hopelessly they were encaged, and beheld the ferocious faces of their butchers. The carrage within that narrow space was compact and rapid. few minutes all were despatched, and among them Senator Gerrit, from whose table the Spanish commander had but just risen. The church was then set on fire, and the dead and dying were consumed to ashes together.5

Inflamed but not satiated, the Spaniards then rushed into the streets, thirsty for fresh horrors. The houses were all rifled of their contents, and men were forced to carry the

¹ Bor, vi. 417. Hoofd, vii. 277.

² Hoofd, vii. 278. ³ Bor, Hoofd.

^{4 &}quot;Maar, 't aanseggen, bereyden en sterven was een ding."—Hoofd,

booty to the camp, who were then struck dead as their reward. The town was then fired in every direction, that the skulking citizens might be forced from their hiding places As fast as they came forth they were put to death by their impatient foes. Some were pierced with ripiers, some were chopped to pieces with axes, some were sur rounded in the blazing streets by troops of laughing soldiers, intoxicated, not with wine but with blood, who tossed them to and fro, with their lances, and derived a wild amusement from their dying agonies. Those who attempted resistance were crimped alive like fishes, and left to gasp themselves to death in lingering torture. The soldiers becoming more and more insant, as the foul work went on, opened the veins of some of their victims, and drank their blood as if it were wine 2 Some of the burghers were for a time spared. that they might witness the violation of their wives and daughters, and were then butchered in company with those still more unfortunate victims? Miraeles of britishit, were accomplished Neither church nor hearth was sacred. Men were slain, women outraged at the altars, in the streets, in their blizing homes The life of Lambert Hortensius was spared, out of regard to his learning and genius, but he hardly could thank his foes for the boon, for they struck his only son dead, and tore his heart out before his father's eyes." Hardly any man or woman survived, except by accident A body of some hundred burghers made their escape across the snow into the open country. They were, however, over-taken, stripped stark naked, and hung upon the trees by the feet, to freeze, or to pensh by a more linguring death. Most of them soon died but twenty, who happened to be wealthy, succeeded after enduring much torture, in purchasing their lives of their inhuman persecutors. The principal burgo-master, Heinrich Lambertszoon, was less fortunate. Known

¹ Hoof I, vii. 279.—" Als visschen gekorven en lanktaamelyk gewente'i in een taase doodt."

² Hoofd, wh sup 2 Bor, Hoofd, wh sup

⁶ Bor, vi. 410. Hoofd—It was even sail that they devoted it; nor was this the only act of cambalism of which they were accused, for it was said and believe by many that the lookes of children were rousted and eatien by the soldiers. These last traits of horrors are, however, only mentioned by Hoofd as reports. The treating out of the heart belore the father's eyes is suiteved both by hur and by Bo.

to be affluent, he was tortured by exposing the soles of his feet to a fire until they were almost consumed. On promise that his life should be spared, he then agreed to pay a heavy ransom; but hardly had he furnished the stipulated sum when, by express order of Don Frederic himself, he was hanged in his own doorway, and his dissevered limbs afterwards nailed to the gates of the city.

Nearly all the inhabitants of Naarden, soldiers and citizens, were thus destroyed; and now Don Frederic issued peremptory orders that no one, on pain of death, should give lodging or food to any fugitive. He likewise forbade to the dead all that could now be forbidden them -a grave. Three weeks long did these unburied bodies pollute the streets. nor could the few wretched women who still cowered within such houses as had escaped the flames ever move from their lurking-places without treading upon the festering remains of what had been their husbands, their fathers, or their brethren. Such was the express command of him whom the flatterers called the "most divine genius ever known." Shortly afterwards came an order to dismantle the fortifications, which had certainly proved sufficiently feeble in the hour of need, and to raze what was left of the city from the surface of the earth. The work was faithfully accomplished, and for a long time Naarden ceased to exist.2

Alva wrote, with his usual complacency in such cases, to his sovereign that "they had cut the throats of the burghers and all the garrison, and that they had not left a mother's son alive." The statement was almost literally correct, hor was the cant with which these bloodhounds commented upon their crimes less odious than their guilt. "It was a permission of God," said the Duke, "that these people should have undertaken to defend a city, which was so weak that no other persons would have attempted such a

¹ Hoofd, vii. 280.

² Bor, vi. 419. Hoofd, vii. 280. Meteren iv. 78.

^{3 &}quot;Degollaron burgeses y soldados, sin escaparse hombre nascido."
—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1186. Every inhabitant of Naarden was put to the sword, says the ultra-Catholic Renom de France, except the ecclesiastics and two or three persons of qualify who were reserved. Then the city was pillaged, after which a fire was lighted, "qui la consomma entièrement."—Hist. des Causes des Révoltes des Pays-Bas, MS., ii. xx.

thing "' Nor was the reflection of Mendoza less pious "The sack of Naardan, said that really brave and accomplished cava liter, "was a christisement which must be believed to have taken place by express permission of a Divine Providence, a punish ment for having been the first of the Holland towns in which heresy built its nest, whence it has taken flight to all the neighbouring cities."

It is not without reluctance, but still with a stern deter minition, that the historian should faithfully record these transactions. To extenuate would be base, to exaggerate impossible. It is good that the world should not forget how much wrong has been endured by a single nation at the hands of despotism, and in the sacred name of God | There have been tongues and pens enough to narrate the excesses of the people, bursting from time to time out of slavers into madness It is good, too, that those crimes should be remembered, and freshly pondered, but it is equally wholesome to study the opposite picture. Tyrinny, ever young and ever old, constantly reproducing herself with the same stony features, with the same imposing mask which she has warm through all ages, can never be too minutely examined, especially when she paints her own portrait, and when the secret history of her guilt is furnished by the confessions of her lovers. The perusal of her traits will not make us love popular liberty the less

The history of Alva's administration in the Netherlands is one of those pictures which stake us almost dumb with wooder. Why has the Almighty suffered such crimes to be perpetrated in His sacred name? Was it necessary that many generations should wade through this blood in order to acquire for their descendants the blessings of civil and religious freedom? Was it necessary that an Alva should rivage a peaceful nation with sword and firme—that deso lation should be spread over a happy land, in order that the

¹ Correspondance de Il bappe II., ii. 1186

³ Mendota viii. 173—The deta is of these acts of imputy have only learn preserved in the Dirtch wii ers. Men loai, and Calerra (#10 always films) Mengoasi dasin si the sacking of each s cressive e with a phrase and a pious exhibition. Afra tare? See Innocinal horrors in a few energies here.—C

lint in 40, 408. Me eren is 75. Le woglo

pure and heroic character of a William of Orange should stand forth more conspicuously, like an antique statue of

spotless marble against a stormy sky?

After the army which the Prince had so unsuccessfully led to the relief of Mons had been disbanded, he had himself repaired to Holland. He had come to Kampen shortly before its defection from his cause. Thence he had been escorted across the Zuyder Zee to Enkhuizen.1 He came to that province, the only one which through good and ill report remained entirely faithful to him, not as a conqueror but as an unsuccessful, proscribed man. But there were warm hearts beating within those cold lagunes, and no conqueror returning from a brilliant series of victories could have been received with more affectionate respect than William in that darkest hour of the country's history. had but seventy horsemen at his back, all which remained of the twenty thousand troops which he had a second time levied in Germany, and he felt that it would be at that period hopeless for him to attempt the formation of a third army. He had now come thither to share the fate of Holland, at least, if he could not accomplish her liberation. He went from city to city, advising with the magistracies and with the inhabitants, and arranging many matters pertaining both to peace and war.2 At Harlem the States of the Provinces, according to his request, had been assembled. assembly begged him to lay before them, if it were possible, any schemes and means which he might have devised for further resistance to the Duke of Alva. Thus solicited, the Prince, in a very secret session, unfolded his plans, and satisfied them as to the future prospects of the cause.3 His speech has nowhere been preserved. His strict injunctions as to secrecy, doubtless, prevented or effaced any record of the session. It is probable, however, that he entered more fully into the state of his negotiations with England, and into the possibility of a resumption by Count Louis of his private intercourse with the French court, than it was safe, publicly, to divulge.

After the conclusion of the sack and massacre of Naarden,

¹ Bor, vi. 414. Hoofd, vii. 264.

² Letter of Ste. Aldegonde in Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 22.

³ Bor, vi. 414. Wagenaer, Vad. Hist., vi. 396, 397.

Don Frederic had hastened to Amsterdam, where the Duke was then quartered, that he might receive the paternal benediction for his well accomplished work. The royal approbation was soon afterwards added to the applause of his parent, and the Duke was warmly congratulated in a letter written by Philip as soon as the murderous deed was known. that Don Frederic had so plainly shown himself to be his father's son There was now more work for father and son Amsterdam was the only point in Holland which held for Alva, and from that point it was determined to recover the whole province The Prince of Orange was established in the southern district. Diedrich Sonos, his lieutenant, was stationed in North Holland . The important city of Harlem lay between the two, at a spot where the whole breadth of the territory, from sca to sen, was less than an hour's walk With the fall of that city the province would be cut in twain, the rebellious forces utterly dissevered, and all further resist

sta

stal lithicito pursued at Mechlin, Zutphen, and Naarden, as the deliberate policy of the government. The King's representative had formally proclaimed the extermination of man, womin, and child in every city which opposed his authority, but the promulgation and practice of such a system had an opposite effect to the one intended. The hearts of the Hol landers were rather steeled to resistance than awed into submission by the fate of Naarden. A fortunate event, too, was accepted as a lucky omen for the coming contest. A little fleet of artical vessels, belonging to Holland, had been forzen up in the neighbourhood of Amsterdam. Don't redenç, on his arrival from Naarden, despatched a body of picked men over the ice to attack the imprisoned vessels. The criws had, however, fortified themselves by digging a wide trench around the whole fleet, which thus became from the moment an almost impregnable fortress. Out of this forcen

¹ Hor, vs. 420, 421. ² Correspondance de Philippe II . n. 1197

^{*} Ror, vi. 424 * Pid., 417. * Pid., 417. * Pid., vi. 420 Hoofl, vii 280 281 Meeten, iv 78. Berti seelis, vii 115